

THE *John Marshall*.

COVENANT
OF
LIFE OPENED:
Or, A TREATISE of the
COVENANT
OF
GRACE,

Containing something of
The nature of the Covenant of Works,
The Sovereignty of God,
The extent of the death of CHRIST,
The nature & properties of the Covenant of Grace: *And especially of* The Covenant of Suretyship or Redemption between the LORD and the Son JESUS CHRIST, Infants right to JESUS CHRIST, and the Seal of Baptisme:

With some Practicall Questions and Observations.

By SAMUEL RUTHERFORD, Professor of Divinitie in the University of S. Andrews.

ZECH 6. 12. And speak unto him, saying. Thus speaketh the LORD of Hosts, saying. Behold the man whose Name is the BRANCH, and he shall grow out of his place, and He shall build the Temple of the LORD.

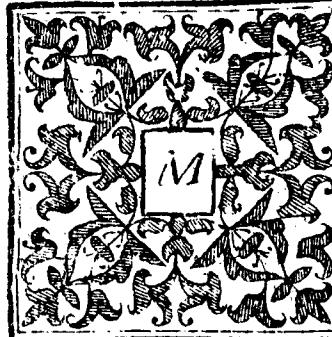
13. Even He shall build the Temple of the LORD, and He shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon His Throne, &c.

EDINBURGH,
Printed by ANDRO ANDERSON, for Robert Brown, and are to be sold at his Shop, at the Sign of the Sun, ANNO 1655.

John Adams
May 3 1805

()

CHRISTIAN READER,



Any have written, to the edifying of the Godly, of this excellent Subiect: Its not much I can do in this, but have added some thoughts to what is said, intending a more Practicall way of the last Points in another Treatise, soonst, of the application of Covenant-Promises, and of the influences of the Spirit under the Covenant of Grace, of which, especially of the latter of these two, few have practically written: And it is of much concernment, to make out the Union of our Duty and the breathings of the L O R D , and what can be done under deadnesse, to either fetch the wind, or to be put in a spirituall condition, that the soul may ly fair for the receiving of the influences of G O D . I desire in this to speak for Truth, not either for or against persons of whom I am silent, concealing the names of any Contradicent, judging Truth so much the more desirable, when it may possibly be had with peace, and as little blowing or stirring of the fire of contradiction as can be. What is here said in a way of Disputing, the Moderate Reader, who is not taken with that way, may passe by and read what is practicall. The Author hath been (left Truth should suffer by him) a little darkned,

darkned, as report bears, with the name, I know not what, of a Protester, as one who hath deserted the Government and Discipline of the Church of GOD in SCOTLAND; But my humble thoughts are the same they were before: though I can adde nothing to the Truth. I look on these men the world so names Protesters, Schismaticks, Separatists, as sinfull men who stand in need of a Saviour, and as such as desire to fear GOD and love His Name, and would gladly have our practise and walk come a little more near to the Rule of the Gospel, and that our Land might mourn for all the abominations committed therein, which I desire to be spoken without any reflection upon any of the Godly in the Land, who, in that point, are of another Judgement. It is my desire to the LORD, that he would let us hear experiencedly the reality of that: Thus saith Isa. 65.8. the LORD, As the new wine is found in the cluster, and one saith, Destroy it not, for a blessing is in it: so will I do for my servants sake, that I may not destroy them all. *The LORD JESUS be with your Spirit.*

Yours in the Lord Jesus;

S. R.

Con-



Contents of the I. PART.

CHAP. I. and II.

T He four particulars of the Treatise.	pag. 1.
Propositions touching ADAM's state.	p. 1, 2.
ADAM was predestinate to life eternall in Christ, and how.	pag. 2.

CHAP. III.

What is the intent and sense of the threatening, Gen. 2. 17. and Gen. 3. 20. Dust thou art, &c.	p. 3, 4, 5.
Threatnings of the Law reveal what the Law-giver may justly inflict, by justice and Law deserving, not what shall come to passe.	p. 4.
Except it be both a threatening and a Prophecie.	p. 5.
What is carnall security.	ibid.
What Adam was to believe in that threatening.	p. 5, 6.
How the promises and the threatenings differ in this.	p. 7.
How Law threatenings to the Elect are Evangelick.	p. 8.

CHAP. IV.

<i>The Elect before Conversion bear no part of the Law-curse, nor is the Law-curse devided between them and Christ.</i>	p. 10, 11.
---	------------

Faith is too near to be made a cause of satisfaction for sin by all who hold that Christ gave a satisfactory ransome for all and every one of mankind.	p. 11.
Accepting or not accepting satisfaction is before faith, and so believing or not believing can be no ground of the sufficiencie of the price payed for the Re-probate, or of the laying of the sins of all upon Christ.	p. 11, 12, 13.
God may accept the satisfaction of Christ without any condition required on our part.	p. 13.

CHAP.

Contents of the I. Part.

CHAP. V.

God intended a Law-dispensation, but for a time. 2. Adam how he was ordained for a Law life. 3. How pre-destinate to Glory, how not. 4. That the heathens have no more universall grace then Devils. 5. No ground for such grace.
p.13,14,15.

CHAP. VI.

It was condicssion in the Lord to enter in Covenant with man. 2. Temptations in fearing we are not chosen, discovered. 3. Beings and not-beings are debtors to God. 4. Self denyall required in sinlesse nature, as in sinfull. 5. Man considered three ways.

How fash layes hold upon conditionall promises, and temptacioas of unbelief thereabout.
p.16,17.
Of the Covenant of nature.
p.18,19,20.

CHAP. VII.

Its not written in the heart of man by nature, that God should promise life Eternall to man, upon condition of obedience. 2. The debt of justice cannot ty God. 3. God punishmenteth not sin, by necessitie of nature. 4. Nor defends he his own declarative Glory by necessitie of nature. 5. Nothing can be given to God All sufficient. 6. No meriting of the creature. 7. We are to have humble thoughts of free-Grace. 8. Low thoughts of our selves. 9. Promises make no strict justice between the Lord and us.
p.20,21.

God falls in no sort from his naturall dominion, though he impose not penal Laws upon the reasonable creature.
p.15,16.
God loves his essentall Glory by necessity of nature, but not his declarative Glory, by any such necessity
p.18,19,20.
In every Covenant there is some out goings of Grace.
p.22.

Contents of the I. Part.

- | | |
|---|----------|
| The passage i Chron. 29.11,13. cleared, and why none can give to God. p.37,38. | |
| Our vain boasting of self, my, and such proud pronoumes. | p.39,40. |
| How excellent to obey. | p.41. |
| Sanctified reason is not soft. | p.43,46. |
| How near are wee to justification by Works, and to be sick of love for proud (I.) | p.46,47. |

CHAP. VIII.

What place death hath in the Covenant. 2. What Reprobates and the damned are to do.
p.47,48.

- | | |
|---|----------|
| What Adam was to do in the intervall between the fall and the publishing of the Gospel. | p.48. |
| How the Lord is Adams God. | p.49. |
| What life is promised in the Covenant of Works. | p.47,48. |
| Wilfulness of unbelievers. Some doubts are to be left to GOD only to solve. | p.48,49. |
| How the Lord is the God of Adams. | p.49. |
| No promise of influences is made to Adam. | p.49. |

CHAP. IX.

What life is promised in the Covenant of Works. p.49,50
Whether or no did Adam and all the Reprobates in him lose all right to the creatures.
p.50,51.

- | | |
|---|----------|
| A threefold right. 1. Naturall. 2. Providentlal. 3. Spirituall. What eight Reprobates and unbelievers have to the living, eating &c. p.53,54. | p.53,54. |
| What way God is ours. | p.55,56. |
| A furniture of Grace, and a want of Christ. | p.56. |

CHAP. X.

The Arminians ground that God was in a maner compelled to appoint the New Covenant.
p.56,57.
The naturall antecedent love of God a dream.
p.57.

CHAP. XI.

- | | |
|--|----------|
| The threefold Covenant of some considered. | p.57,58. |
| And of the Arminians, p.64. considered, and rejected. The Law as propounded to Israel was the very Covenant of Grace, p.60,61,62. and the Covenant | |
| nante | |

Contents of the I. Part.

nant in the Old one with that of the New Covenant, but differenced in some accidents. p. 63, 64.

CHAP. XII.

Self-searching to know under what Covenant We are, a spirituall condition, and why?	p. 65, 66.
The threatenings under the New Testament more spirituall.	p. 67, 68.
What it is to be under the Law.	ibid.
The combate between the flesh and the Spirit, and the combate in naturall men differenced.	p. 68.
Compelled convictions argue a Law-Spirit.	ibid.
Its easier to be found in the faith, than to be Godly.	p. 69.
Of the legall terrors.	ibid.
Of literall and legall convictions and these of the Gospel.	p. 70.
Marks of such as are under the Law.	p. 70, 71.
A sweetnesse in the hardest command, because holy.	ibid.
An heaven in duties.	p. 71.
A new nature stands for a command.	ibid.

CHAP. XIII.

Covenanting externall, visible, professed, conditionall, and Covenanting internall, invisible, reall, absolute, and how they differ. p. 72, 73, 74.

Infants are within the Covenant.	p. 73, 74, 75, 76.
And to be baptized, and invested with Covenant priviledges.	p. 76, 77, 78, 79.
Its false that none are in Covenant under the New Testament but converts.	ib.
The Covenant made with Abraham and us, the same.	p. 80, 81.
Nor is that Covenant a civil Covenant.	p. 81, 82.
The New Testament Kingdome is spirituall, though there be seals in it and exterrnall worship.	p. 82, 83.
Of federall holiness.	ibid.
Externall Church priviledges of the Covenant are given to Nations and societies.	p. 83, 84.
Its not the Physicall but the Morall root that is the first subject of the Covenant conditionall, and externall.	p. 84, 85.
The formall ground of right to Baptisme.	p. 85, 86.
The places <i>Acts</i> 8. 37. <i>Mark</i> 16. 16. opened, and are nothing for, but much against Anabaptists.	p. 85, 86.
The text, <i>Acts</i> 2. 39. opened, is strong for Infant baptisme.	p. 86, 87.
A conditionall Covenant is properly a Covenant, though it be not yet a full-filled Covenant.	p. 90, 91.
No means are proved, by Law, or Gospel, to save infants by the opposers of infant Baptisme.	p. 91, 92.
Two diverse considerations of the Covenant, one in abstracte as a simple way of	

Contents of the I. Part.

- of saving Sinners, and so all in the Visible Church are in the Covenant; another *in concreto*, as it contains the Lords will of pleasure, and as it is acted upon the heart, and so the Elect are only in Covenant. p. 94.
- The new heart is only commanded to some, and to others it is both commanded and promised. p. 95.

CHAP. XIV.

The place Gen. 17. opened. p. 95.

Circumcision and Baptisme compared.	p. 95, 96, 97.
What blessings and privileges must infants want, if they be without the Covenant.	p. 98, 99, 100.
The place <i>Mark</i> 10. 15, 16. <i>Luke</i> 18. <i>Math.</i> 19. <i>Officiale</i> is the Kingdome of heaven, opened.	p. 100, 101, 102.
What blessing Christ bestowed upon the infants, whom hee took in his arms.	p. 102, 103, 104.
A Covenanted seed is promised to be added to the Church of the Jews. 104, 105	
Considerable differences between external and internal Covenanting.	107, 108
The place <i>Rom.</i> 11. 6. <i>If the root be holy, so are the branches.</i>	110, 111.
By the holy Root cannot be meant the predestinates to Glory only.	113, 114.
But visible Professors, Fathers and children.	p. 115, 116.
The children are in Covenant not by birth, but by such a birth.	p. 116, 117.
Covenant holiness is not the compleat and adequate cause of reall ingrafting in Christ.	p. 116, 117, 118

CHAP. XV.

Other considerable differences between externall and internall Covenanting. p. 118, 119.

There is no universall Grace subjective or objective given to all, *Rom.* 10. 18. *Psal.* 19. 3. p. 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124.

Nor power of believing given to all. p. 124, 125, 126.

CHAP. XVI.

The judgement of men esteeming such visible Covenanters to be reall converts before they can be admitted, makes all Egypt, Assyria, the Kingdomes of the world, all Iudea Baptized, to be reall converts in the judgement of John Baptist, Paul and the Apostles. p. 129, 130

The invisible Church is the full subje^ct of the promises of speciall note, &c. p. 131, 132

Hypocrites have no warrant to challenge the seals from any command of God, as M. Thom. Hooker saith. p. 132

CHAP. XVII. p. 133, 134

Who are Hypocrites. p. 133, 134

Contents of the I. Part.

What Hypocrisie is.	p.135.
Parties in the Covenant of Grace as acted upon in heast.	p.137.
The Word and the Spirit.	p.138.
Of God speaking himself.	ib.
Prophecies that now are differ from Scripture Prophecies, and how.	p.139.
Revelations made to the Godly, when they are in much neareste to G O D	p.140, 141.
Marks of a spirituall disposition.	p.142, 143, 144, 145.
To do a duty as a duty, and not as delightfull is a spirituall disposition.	p.144.
Not as successfull, but as a duty.	p.145.

C H A P. XVIII.

The nature, characters, properties of the new heart and the new spirit of Covenanter.

	p. 145, 146.
The heart, the man.	p.146
The good heart.	ib.
How rare a pece the heart is.	p.147
Of the raigning evils of the heart.	ib.
Why we are more shamed of lying, then of pride.	p.149.
The concurrence of the Word to the act of infusion of a new heart a mystrie.	p.149, 150
The Atheisme and impossible lies of the heart.	p.150, 151
The figures of the new heart.	p.151, 152

C H A P XIX.

The place of Evangelick Works in the Covenant. 2. Profession of glory and right to glory different. 3. A twofold right to glory. 4. We are not justified by Works. 5. The place of declarative justification by Works, Jam. 2. discussed. 6. Faith and Works different. 7. Possession of life and right to life cleared. 8. Faith and finall believing both commanded in the Law. Finall unbelieve not the sin forbidden in the Gospel only. 9. How life is promised to our Works Evangelick, p.153, 154, 155, 156, 157, & seq.

Our mistakes of God,	p.151, 152
The faith that James speaks of is not true faith,	p.160
The acts of saving faith,	p.161, 162
James must speak of two sorts of faiths,	p.162, 163
The Arminian Argument to prove that James speaks of declared justification, answered,	p.165, 166
How	

Contents of the I. Part.

How faith now only justifies,	p.170, 171
The Socinian and Arminian faith, and Papists formed faith includes new obedience and repentance,	p.172, 173
Contrary to the Scripture which differenceth between faith and new obedience,	p.174, 175, 176
Right to life eternall and possession of life eternal differ in their nature and causes,	p.176, 177
The necessity of Works,	p.177, 178
Possession of life and right to life differ,	p.178, 179, 180
And contrarie objections removed,	ib.

C H A P. XX.

Whether or not suffered Christ for any sin against the Gospel only, such as finall unbelieve, which is conceived to be the only sin against the Gospel. That Christ died not for all without exception. The unwarrantableness of that Doctrine, how the Law commands justifying faith and repentance, how not, p.181, 182, &c.
Sins against the Gospel are also sins against the Law, p.188, 189

C H A P XXI.

Whether the Lord Mediator as Mediator command the same good Works in the Covenant of Grace which are commanded in the Covenant of Works, p.192, 193. Christ lays one way Evangelick commands upon the Elect, and another way upon the Reprobate, p.198
How the Reprobate are still under the Covenant of Works, how not, p.192

C H A P. XXII.

No promise of perseverance to Adam,	p.194, 195
Nor any promise to him of influences of Grace,	p.195, 196
4. Classes of obediences considerably compared among themselves,	p.196, 197, 198
Christ's obedience most perfect, next of his own.	p.196
Most undue or least of debt coming from God man, & so most meritorious,	p.197
Angels obedience. 2. Of their own, but not so as Christ's of his own, and so lesse meritorious,	p.198
3. The obedience of Adam more of his own, then that of Angels, yet lesse obedience,	ibid.
4. Gospel-obedience hath least of the nature of obedience,	p.198, 199

C H A P. XXIII.

The Law of Works required not simple doing, but doing to the end, p.200, 208
CHAP.

Contents of the I. Part.

CHAP. XXIV.

Whether faith as true, or faith as continuing to the end, be the condition of the Covenant of Grace, p. 201, 202.

Faith which endures to the end, but not quatenus, as it induces to the end is the condition of the Covenant of Grace, p. 201, 202.

Faith in the first lively acts saves and justifies, p. 202, 203.

CHAP. XXV.

Whether is Christ's righteousness imputed and made ours, because we believe and apprehend it ours, or do we believe, because it is ours, because we believe, p. 206, 207.

Faith presupposeth three unions. 1. Naturall. 2. Legall. 3. Federal, and maketh a fourth, p. 208, 209.

There be four or five sundry Adversaries against whom the holy Ghost in Scripture contends in the point of justification, p. 210, 211.

The dominion of the Law, p. 211, 212.

What is meant by the blindness of the letter, p. 213.

How we are freed therefrom, p. 214.

A threefold bondage of the Law, p. 215.

Of the dignitie of the Gospel above the Law, p. 213, 214.

CHAP. XXVI.

Of the perpetuity of the Covenant of Grace, and the considerable differences between it and the Covenant of Works, p. 214, 215, 216, 217.

How it continues with these that are asleep in the Lord, Mat. 22. Exod. 3:6. p. 216.

Of the graciousnesse thereof, p. 216, 217.

CHAP. XXVII.

Of Law-fear and Gospel-fear, p. 217, 218.

Of the Law-fear of falling away, and the Gospel faith of persevering, p. 218, 219.

Why feelings of sin seldom want unbelief, and shoud have the faith of a paid ransom, p. 221, 222.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Christ died not to blot out all sense of sin, but rather to quicken a godly sense theretoef, p. 221, 222, 223.

Contents of the II. Part.

CHAP. I.

Christ's roome in both Covenants, p. 225

of

Contents of the II. Part.

Of Christ's active and passive obedience, how they concur as one satisfac-
tion, p. 229, 230.

CHAP. II.

*W*herein stands our right to Christ, and the satisfa-
ction made for us by Christ? 2. Faith is not the
cause of our right. 3. Christ's incarnation and dying are
not favours merited by Christ. 4. How Adams sinne and
Christ's righteousness are ours, p. 230, 238.

CHAP. III.

1. How Christ suffered for us in our room and place. 2. He
died not for all and every one. 4. How many mayes Christ
may be said to die in our stead. 4. The Lords so dying for
all makes not all saveable in Christ, nor the Gospel preach-
able to all Nations. 5. Christ died in the stead of the elect,
p. 236, 237, 238, 239.

Though we did not substitute him in our place, p. 240, 250.

The differences between Christ's dying and the punishment due to the Elect, p. 250, 251, 252.

The legall oneness between Christ and us, p. 253.

To die once & aye for us, is to die in our stead, in all eminent languages, p. 253.

Christ died not for sins and in the stead of sins, as he died for sinners, p. 256.

CHAP. IV.

How we are in Christ dying, and crucified in him. 2. A
twofold crucifying of us with Christ. 3. A discourse of
mortification. 4. The actings of the mortified. 5. That
we are to be mortified in our affections, p. 257, 258, 259.

Though we die personally yet we died in Christ legally, p. 259.

We are not to desire a Law-wakening, p. 259, 260.

What mortification is, p. 261.

The influence of Christ's death on mortification, p. 262.

Four sorts of alights in mortification, p. 265, 266.

We must be mortified to all sort of created things, p. 268, 269, 270, 271.

Forbidden desires, p. 270, 271.

CHAP. V.

*The Covenant of Suretyship or of Redemption between
God*

Contents of the II. Part.

God and the Mediator Christ. 2. Christ is not a mere witness, but the Author of the Covenant. 3. The Socinian way of Works cannot quiet the conscience. 4. Christ is upon both sides of the Covenant. 5. Justice mediates not. 6. Reasons of the entrance of sin.

CHAP. VI.

That there is a Covenant of Suretyship between JEHOVAH and the Son, is proven by 11. Arguments, p. 290, 291, 292.

- Christ calling to the Lord his God proves this. p. 291, 292
(1) Christ is a Servant, Messenger, Shepherd, not by nature, but free compact and agreement. p. 292
(2) Christ offered his service freely. p. 293
(3. Arg.) There is giving and taking between God and Christ. p. 293, 294
(4. Arg.) Christ received the seals which he needed seals, or not. p. 294
(5. Arg.) Christ received the seals which he needed seals, or not. p. 295
(6) Christ with the Father dispensed with the Law. p. 296
(7. Arg.) Rich promises that speak a Covenant made to Christ. p. 296
8. Ar. The Prophecies of Christ, and the promises of, and to him. p. 298
9. Ar. Ask of me, Ps. 2. 10. Arg. The work and wages of Christ prove it. p. 299
And, O how low a wager, and how high a designe. p. 300
11. Arg. Christ is admitted by an oath and the use of it against Apostacie of Believers. p. 300, 301, 302

CHAP. VII.

The Covenant of Redemption is explained in three eternal acts. 1. Designation of one. 2. Decree and destination. 3. Delication in the work. p. 302, 303.

- The attributes of God declared herein. p. 304, 305
The Fathers eternall delighting in the Son. 309, 307
The strength of Gods love to man. p. 306, 307, 308

CHAP. VIII.

The differences between the Covenant of Suretyship made with Christ, and the Covenant of Reconciliation made with sinners. 2. The conjunction of the Covenants. 3. How the promises are made to the Seed. The place, Gal. 3.16. opened. 4. Christ suffered and acted ever as a publike head, p. 308, 309, 310.

Contents of the III. Part.

CHAP. IX.

The 13. Argument from the necessity of Gods call. 2. Of Typicall sprinkling of the blood of the Covenant, and of the Testament. The place, Heb. 13. 20. opened. Of the place, Heb. 7. 22. the act of Suretyship, the assurance of our state, p. 316, 317, 318.

- How the promises are made to Christ, p. 317
The peculiar nature of Christs Testament as such a Testament, p. 318, 319
Of the Suretyship of Christ, p. 323, 324
Punishment suffered by the Surety can remove punishment from the guilty man but cannot remove formally the inherent guilt, and how this was done by Christ. p. 323, 324
Christs undertaking for all. p. 326, 327
Of the place, Prov. 8. 22, 23, 24, &c. p. 306, 307, 308, 327
Arminius yeelds a Covenant between the Father and the Son, p. 327, 328
And how, for JEHOVAH cannot promise a seed to Christ as a reward of his work by their way, having no Sovereigne power over the will, p. 328, 329, 330
Of such as are his seed. Of the Covenant of the Lord with David, p. 336, 337
Ps. 89. opened, ibid. p. 338, 339. Mic. 5. 2. p. 339

CHAP. X.

Christ procures the Gospel to be Preached to Reprobates, but undertakes not for them. A necessary distinction of the Covenant as Preached according to the approving will of God, and as acted upon the heart according to the decree of God. The place, Jer. 31, Heb. 8. This is my Covenant, opened, p. 339, 340, 341, 342.

- The distinction of the approving wil of God, &c. of his wil of pleasure, p. 342, 343
Antinomians confound the efficient cause of the obedience and the objective cause on the rule of the Word, p. 345, 346

The purpose and scope of the Holy Ghost is not, Heb. 8, and Jer. 31, to speak or treat of the Covenant of Grace as Preached in the letter, but as acted upon the heart, that so Christ may be advanced as a more spirituall and effectuall teacher and Priest, then Moses, Aaron, &c. p. 346, 347, 348

Which two are confounded by Antinomians.

CHAP. XI.

Of the promises made to Christ in the Covenant of Mediation, p. 349, 350.

Contents of the II. Part.

A twofold justification of Christ,	p.349.
Christ had a promise of influences, Adam had none at all,	p.350,351
Our mistake touching comforts and duties,	p.351
Christ's satisfactions,	p.351,352
We may flee to the Covenant, becau's of Christ,	p.352,353
Rods are booked in the Covenant of Works, Deut. 28. and in the Covenant of Grace to both the Covenants, Psal. 89.30,31, &c.	p.353

CHAP. XII.

The condition and properties of the Covenant of Redemption.

p. 355, 356.

No such condition is required of Christ, as of Adam,	p.356
The paying of the price of blood and dying is the formall condition of the Covenant of Redemption upon the part of Christ,	p.356,357
The holy qualifications of Christ in the Covenant of Suretyship,	p.357,358
These qualifications how to be followed by us,	p.354
Christ's Grace of headship what force it may have upon us,	p.360,361
The properties of the Covenant of Suretyship. 1. Freedom. 2. Graciousness. 3. Eternitie,	p.361,362,363
The exposition of that place, 1 Cor. 15.28.	p.363,364
Christ even after the universall judgement, a mediatorial Head, King and Lord,	p.366,367,368

Errata.

Pag.2.lia.19.read Immortality, p.13.1.19.r.no beings. p.17.1.29.r.no beings. p.21.1.4.2.r.God therefore. p.12.1.31.r.God it. p.18.1.26.r.lsa 42. p.39.1.10.r.abiding Life. p.4.1.24.r.habited. p.31.1.27.r.in the substance. p.53.1.2.r.no grinding of. p.55.1.16.r.floor. p.70.1.2.r.literally. p.92.1.10,11.r.decreed. p.96.1.5.r.ground. p.103.1.13.r.as symbolick. p.104.1.36.r.that he. p.124.1.14.r.but cannot. p.136.1.21.r.here. p.40.1.13.r.seated no discursive. p.14.1.1.33.r.gnawing. p.160.1.26.r.Menochims. p.166.1.26.in mat.r.feastly. p.168.1.17.r.it is not only. p.169.1.29.r.hedd. p.186.1.33.r.Cel.14. p.195.1.1.r.thereof. p.201.1.20.r.paraker. p.206.1.11.r.have it so. p.218.1.29.r.steep for sharp. p.27.1.11.r.not only not quarrell. p.239.1.15.r.depends not upon. p.249.1.1.r.Armitips. p.251.1.19.r.intepretation. p.269.1.26.r.art. p.1.1.3.r.who are not dead to opinions. p.282.1.14.give thee. p.299.1.29.r.in his hand. p.309.1.26.dete Job.8. p.314.1.14.r.wre. p.316.1.10.r.be that said. p.333.1.18.r.agrees to be. P.344.1.15.r.and will have.

PART. I.



THE COVENANT OF LIFE OPENED.

CHAP. I.

What is to be spoken of the COVENANT OF LIFE, shall be reduced to these Heads.

- 1. The nature and differences of the Covenant of Works, and that of Grace.
- 2. The Mediator of the Covenant of Life.
- 3. The application of Covenant-Promises.
- 4. Of Covenant-Influences of Grace under the Gospel.

Of the latter, especially of the last, not much hath been spoken by any in a practicall way.

CHAP. II.

Propositions touching A D A M s Covenant-state.



He Apostle, 1 Cor. 15.47. The first man is of the earth, eartheie, the second man is the Lord from Heaven, speaking of the two eminently publick persons, the noble heads of great Families; making the condition of the first Adam to be animal and earthly, & that of the second Adam to be spiritual and Heavenly. And without doubt, to be born of the house and seed of the second Adam, John 1. 12, 13. must darken the glory

The first
and second
Adam.

A

The Covenant-state of Adam.

glory of the first birth, so as there is no great ground to boast of Nobility the skin and empty lustre of Nobility and good blood ; Although & self em- when the creature called (1) and (*self*) do creep in to lodge in thy things, a poor feeble piece of clay, that clay so lusted must be some God.

2. The flower and choicest of *Adam* his Paradise-state, is an earthly condition, as is evidenced by his eating, *Gen. 2. 9, 16.* sleeping, *The first 21,* his being placed in a Garden, to dress it, *8, 16, 17,* his marriage, *Adam earth 23, 24.* his Lordship over birds, beasts, fishes, *Gen. 1. 28.* But ly, we have in the second *Adam*, besides all these, we are gifted with a life more in the of more worth then many acres of Vineyards. They declare second. therefore that there is much of the first *Adam* in them, little of the second ; Who would conquesse again the many lands, that our first father *Adam* sold, *and joyn house to house, and lay field to field,* till there be no place, and dulinherit all others, as if they were bastard heirs, and themselves the only righteous heirs of *Adam*, that they may be placed alone in the midst of the earth, *Isa. 5. 8.* And the more spirituall any be, the more are they above the nothing world.

3. Mortality may be called supernaturall to the earthie part of *A-
Mortality dam*, since it is not naturally due to a body of earth, to claim life & immor- tality how ever. Though immortality be due to whole *Adam* consisting of soul and body and endued with the image of God. For the due to *Adam*. soul cannot die.

4. But if we speak of such a life, to wit, of a heavenly communion How life with God, as *Adam* was a comprehensor or one who is supposed was due to now to have runne well, and won the Gold, and the Crown, such *Adam.* a life was due to *Adam*, not by nature, but by promise.

5. *Adam* in his first state was not predestinate to a law glory, and to influences of God to carry him on to persevere : Nor could he Adam was blesse God, that he was chosen before the foundation of the world predestina- to be Law-holy, as *Eph. 1. 3.* What ? Was not then *Adam* prede- stinated to life eternall, through Jesus Christ ? He was : But not and how. as a publick person representing all his sons, but as another single person, as *Abraham*, or *Jacob* : for Gospel predestination is not of the nature, but of this or that person : Therefore were we not predestinat to life eternall in him, but in *Christ, Rom. 8. 29, 30.*

6. Therefore *Adam* fell from the state of Law-life both totally and finally,

*PART. I.**The Covenant-state of Adam.*

finally, but not from the state of Gospel election to glory. For the Lord had in the Law-dispensation a love designe, to set up a Theatre and stage of free grace ; And that the way of works should be a time-dispensation, like a summer-house to be demolished a transient Court for gain : As if the Lord had an aime that works and nature should be a transient, but no standing Court for righteousness : Hence it is now the reliques of an old standing Court, and the Law, is a day of assytle, for condemning of malefactors, who will acknowledge no Tribunnall of grace, but only of works : And it is a just Court to terrisie robbars, to awe borderers and loose men, but to beleevers it is now a Court for a far other end.

C H A P. III.

*What is the intent and sense of the threatening, Gen. 2. 17.
In the day thou eats, thou shalt die. And Gen. 3. 20.
Dust thou art, &c.*

WE must distinguish between the intent of the threatner, and the intent and sense of the threatening.

Law-threatnings may be well exponed, by the execution of them, upon persons, against whom they are denounced : As, *1 King. 11. 30.* compared with *1 King. 12. 15, 16.* Ten Tribes are taken from Davids house according to the Word of the Lord. Because therefore the threatening of death was executed upon *Christ*, *1 Pet. 3. 18. Gal. 3. 10, 11, 12, 13, 14.* then must the threatening, *Gen. 2. 17. Deut. 27. 26.* have been intended against the Man *Christ*, and because beleevers die, as all do, *Heb. 9. 27.* the threatening must have been intended against them also, for that they sinned in *Adam*, and because it is out of question that the repro- threatened, bate die the first and second death, the threatening must also have been intended against them. And therefore, in the intent of the threatner, the threatening was mixed, partly Legall, partly Evangelick ; According to the respective persons, that the Lord had in his eye : He had therefore in his heart both Law and Gospel. It is therefore to no purpose to ask what kind of death, and whether legal, partly purely legall, which the Lord threatened to *Adam* : For the Question

*The Covenant-state of Adam.**PART.I.*

Non supposest that the Covenant of Works was to stand, and that the Lord was to deny a Saviour to fallen man. But we may say what death the Lord actually inflicts, that death he intended to inflict, nor did the Lord decree to inflict a meeter legal death personal first and second, upon *Adam* and all his race.

Obj. *Adam* was to believe he should certainly die; For so was the threatening, *Gen. 2. 17.* if he should sin, or then we must say, that *Adam* was to beleieve he should not actually die, the latter cannot be said, for then he was to believe the contradictent of the *Lords* true threatening, which was the lie of the Serpent, *Gen. 3.*

What Ans. He was to beleieve neither of the twain according to the threatening vent, for there are two sort of threatenings, some pure and only are, and threatenings, which reveal to us, what God may, in Law, do, but what sorts there be of not what he hath decreed and intended, *actu secundo & quoad eventum, to do,* and bring to passe; These threatenings contain some condition, either expressed in other Scripture, or then reserved in the mind of the *Lord.* 1. Because the Lord so threatned *Adam*, as he remained free and absolute either to inflict the punishment, or to provide an Evangelick remedy, even as *Solomon, 1 King. 2. 37.* faith to *Shimei* (*in the day thou passest over the brook, Kidron, thou shalt surely die*) that is, thou shalt be guilty of death,

Threat-reus mortis: Yet it cannot be denied, but *Solomon* reserved his own Kingly power, either to pardon *Shimei*, or to soften, or are pure change the sentence. 2. The words of the Law do reveal, what threatenings the *Magistrate* may do, *jure*, and what the guilty deserves by in law now the the Law, but do not reveal the intention and absolute decree of Law-giver the *Law-giver*, and what punishment actually, & *quoad even-* may *jure tum* shall be inflicted upon the guilty, and what shall come to pass inflict, but as a thing decreed of the *Lord:* So, *Gen. 9. 6.* the Murtherer not what shall die by the Sword of the *Magistrate*, and *Exod. 22. 18, 19, 20.* he that ac- tually doe, the Witch, the man that lyes with a beast, he that sacrifices to a and what strange god, shall die the death *jure, merito*, and by Law-deser- shall come ving, but it followeth not, but such as commit these abominations, to passe.

do live, as is clear in the Kings of *Affyria, Chaldea*, and many of *Israel*, who were not put to death, but lived *quoad eventum*, though contrary to the Word of God. 3. The expresse Precepts of the Decalogue, *Thou shalt have no other gods before me, &c. Then*

*PART.I.**The Covenant-state of Adam.*

shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, &c. do shew what in Law we ought not to do, but not what actually shall come to passe: For there be not a few who do actually, & *quoad eventum*, worship strange gods, kill, and steal. But there are other threatenings which are both threatenings, and also Prophesies, and these reveal Threatnings that both the Law and the fact, and what the Law-giver may, *jure, are both* threatenings and, in Law, inflict, and what shall actually come to passe upon and also the transgressours, if they continue in impenitency, *Rom. 2. 1, 2, 3, Prophesies, Rom. 1. 18. 1 Cor. 6. 9, 10.*

Obj. Then in all threatenings and promises we are not to believe, that though we sin, we shall actually & *quoad eventum* die, and though we obey and beleieve, wee are not to beleieve that *G O D* shall fulfill his promise, and that our salvation shall

come to passe, only we are to beleieve *jure*, that we deserve to die, and that we shall have eternall life, *jure* promissio-

nis, but not actually and according to the event. *Answe.*

Something is to be said of the threatenings, then of the promises: As touching the sense, we are to beleieve. In the threatenings conditionall as (*yet fourty days and Nineveh shall be destroyed*) and (*in that day thou eats thou shalt surely die, in thy person and all thine the first and second death*) we are not to believe What is carnall security, nor is it carnall security, not to beleieve such an event, we are only to have a godly fear and to tremble, at the dreadfull believing deserving of such threatenings legall, as alway are to be exponed legal threatenings and beleived by all within the Visible Church, with an Evangelick exception of repentance. If therefore *Adam* did beleieve that he and all his should in their own persons actually suffer the first and second death, and that irrecoverably, he had no warrant, for any such belief, and the like may be said of *Nineveh*. For when the *Lord* said, *in the day that thou eats thou shalt die, the first and second death*, thou and all thy children personally; His meaning was, except I provide an Evangelick remedy and a Saviour. Godly fear trembles more at the darkning of the glory of the *Lord* in a broken Law, then at the event of inflicted wrath, were it even Hells fire.

Obj. *Adam* was to beleieve no such exception. *Answe.* True. Because it was not revealed, nor was he to beleieve the contrary that he should irrecoverably and eternally perish, because that was

The Covenant-state of Adam.

PART. I.

was not revealed : But the threatening of the Law doth not deny the Evangelick remedy, as it neither doth affirme it.

What A- Obj. Then was Adam to believe, it was true which the Serpent said, ye shall not surely die, & quoad eventum, but ye shall be as Gods living and knowing good and evill. *dam was to believe in the threat-* *ring, what* Ans. Neither doth that follow, for in the meaning of the liar, the lying it was not true, that they should not die, either by deserving (for Serpent Satan brangles the equity and righteousness of the Law and threatening) or actually and in the event, for both were false and neither him to be believed.

Ans. Neither doth that follow, for in the meaning of the liar, the lying it was not true, that they should not die, either by deserving (for Serpent Satan brangles the equity and righteousness of the Law and threatening) or actually and in the event, for both were false and neither revealed, and faith is not to go beyond what is revealed of God. And Sathan disputed against both the equity of the threatening, as if it had been unjust, in Law, and against the event, as a fiction and a thing that shold not come to passe in the event, which indeed did not come to passe : but not according to the Serpents lying and false principles.

Obj. Was then Adam to despair and to believe nothing of a Saviour.. Ans. He was not obliged to despair, but to rely, by vertue of the first Commandement of the Decalogue, upon God infinitely powerfull, mercifull, gracious, and wise to save, for that was revealed and written in his heart, and that is far from despairing: But in the intervall between the fall and the Lords publishing the blessed Gospel, and news of the seed to come, he was so to trust in God for possible deliverance in generall (as the Law of Nature requireth) but he was to believe nothing of unrevealed particulars, far leise of the mystery of the Gospel, which was kept secret since the world began, Rom. 16. 25.

The dam- Obj. Then may also the damned in Hell, who are not loosed in hell from their obligation to the Law of Nature, and the first Command, not loosed be obliged to rely on an infinite and Almighty God, for their deliverance, for they are not obliged to despair, nor is there an obligation first Com- mand are to any sin.

Ans. There is not the like reason, for though the damned be to despair, not loosed from the Law of Nature, but are to rely upon God in and yet are his whole al-sufficiency, yet with exception of his revealed Justice and Truth: Now he has expressly revealed, that their worm never dieth, and their fire never goeth out. And to believe that, is not to despair. Obj. What are then such Heathens to believe as touching

PART. I. *The Covenant-state of Adam.*

touching that threatening, who never heard of the Gospel? Ans. What heare they under the Law of Nature, and to beleive that sin deserves thens are wrath, according to the infinitesse of the Mijesty, against whom The C- it is committed, and to obey the Law of Nature, and read the venant of Book of the Creation carefully : But and if the news and rumor Works is of a Saviour come to their ears, their sin cannot but be Evangelick, not con- in not pursuing the reality and truth of such a sovereign remedy. trair to the Gospel. Yet it is not to be thought, that though the Gospel be come to all How the Nations, Rom. 16. 26, that that is to be meant. 1. Of every Gospelmay Generation of all Nations. Or, 2. of the individuall persons, bedduced either young, or come to age, of every Nation under Heaven, expe- from the Law, if an sience and Scripture speaketh against both.

Obj. But is not the Covenant of Grace contrary to the Law free-will, and Covenant of Works ? Ans. A diversity there is, but contra- gracie and ritry wills in the holy Lord cannot be asserted. Yea the Gospel may infinit will be proven out of the Law, and from the first Commandement of come of the Decalogue, if any act of the Lords free will and infinite wise- G O D be added to make good dome shall be added to prove the Assumption. So,

If the first Command teach that God is infinitely wise, merci- the assump- full, gracious, just, and able to save, then, if so it please him, he tion. How the shall save ;

But the first Command teacheth the former : And the Gospel promises are to be revealing the unsearchable riches of Christ, Eph. 3.8. exprely faith believed, and how in so much. Ergo.

As to the promises, they contain not only the ius, equity and them ; we goodnessse of the thing promised, but also that the Lord shall a- are to be- leeve both ctually perform, yea and intends to perform, what he hath promi- the equity sed upon condition that we perform the required condition. And and event in this the promises differ not a little from these threatenings, that of the pro- mises, if the are only threatenings, of what God may do in Law, but not from mises, if the these threatenings which are both threatenings and also Propheticall be per- predictions of what shall come to passe, therefore must we here med, and difference betwixt threatenings, and such and such threatenings. how the

The promises are considered as they are Preached and anuncia- difference must be- tated to all within the Vissible Church, and as they are made in the intention of God with the Elect and Sons of the promise : The made be- same way the threatenings admit of a two-fold consideration. The and the promises threatenings

The Covenant-state of Adam.

The promises to the Elect as intended of God, reveal that both the Lord promises as minds to give the blessing promised, and the condition that is grace announced, and as to perform the condition, and so they are promises Evangelick both in the matter, and in the intention of the Lord: But as promis'd.

The Gospel promises to the reprobate, who are alwayes from their birth to their death under a Covenant of Works, really as touching the Lord's holy Decree, they are materially Evangelick promises, but formally and in the Lord's intention legall, as every dispensation to them is legall, forasmuch as the Lord hath decreed to deny the grace, by which they may or can fulfill the condition of the promise, which is proper to the Law, as it is peculiar to the Gospel, that the Lord both gives the mercy promised and also the grace to fulfill the condition of the promise.

The Law-threatnings to beleevers, especially such as are legall (*if ye believers fall away, ye shall eternally perish*) are to beleevers, though materially legall, peremptorie, and admit no exception, yet they are formally and in the Lord's intention directed to them upon an Evangelick intention, nor do they say that the Lord intends and decrees that they shall eternally perish, for he hath predestinate them to the contrary, to wit, to grace and glory, *Ephes. 1. 4.* Nor that he wills that they should beleieve either their eternall damnation, or their sinall and totall falling away, which inevitably leads thereunto. For they, knowing that they are in Christ, *2 Cor. 13.5.* *Rom. 8.16,17.* and freed from condemnation, *Rom. 8. 1.* are to beleieve the contraire of the former, to wit, life eternall, *John 4. 24.* *1 Thes. 5. 9.* *John 3. 16.* and the contraire of the latter, to wit, the promise of perseverance made to them, *Jer. 32.39,40.* *Isa. 59.21.* *John 10.27,28.* *John 17.20,21.* *1 Pet. 1.3,4,5.* *Act. 16.16, 17, 19.* Therefore these threatnings are not to be beleieved by the regenerate, as certainly to come to passe in their persons, but only as Law-motives to press them to work out their salvation in fear and trembling, and to cleave so much the closser to Christ, as the condition of such as are under the Law is apprehended to be dreadfull. But reprobates and unbelieviers are not to beleieve that God deccres and intends to them the thing promised, and grace to perform the condition, but only to beleieve their obligation to fiducial relying upon, and Gospel-faith in

in God, revealed in the Mediator; and that if they continue in a way of opposing Christ, they not only deserve by Law (which Law-deserving also beleevers are to apprehend) to be broken, but actually and *quoad eventum* shall eternally perish. Believers are to believe the Decree of God to save them, though they hear the threatenings, for its revealed. But the Reprobate are to beleieve only the sense and Law-deserving and event of the threatening, if they repent not, but are to beleieve no decree to save them.

CHAP. IV.

The Elect non-converted are not under Law-wrath. 2. *Faith is no cause of satisfaction.* 3. *Christ can not have satisfied for the sins of the Reprobate.*

WHether the Elect unconverted be under wrath is a doubt to many. It is true, *they are servants of sin,* Rom. 6. 17. *Blind,* and *under the power of Satan as Reprobates are,* Acts 26.18. *By nature children of wrath,* even as others, Eph. 2.3. *An.* Their sins committed before their Conversion, are according to the Covenant of Works, such as deserve everlasting condemnation, and they are *jure* and in relation to that Covenant, *heirs of wrath,* as well as others. 2. But we must distinguish between a state of election and everlasting, though unseen love, that they are under, as touching their persons: and a state of a sinfull way that they are born in, and walk in as others do, untill they be converted. As to the former state, it is true which is said, *Ier. 31.3.* *I have loved thee with an everlasting love.* See also, *Rom. 9.12,13.* *Eph. 1.4.* so that God never hates their persons. 3. The punishment of their sins and the wrath they are under is two wayes considered. 1. Materially in the bulke, and so they are under Law-stroaks and Law-wrath, that is Law-punishment, as others are, Eph. 2.3. and so the other places are to be taken. 2. The wrath is to be considered formally, and so it is denied that the punishment of the non-converted elect, because of their sinfull way is any part of the Law-vengeance or curse which Christ did bear for their other sins committed by them after conversion. 1. Because when Christ

faith;

*The Covenant-state**PART. I.*

faith, *John 5. 4.* The beleever hath passed from death, as it is a curse, and shall never come to judgement and condemnation, he cannot mean that they have half passed from the curse, and half not. 2. Beleevers are delivered, in Christ, from the victory, sting, power of sin, curse of the Law, and every curse, that is in affliction, and from condemnation not in part only, but in whole: Else their triumph were but in part, contrair to, *1 Cor. 15. 54.*

The Elect 55, 56. Hos. 13. 14. Isa. 25. 8. Nor should they be washen non-converted bear wash themselves from any spot, by bearing a part of the Law-curse no part of in themselves, contrair to *Can. 4. 7. Jer. 50. 20. Job. 1. 28. Job. 1. 8. Rom. 8. 1.* 3. What ever Christ was made for the redeemed ones, that he CHRIST was made fully for them, in part, and in whole, for he is their perfect Saviour. But *Gal. 3. 13.* *He is made a curse for us, and able to save to the outmost all that come to him. Heb. 7. 25.* Therefore the half or a part of satisfactory vengeance, cannot be upon us, and the other half on Christ, for this is to make men and Martyrs joint satisfiers of justice with Christ, by their own blood and sufferings, to prevent the scaddings of purgatory; For though we teach against Antinomians, that the Godly are punished for sins according to Justice, yet that is Evangelick, not law-justice, for they bear not one dram weight of satisfactory wrath and curse jointly with Christ, Antinomians say that sin, root and branch is taken away in Justification, so that there is no sin nor punishment for sin in the justified man. 4. The beleevers are blessed through Jesus Christ, *Gal. 3. 10, 13. Psal. 32. 1, 2. Rom. 4. 6. Psal. 2. 12. Psal. 119. 1.* Their afflictions and death blessed, precious in the eyes of the Lord, not qualified with any Law-curse, *Job 5. 17. Psal. 94. 12. Mat. 5. 6. Luk. 6. 22. 1 Pet. 1. 6. 1 Pet. 4. 13. Psal. 21. 3, 4, 5, 6. Psal. 34. 17, 18, 19. Rev. 14. 13. Psal. 116. 15. Psal. 72. 14. Psal. 37. 37.* and they are asleep in Christ, die in the Lord, *1 Thes. 4. 14, 16.* Nor can Antinomians and So-cinians say this is under the New-Testament, for dying Jacob saith, *Gen. 49. 18. Lord I have waited for thy salvation, Isa. 57. 1, 2.* When the righteous man is taken away, he shall enter into peace, the Lord is the God of Abraham, Isaak, and Jacob, when their bodies are rotten, *Exod. 3. 6. Mat. 22. 32.* (5.) This comes too near

Remission of sins and His eternal under the Old Testament. bodies are rotten. near

of Adam and of Believers.

PART. I. near the opinion of these, who make faith a cause of satisfaction for sin, as they must teach, who hold that Christ payed a ransome, on the crosse, for the sins of all and every one. For that which added, maketh satisfaction to be counted and formally reckoned as made a satisfaction, in order to the expiation of the mans sins, so that by cause of satisfaction he can suffer for them, and which being removed, maketh satisfaction for sin by the payer, no more a satisfaction for that man, nor for Devils: all who hold that CHRIST one pay a summe that fully exhausts the debt of such a broken man, gave a satisfaction upon condition the broken man say *Amen* to the paying thereof, otherwise it shall be as not payed, he must take up the summe again, if the broken man refuse to say Amen to it, for if he take it not up again, but it be payed and fully satisfie for, and exhaust the debt, the mans debt is payed, and the Creditor in justice cannot exact one farthing from the broken man. Now nothing given to the Justice of God by way of satisfaction for the sins of unbelievers, was ever repeated or taken back again by Christ. Nay but, say they, the ransome was not payed at all for Judas, but only, upon condition that he beleeve: but he never beleaved, and therefore it was never payed for Judas. *Answ.* This is that we say, nall pay- that Christ gave no reall ransome at all, for the sins of Judas by ment made way of satisfaction. But they say that there is as well a ransome for the sins payed for all the sins of Judas (finall unbelief excepted) to free of Judas, him, in justice from eternall stroaks, as for all the sins of Peter to free him, only it is not accepted of by the Creditor, because Judas, by faith, assented not unto the bargain: But assenting or not assenting, accepting, or not accepting, that are posterior to the payment, are nothing up or down to the compleatnesse and cepting, affec- tion of the satisfaction made for the exhausting of Justice, senting, or for Justice receives not two satisfactions or ransomes for Judas, one upon the Crosse from Christ, another in Hell, from Judas, yea payment, and it must follow, that reall payment was made to Justice for all are not the sins of Judas, upon the Crosse, and that he suffers for none of causes of them, in Hell, but for only finall unbelief, which is no sin against the suffici-ency of the Covenant of Works and the Justice thereof, but only and for-mally against the Covenant of Grace, so that as yet satisfying of made to Divine Justice.

*The Covenant-state**PART. I.*

Divine Justice for sins, must be halfed and parted between Christ, and *Iudas*, which the Scripture teaches not. Also the Father either accepts the ransome of Christ, because it is intrinsically, and of it self sufficiently satisfactory: or because *Iudas* does beleeve it is so; The latter cannot be said, for beleeving adds nothing to the intrinsecall sufficiency of the satisfaction, as not believing diminishes nothing from the sufficiency thereof; Yea and so the Fathers formall reason of accepting of the satisfaction of Christ, must be terminated upon our poor act of believing, whereas the formal ground of the acceptation thereof is the intunsecall excellency and

The formal reason why God accepts of Christ's sacrifice for us to God, Eph. 5.2. And because he offered the ransome of the blood of God-man, of the Prince of life, *Act. 20.28. 1 Cor. 2.8. and offered himself to God, Eph. 5.25, 26. Heb. 9.14. Mat. 20. 28. 1 Tim. 2.6. Rev. 1.5.* nor is there any sufficiency in his death from the worth of beleeving. And the reason why he accepts it

sufficiency for Peter, not for another, is the election of grace. It is true the blood is a price refuseable, but it is this way refuseable, because the Lord might have followed a Law-way with Adam, and all his sons, and have denied to give his Son a Ransome for us, but it is not refuseable, because of any insufficiency in the Ransome. Now faith is to satisfaction as the approximation is to the free of, and the laying on of dry fewell to the fire, which is only a condition of burning, but the fire is the formall cause of burning. Yea

If we speak properly faith is not so much as a condition without the satisfaction which offended Justice is not satisfied, nor is it a condition, by any on of Christ Scripture of the world, without the which God laid not our iniquities on Christ, for whether we beleeve or not, God laid our able, how iniquities upon him, and made him sin for us, Isa. 53. 6. 2 Cor. not.

Faith a s. 21. Therefore, by necessity of Justice, he must accept that Ransome intrinsically so sufficient, which did restore more glory of applying to God, then the sins of all, for whom Christ died, took from the satisfaction him. Nor is it imaginable to say that any act of obedience or beleeving, can perfect the satisfaction of Christ, and make it sufficient, yea, or causatively make it ours. For God, by no necessity of Justice, but of his own free pleasure, requireth faith as a condition of our actuall reconciliation; for beside, that he might have required

of Adam and of Believers.

required any other act of obedience, as love, he might have accepted the Ransome without inquiring any act of obedience, on our part, as the Lord bestowed a calme Sea and deliverance from shipwrack, upon the Idolatrous Sea-men, upon the very act of casting *Jonah* in the Sea, without the intervention of any saving faith on their part; As a gracious Prince may send a pardon to free a condemned Malefactor from death, and may command that it be valid in Law for him, without the mans knowledge, and far more abundantly more Glory to God by suffering for all, for whom he died, then they took from God by their sins, and that restitution was made to Justice without the interveening of any act of the creatures obedience. But the truth is, it is much to be doubted whether they, who hold such a satisfaction to be given of God, for the sins of all, Elect and Reprobate, but so as it shall not be valid in Law, nor effectuall to quiet Justice, but they must all suffer eternall vengeance, and perform personall satisfaction, in Hell, to Justice, except there interveen an act of obedience of the creature, to make it effectuall, do really and sincerely acknowledge, against *Socinians*, a reall satisfaction and compensation made to offended Justice by Christ: For how is it reall, and not rather scenicall and formall, which may and should be null and in vain, if the creature make it not reall, by beleeving. And especially, if God out of his grace which is absolutely free, work in us the condition of beleeving. Can God give his Son as a Ransome for us, upon condition that we beleieve, if he himself absolutely work the condition in us? They will not admit this.

CHAP. V.

God intended a Law-dispensation but for a time. 2. Adam, how he was ordained for a Law-life. 3. How predestinated to Glory in Christ, how not. 4. That the Heathens have no more Universall Grace then Devils. 5. No ground for such grace.

IT is apparent that God intended not a Law-dispensation in Paradise to stand for ever. For 1. nothing is spoken of Adam, after

God may accept the satisfaction on of Christ red on our part.

*The Covenant-state**PART. I.*

after the fall, but of his procreating of children, of the Patriarchs, of Adams dying and of his actings before the fall, the place of Paradice being scarce well known, which sayes the Lord had a farther design to lay aside the transient Law-dispensation and to set up Christ. 2. The Lord, of purpose, gave a positive Law, forbidding eating of such a Tree, added a threatening thereunto particularly, suffered the Serpent to tempt, and forswa what frail nature would do, that he might deal with man, in a dispensation of free grace.

Obj. Did not God ordain that Adam should have life and righ-

teousnesse, if he should continue in obedience. Ans. That was a conditional decree conditionall of things, (the man that does these things shall live) and shewes the equitie and holinesse of the Law, but it was not a decree of persons, by which God predestinated Adam to a Law-glory, as the end, and to Law-obedience as the effectuall means leading to that end.

Q. Was not Adam chosen? Ans. Adam, according to the predetina- lords designe, finaliter & objectivè was created in the state of pre-destination to glory, and grace in Christ as touching his person, but according to his inherent condition, he was created in a legall dis- tress. How Adam was chosen, which was a gracious inlet to Christ; And according to was chosen his Law-state as he represented all mankind, he was Created as a to glory in lubrick and frail Coppie of weak nature. Christ, how not.

The hea-then have not uni-versall Grace.

Many who are such as are not chosen are Created and live under a Covenant of Works, having onely some concomitant favours of the Gospel, as the Preaching thereof. 2. Common grace, inward warnings. 3. Protections of providence and forbearance, in regard they are mixed with the Elect. The heathen cannot be said to have any inward calling to Grace and Glory, because there be some remanents of the Image of God left in them, which no more can be called universall Grace, then the same sparkles that are left in Devils can be called Gospel Grace, for they believe, *There is one God and confess the Son of God, Jam. 2. 19. Luk. 4. 34. Mark 1. 24.* Only if this be called Grace, that the nature of man is so capable of Gospel mercy, and the nature of the fallen Angels moralie not so. 2. The offer is made to them of Christ, not so to Devils, we shall not contend: Reason may seeme to say that all should

*PART. I.**of Adam and of Believers.*

should have a share of Gospel-Grace, but it may be replyed to reason, why should it seeme to be a part of the goodnesse and bounty of God to will and desire all and every one to be saved, and not to institute such a dispensation, as all and every one should actuallie be saved? 2. How should that stand, (*he hath mercy on whom he will*) if free-will of the creature absolutely dispose of Salvation and damnation? 3. How is it that the Calling, Adoption, and the offer of mercy is restricted to few, and was confined to the Jews on-ly of old? But we are more ready to call the Lord to a reckoning, for his dispensation of Grace to others, then to use our own, as be-comes us. 2. We cannot judge aright of God and of his goodnes, except he be God our very way. 3. It is a matter of no small dif-ficulcie to make right use of the Lords freedome of Grace, and for clay humblie to adore Soveraigntie, and not to stumble at the highnesse of his wayes, who, in these points, hath wayes and thoughts above ours, as the heavens are above the earth,

Isa. 55.

The high and deep Soveraign-ty of God is against universall Grace.

C H A P. VI.

It was condescension in the Lord to enter in Covenant with man. 2. Temptations in fearing we are not chosen, dis-covered. 3. Beings and not beings are debtors to God. 4. Self denyall required in sinleffe nature, as in sinfull. 5. Man considered three wayes.

Wither was God under an obligation, to make a Covenant with man?

Hardly can any maintain the dominion and Soveraigntie of God, and also assert an obligation, on the Lords part, of working upon Gods Co- the creature: The Lord is debtor to neither person nor things. He venanting as Lord commands, but it is condescension that he commands Co-with us, is venant-wayes, with promise of a reward to the obeyer. The Le- a gracious viathan in strength is far above Job, he cannot command him. Job 14. 4. Will he mak Berith a Covenant with thee, wilt thou condicen- take him for a servant for ever? That is, the Leviathan will not engadge as a servant to obey Job as his master. A Covenant speaks something

*The Covenant-state**PART. I.*

something of giving, and taking, work, and reward, and mutuall engagements, betwixt parties, though there be something in the Covenant between God and man, that is, not in the Covenants of men. The rationall creatures owe suitable, that is, rationall obedience to the Creator, but God is under no obligation to give life, especially so excellent a life as a communion with God, in glory, yet he does it. What a God must he be, who will come downe and put himself in a lovely and gaining capacitie to be a Covenanted debtour to our feeble obedience, whereas he ows nothing, and to make heaven and glory so sure to us, that the heavens should sooner break and melt, like snow before the Sun, then his promise can fail.

Obj. True, but faith is fixed upon the new Covenant-promise, if I believe. *Ans.* Yea, but faith here is to believe, that the condition it self is promised, as well as the reward.

Obj. The condition of a new heart and of faith is promised, but not to all, not to me, but to some few chosen only. *Ans.* There

The errors in temptations which wee create from surmises that we are not chosen to life eternall. be here a number of errors. 1. Unbelief fomenteth proud merite, that we are to believe as much of God promised, as there is conceived, to be wōrth in self, and in me to fulfill the condition; But true faith, contrare to self-unworthiness, relies upon the Truth of God, the excellencie of Christ, and the absoluteness of the promise. 2. Sathan like a Sophist drawes the dispute to the weakest conclusion from the strongest, to wit, from the promise of God, that is surer then heaven to the state, against which there is a greater number of Topick Arguments, then there can be against the promise of God. As 1. What am I? 2. Am I chosen or not? So Sathan to Christ, if thou be the Son of God, command these stones to be made bread, in point of believeng its better that faith expatiates in viewing God, Christ, the Ransome of the blood of God-Man, Better faith & Christ, the depth of free grace, then upon self, and the state: in point of view God & Christ, repenting and humble down-casting, we would read self, and our own estate. 3. Its Sathan and the unbelieving heart that would

Unbelief have our faiths greatness rising from selfs holiness, and quarrels at goodnesse. Whereas the greatest faith that Christ finds, Mat. 8. 10. looks away from self, v. 8. I am not worthy — and but pretends self dwells much upon the Omnipotency of Christ in commanding dis-
signes,

PART. I. of Adam and of believers.

cates, as a Centurian his Souldiers. 4. When unbelief quarrels the Lord as untrue and weak, who faints and wearies, and one that is not the Creator of the ends of the earth, it alledges only and pretends self-guiltiness to justifie unbelief: Yet Isa. 40. 28. though God be reproached as weak, we seem to resolve all in this; our own unworthiness, but we cannot get our faith stately enough; and the truth is here, we quarrell with God and his decrees, under pretence of this, what if he have not chosen me? and I have no right to Covenant-mercies, except I take a Law-way to earne them, by fulfilling the condition. 5. When we beleeeve a conditional promise (*if I beleeeve, I am saved*) faith relies not fiducially upon the (*if I beleeeve*) or upon the condition, Its a weak levee ^{How to be} pillar to a sinner to stay his unquiet heart upon, to wit, his own ^{ditionall} promises. belieeving, but faith rests upon the connexion (*if thou beleeeve thou shalt be saved*) and it stayes upon the connexion, as made sure by the Lord, who of grace gives the condition of belieeving, and of grace the reward conditioned; so that faith binds all the weight upon God only, even in conditionall Gospel-promises. 1. Man is to be considered as a creature, to wit, endued with reason and the Image of God, in either considerations, especially in the former all that are created, are obliged to do and suffer the will of God though they never sinned. Its not enough to say, that Sun, Moon, Trees, Herbs, Vines, Earth, Beasts, Birds, and Fishes, cannot suffer the ill of punishment, which is relative to the break of a Law, for the whole Creation is subject to vanity for our sins, Rom. 8. 20, 21. The Servant is smitten and sickened, for the Masters sake, and God may take from them what he gave them, their lives without sense of pain and dolour, for all beings, yea defects and privations are debtors to the glory declarative of God, Prov. 16. 4. Rom. 11. 36. yea and no beings are under this debt. God can serve himself of nothing, yea, that there are not created, Locusts, Caterpillars, more numerous, then that all the fruits of the earth can be food to them, Preach the Glory of the Lords goodness to man, and what are never to be, no lesse then all things, that have futurition, or shall come to passe either absolutely or conditionally, are under the positive decree of God, else we should not owe thanks to the Lord for many evils

Beings and
not being
are debtors
to the glo-
ry of God.

*The Covenant-state of Adam.**Part. I.*

evils that never fall out, that the Lord turns away violent death, violence of men, and wilde beasts, and many possible mischiefs, contrair to *Deut. 28. 11, 12. Lev. 26.6. Psal. 34. 20. Psal. 91.*

All not bc. 5,6,7,8. And all these beings or *no beings* owe themselves to God
lings are un- to hold forth the glory of goodnesse, wisedome, mercy, justice, &c.
der the suppose there had never been sin: Far more now, who wants
positive de- matter of meditation, or can write a boook of all the pains, aikings,
ere of God convulsions, pests, diseases that the Lord decreed to hold off? so
that every bone, joynt, lith, hair, member, should write a
Psalm Book of praiies, *Psal. 35. 10. All my bones shall say, Lord,*
Who is like unto thee? Nor can any man write his debts of this
kind. But we are little affected with the negatives of mercies, ex-
cept we read them upon others, and little then also; Self-pain
Preacheth little to us, far more, the borrowed experience of fal-
len Angels, of Sodom, of the old world, &c. leaves small impres-
sion upon stony spirits. 2. Complain not, that you have not that
share of grace, another hath, if ye (you think) had it, you
would be as usefull to glorifie God, as they, but ye know not your
self; swell not against him, that thou hast no grace, O vessell of
wrath, thou owes that bit clay, and all thy wants to glorifie his
Justice. 3. My sicknesse, my pain, my bands owe themselves to
God, and are debtors to his glory, I, and every one of men should
say, O that my pain might praise him, and my hell, and flamings

Oar pains of everlasting fire, might be an everlasting Psalm of the Glory of
and suffe- his Justice; That my sorrow could sing the Glory of so High a
rings are Lord; But we love rather that he wanted his praise, so we want-
the glory ed our pain. 3. God hath made a sort of naturall Covenant with
of God. night and day, *Jer. 31.35. For all are his servants, Psal. 119.91.*

that they should be faithfull to their own naturall ends to act for
him, *Jer. 5. 22. Jer. 31.37. Psal. 124. 1,2,3,4.* and they are more
more self- denyall in faithfull to their ends then men. *Isa. 1. 3. Jer. 8.7.* The oxe and
the lifeless the asse being more knowing to their owner, and the swallow and
and unea- the cran being more discerning of their times, then men are. 2.
sonable They so keep their line, that there is more self-deniall in their a-
creatures stings, then in mans way: as if fire were not fire, and nature in it
in their Co. venant of denied, the fire devours not the three Children, *Dan. 3. 27,28* The
nature, the Sun stands still, the Moon moves not, *Iosb. 10.12,13.* The hungry
in man.

Lions

The Covenant-state of Adam.

Lions eat not *Daniel, ch.6.22.* When the Lord gives a counter-
command to them, and that is a clause in the Covenant, that the
Lord entered with them, that they act or no act, as he shall be
pleased to speak to them, *John 2.10. Isa.50.2. Mat.8.16.* It is
a most humbling Theame, that an asse is more in denying nature,
and the cran and the fire, then man, yea then a renued man in some
cases. 4. But if man be considered, as such a man, endued with
the Image of God, and withall the Covenant be considered as such
a Covenant, as is expressed in the Ten-Commandements, in
which one of seven is a Sabbath to the Lord, it will be found that
many positives Morall are in the Covenant of Works, that are not in
naturall Covenants.

5. So man mult come under a three-fold consideration.

1. As a creature.
2. As a reasonable creature.
3. As such a creature reasonable,
endued with the image of God.

In the first consideration, man comes under the Covenant natu- A threefold
rall, common to all creatures; So is Peters body carried above in considera-
tion of man in reference
to a Cove-
nant, the water as iron swims.

2. As a reasonable creature, he owes himself to God, to obey
so far as the Law written in the heart carries him, to love God,
trust in him, fear him. But this can hardly bear the name
of a Covenant, except it be so called; in a large sense, nor is
there any promise of life, as a reward of the work of obedience
here.

3. But man being considered as indued with the Image of God, The Cove-
so the Holy God made with him a Covenant of life, with Com- nant natu-
mandements, though positive and Morall, yet not deduced from ral, & the
the Law of Nature, in the strictest sense, as to observe such a Sab- Covenant
bath, the seventh from the Creation, the not eating of the for- in its posi-
bidden tree, and with a promise of such a life. And therefore tives of di-
though Divines, as our solid and eminent Rollock, call it a Cove- verse consi-
nant naturall, as it is contradistinguished from the supernaturall derations.
Covenant of Grace, and there is good reason so to calb it; Yet
when it is considered in the positives thereof, it is from the free
will

C 2

*The Covenant-state of Adam.**PART. I.*

will of God, and though it be connaturall to man, created according to the Image of God, yet the Covenant came so from the Lords wisedom and free-will, as he might have casten it in a new and far other-frame: And it cannot be denied, though it be most suitable to mans intire nature to love God, yet to love him so and so, by obeying the command of not eating the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge, and some other Commands, is not so connaturall, but God might have commanded the contrair, without any thing done contrair to mans nature. Yet from this it followes, no more that these are two Covenants, then that there be two Covenants of Grace, Because faith in God, and the Morall Law in an Evangelick way are therein commanded, and also some duties touching the seals by a positive Law are therein contained.

C H A P. VII.

Its not written in the heart of man by nature, that G O D should promise life eternall to man, upon condition of obedience. 2. And that the debt of Justice can not tie G O D. 3. G O D punisheth not sin, by necessity of nature. 4. Nor defends he his own declarative Glory by that necessity. 5. Nothing can be given to G O D Al-sufficient. 6. Nomeriting of the creature. 7. We should have humble thoughts of free-Grace. 8. How low thoughts of our selves. 9. Promises make no strict justice between G O D and us.

God nti- **S**ure, it is not repugnant to the yet innocent and intire nature of man, to know, that God may reward all such as seek and serve him, but that he must reward obedience either in the generall, or so and so, is neither written in mans heart, nor hath it any other reward: For it were nothing against justice, or bounty, or any attribute of God, not to reward his creature, which is obliged to serve him, and though there be a sort of quietnesse of conscience, which is the naturall result of obedience in *Adam*, and of all men, yet it cannot inferre, that there is an intrinsecall connexion, *ex naturâ*,

PART. I. The freedome of God in punishing.

turâ rei, between our obedience and a reward to be given of God. Therefore, nor will it be a good inference, because there is disquietnesse in the conscience, after sin, and that it is naturall to a sinner to apprehend a revenging power pursuing sin committed, that therefore it is naturall and essentiall to the Lord, to pursue sin with punishment in generall. For a naturall conscience may, and does know, that God doth freely create the world, and that he might not have created it, that he doth good freely to his creatures, and that he is not a debtor to his creatures; Will it follow by any Logick, that God creates the world by any naturall obligation? And A naturall conscience because by force of a naturall conscience, all know that God is good, and bountifull to his creatures, in giving, and doing good to them, we cannot therefore infer that actuall beneficence is so essentiall to the infinite Majestie, as he should not be God, if he did not extend goodnesse to them. Common sense will say no more follow-freely to eth, but goodnesse and bounty intrinsecall are essentiall to God, and these attributes are essentiall to him, and were from eternity in him, and are his good and bountifull nature; Though not either man, Angel, or any thing else had been created, to which he doth actually extend his goodnesse. Ergo, this actuall extension of goodnesse is not essentiall to God, so neither is the actuall punishing of sin essentiall to God, but free, though Adam apprehended God would punish his eating of the forbidden tree; Yet if he apprehended that he should not be God, if he did not punish it, his apprehension was erroneous. And this only followes that there is an intrinsecall and internall Justice in God, naturall and essentiall in God, but so that the out-goings of his Justice, the egressions are most free, and that is said by some without all reason, because the apprehensions we have naturally of God that he punisheth sin, Universales apprehensiones, nequaque sunt corum que Deo vel adesse vel abesse possunt pro liberrimâ voluntate. Universall apprehensions, therefore they are not apprehensions of such things as may be, or not be in God, according to his free pleasure, if the apprehensions of Gods doing good to Angels, to men, to all his creatures freely, be in all by nature, and cannot be rooted out, and be universall, then these apprehensions cannot be of such things as are in God, according to his most free will, and may be in the Almighty or not be in him.

But

The freedome of God in punishing. PART. I.

But the conclusion hath neither reason nor sense; for there are universall apprehensions in all men, and they cannot be rooted out, that God does good to Angels, men, and creatures freely: *Ergo*, by this Logick the doing of good freely to Angels, men, and creatures is not a thing that is in God according to his free-will, and may be in the Almighty or not in him. Then the so doing must be in God essentially. 2. Then must God not be God, if he do not good freely to them. 3. Then must God not be God, except he create men, Angels, and creatures. 4. But since he is God everlasting, he must from everlasting have created men, Angels, and the creatures, and from everlasting he must punish sin; Life may be considered. 1. As life. 2. As such an excellent life, to wit, a communion with God.

In the former consideration, life is either considered as the end, or secondly as a free reward. In the former respect. To live an ^{G O D} in intellectuall life in obeying God, was to *Adam* so created a communion with ^{Glory}, is a naturall end, as to burn, is to fire, and to give light, to the Sunne. reward not And God may put the respect of a reward upon any obedientiall due by na- end. But that *Adam* should have such an eminent life, for the ture, but by the free gift reward of his obedience as a communion with God, which is farre of ^{GOD}, above his obedience, is the free donation of God: nor is there any to the most necessary connexion between *Adams* perfect obedience, and so perfect law. high and eminent a life, nor can this Covenant, as touching such a promise, be written in his heart. God then never loved to make any Covenant, yea even that of Works, without some acts and out-goings of grace, and the hyre was grace, how is he not to be served, who loves to hyre and allure us to be happy?

Arminius saith, the reward of keeping the Covenant of Works, ^{in Collacum} cannot be spirituall, nor can the punishment be spirituall, because ^{Francis Funi} you teach (saith he) that the obedience is naturall. *Ans.* It followeth not, for the reward is spirituall, yea and supernaturall pos. 12. pag. 547. from the free promise of God: It was, that God should recompence our naturall obedience, coming from connaturall principles, with so eminent a Crowne as communion with God Creator, in a life of glory. And this came from no innate proportion between a naturall work and supernaturall reward; Otherwise we must say, first that there is such an intrinsicall connexion ex naturâ*rī* be-

PART. I. *No meriting in the creature to the Creator.*

tween Adams work and so high wages, as that glorious communio- n was, as the Lord could not but in justice, so have rewarded his obedience, except he would be unjust, but there is nothing in the creature, that can conclude, limite, or determine, his will and wisdome, who is infinite. 2. It had been nothing against justice, if the Lord had followed Adams obedience, with no reward at all; For man as a creature, owes himself to God, and as sweetly and ^{Anselmus} pithily *Anselme* saith, *as a redeemed one I owe my self and more de redemp-* then my self to thee, because thou gave thy self who art so farre ^{tunc certe} more then my self, for me, and thou promises thy self to me. Now ^{Domine,} God, who is more and greater then Adam, promised himself, to ^{quia me se- cisti debes} be enjoyed by Adam, if he should continue in obedience. For ^{amori mo} what can the highest goodness (sayeth he) give to one that loves ^{meritum to- tum, imo tantum de-} it, but it self?

beo amori tuo plus quam me ipsum. Quantum tu es major me, pro quo deligi te ipsum & cui pro- mitis te ipsum.

Anselm. Monolog. 40. quid enim summi bonitas retrahet amari & desideranti se nisi se ipsum.

3. If God, of justice, give Adam life, Adam might compell God to pay, what he oweth him, else he should be unjust: But the creature can lay no necessitie on the Creator, either to work without himself, nor can he cause him to will. 4. The proper work of merit (faith great Bradwardine) and of him that works ^{No merit can wone} must go before the wages, in time, or in order of nature. And if ^{God, for he is greater} the worker receive its operation, and working for wadge from God first, and by his vertue and help continue in operation and working, he cannot condignely merit at the hand of God, but is rather more in Gods debt, after his working, then before his working, because he bountifullie receives more good from God, then before, especially, because he gives nothing proper of his own to God, but gives to God his own good; But no man first acts for God, for God is the first actor and mover in every action, and just, that motion. As that saith, *Who gave first to the Lord, and it shall God shuld reward Adams obe-* ^{Bradward. de causa Dei lib. 1. c. 39. p. 343. l. E.} *reward A-* ^{It is not} *be recompensed him?*

5. If this was yesterday just, that life eternall is due to Adam ^{diéce, with} for his work before God made it just and due, then from Eternitie life, before and before any decree of God it was just and due; Certainlie, God, God made upon it just.

God punisbeth not by

PART. I.

upon the same reason, was debtour, to make such a Covenant, that was just, before he made it just. And this is no Covenant of God, for God, not making the justice of the Covenant, and the just connexion between work and wadge, he cannot be the Author of the Covenant: But neither is Adam the Author of the justice, nor of the just Covenant: Upon the same ground, it was then an everlasting justice without and before God from Eternitie. *Non duratur iustum prius primo iusto.*

6. If God did more for Adam, then he can recompence God for Mancan it, as the Father hath done to the Son, then he could not merit nevercome at the hand of God: But God did more to Adam in giving to him from under an ob- being, faculties, mind, will, affections, power, habites, his bles- sèd Image, then Adam can never be in a condition, in which he his Creator can recompence God, or give him more annuall and usurie, in his and Re- acting of obedience, then the stock was he received in proportion. As the Son can never give the Father, in recompence, so much or the captive ransomed from death, can never give to his ransome payer, who bought him so much, as the one and the other shall no more be under an obligation, and debt of love and service to father and ransomer, then to a stranger that they never knew: Nor could Adam thus be freed of God, so as he should be owing nothing to him. If any say, God may freely forgive all this obligation and debt: To which Bradwardine Answers well: 1. The forgiving of the debt, when the debtor hath nothing to pay is a greater debt taken on. 2. God (saith he) may forgive so in regard of actuall obligation, that he is not obliged *ad aliquid faciendum sub pena peccati*, to do any thing under the pain or punishment of sin, as the hiteling is obligeid to work, when he hath made a Covenant to work, and so we are not obliged to do, as much as we can for God. But in regard of habituall obligation, God can not forgive the debt, that the reasonable creature owes to God, for so he might dispence with this, that the reasonable creature owe no obedience to God, suppose he should command it, which is impossible.

They seeme therefore, with eyes of flesh, to look upon God, who say that God by necessitie of justice must punish sin, yea that the most High cannot be God, except he punish sin, and that he should not

PART. I. *necessity of nature, but freely.*

not be God, if all his Lawes imposed upon men, were only promisorie and void of all threatnings.

What? could not God have said, eat not of the tree of knowledge, for if ye eat not, your obedience shall be rewarded with life eternall, and no more? might he not have laid aside all threatening? What Scripture or reason teacheth to say, that God, if he create a reasonable creature, and under a morall dependencie, which it hath and must have of God, then must God, by necessitie of nature, punish the sinner, yea so as, if he punish not, he should not sin by nature, nor just, but must fall from his naturall dominion, except he make penall laws, and so he should not be God, except he say to Adam (*if thou eat thou shalt die*) or (*shalt be punished for eating*) but this is not proven by one word, except this, the reasonable creature is not, nor cannot be subject to God Creator, except God punish the sinner; But that is denied: Adam should have had a Morall dependance upon God, and God should have been God, and essentially just, if sin had never come into the World, and if God had kept Adam under a Morall Law, as he did the Elect Angels, who never felt or knew the fruit of a Morall Law broken and transgressed. And God, if he imposed any penall Law upon the Elect Angels as penall (which shall be an hard work to prove) yet had a naturall dominion over the Elect Angels, and suppose no Law, but only a rewarding and remunerative Law, had been over their heads, should God be no God, in that case? and if any deny, that God hath a perfect dominion over the Elect Angels, he is not worthy to be refuted. 2. Shew me, in all the Old or New Testament, any penall Law of active obedience as penall, imposed upon the man Christ, or where is it written, *If the Man Christ sin, he shall eternally die?* I tremble at such expressions: Is the Lord therefore not the Lord, and hath the Lord fallen from his naturall dominion over his Son, the Man Christ? Or (3.) will any mandeny, but the Lord might justly have laid upon all men and upon the Elect Angels a Law only remunerative, not penall at all, a Law only with the promise of a reward, and void of all threatening of death, first or second, or any other punishment, and yet he should have been the Lord, and had a naturall dominion over Angels, the Man Christ, and all mankind?

D

(3.) Suppose

God punisbeth freely,

PART. I.

(3) Suppose the Lord had never imposed the Law penall for bidding the sin against the Holy Ghost, upon the Elect beleevers, dominion nor any other penall Law, but by vertue of the most sufficient ran- over man, some of the Blood of God payed for man, he had made them now is without after the fall, as the confirmed Angels, and holy as the Man Christ, Scripture and brought them so to glory, should he not have been God in that or reason, case, and should he have lost his naturall dominion over men in restricted case? 4. The dominion of God over men is not only in one to penal Laws. particular, of penall Laws, it is in remunerative Laws also, in gi-

Si enim lex ving predeterminating influences to obey and persevere in obedi-
ta sit non fe- tence, in not leading into temptation, in hyring and alluring us to
ratur nece- serve God, in terrifying men with examples of the Lords Judge-
ssarii, possibi- ments on others, *he spared not the Angels, &c.* 2 Pet. 2. 4. Jud. 6.
le esset ut vel and therefore, to say, that God falls from his naturall dominion
Deus jure over man, and leaves off to be God, except he impose penall Laws,
suo naturali upon men, is first an error in Logick, *a negatione species ad ne-*
& Dominio in *creatura gationem generis, nulla est consequentia:* If God have not a do-
in *creatura* *gationem* *generis,* *nulla est consequentia:* If God have not a do-
caderet, & minion over man, in one particular of penall Laws, he falls from
fic non est his whole dominion natural, in other things: It is an undue in-
DEUS, vel stabilitio isto ference. 2. It cannot be but too darring to tye the *blessed God-*
jure, creatu- *head, and his essentiall dominion over man, to only making of pe-
ram ei non* nall Laws: it smells of Scripturelesse boldnesse with the most High,
esse subdi- and limits the *Holy One*, that he cannot be God, except he be
tam. Quod God in our way: And faith, he hath no way to preserve his glo-
implicat con- riod, but by creating a Hell: And therefore let that stand as an un-
niam proven position, since it hath no probation; The reason that is
intercisi o- given is as weak as the weak conclusion; Though water may bear
bedientia up water, yet it cannot support the earth. For 1. it saith, if man
(quod fieri be created a reasonable creature under a Law, he may sin, *inter-*
potuit & fa- *cidi potuit obedientia*, and he may be created under a Law, with
dependentia perfect morall dependence upon *God Creator*, as the Elect Angels
(moralis and the Man Christ, and yet never sin, and yet God falls not from
creature ra- his dominion, and leaves not off to be God. (2.) This lookest
tionalis a *Deo)* illa somewhat the *Arminian Way*, that man cannot be under the
nullo modo subjection of, properly so called, Morall obedience, except his will
continuari be indifferent as *Adams* was, to stand or fall, to run to Heaven or
poret, nisi Hell, which indeed saith, that the most perfect obedience of Christ;
per penam Who

PART. I. *not by necessity of nature.*

who was obedient to the death, *Phil. 2. 8.* and delighted to do the will of God, *Psal. 40. 8.* *John 4. 34.* is no proper obedience, that is, perfect obedience is not proper obedience. And that obedience of Elect Angels the samplar of our obedience, *Mat. 6. 10.* *Isa. 6. 2, 3.* *Psal. 103. 20.* is not proper obedience. 3. Whereas

it is said, if man sin, his morall dependency cannot stand, except God punish him, but so not only God shall not be God, nor have dominion over man, except he impose a penall Law upon man, but he shall not be God except he actually punish man, or his surety Christ. But the same pen saith that *the out-goings of justice* *jam vere* *are free*, that is to say, it is free to God to punish sin; and yet he *egressus ne-* falls from his naturall dominion over man, and leaves off to be God, *cessarius co-* if he punish not sin. But we do deny that God falls from his na- *stituencies,* *non negamus* *tural dominion over man, though he never impose a penall Law *Deum ta-* upon him, and never punish, and desire that this may be proven, *men eam li-* nor is it imaginable, how *God by necessity of nature, must punish* *bere exerce-* *sin; And yet, in the way, measure, and degree of punishment, and re-* *in the time when, he can use moderation.* Which is as good as to *It is not fea-* say, the fire must, by necessity of nature, burn, the Sun cast light; *zable, with* But the fire hath free will to burn when it pleaseth, and at this *out a con-* time, and not at this time; and the Sun must shine, by necessity *tradition,* *to say God* of nature, but it is free to shine at ten hours of the day, and not at *punisheth* twelve, and it may shine as bright as the Sun, or as dimme as the *sin. by ne-* Moon. O God the Father loves himself, but it is free to him to *cessity of* love himself to day, not to morrow, and to love himself so much, *nature, and* yet in the *way, mea-* not so much. And so he may say, *God* is so mercifull and just to *day, as he may be no merciful, no just, to morrow;* and *God* is *sure, and* infinitely mercifull and just, and yet he is lesse mercifull and more *time of pu-* mercifull essentially according to his good pleasure, which are *nishing, he* speaking contradictions. Yea this is that which misjudging *Sua-* *rez* saith, that the creature may do a reall injurie to *God*, and take *Suarez in* away from *God jus Dei ad gloriam*, his right to glory, but the *opus. de ju-* truth is, the creature by sin darkeneth or overcloudeth his decla- *sit. Dei.* *Sect. 2. nu-* *9. fig. 352.* *right or reall good from God, so Elihu, Job 39. 6. If thou sinnest,* *what dost thou against him? If thy transgressions be multiplied,* *what dost thou to him? To take his declarative glory from God,* *is**

*God punisheth freely;**PART. I.*

is no lose to him, no more then it is lose to the Sun, that ye hinder it to shine upon the wall, when yet ye take no light from the Sun, for it shines upon an interposed body. *Job 35. 8.* *Thy wickednesse may hurt a man as thou art, and thy righteousnesse may profite the Son of man. It is needfull (say some) that God preserve his own glory safe, but if sin be without infliction of punishment, it is impossible that he can defend his own glory. Ergo, of necessity he must punish sin. The proposition is out of controverſie, for all confesse that God must preserve his own glory, but by necessity of nature he must do ſo, quoniam ſcipſum non potest non amare. Because he cannot but love himself, and he hath ſaid, my glory will I not give to another.*

God loves & defends by necessi- ty of nature his essentiall, but not his declarative glory. To this is answered, the glory internall, eternall, and essentiall to God, the Lord must defend and love as he loves himself, by necessity of nature; and if any say that the egressions and out-goings of God to defend and love his own essentiall Glory, and his own holy Nature, so as he may use moderation in the degrees and time of these, and he may love himself and his own essentiall glory, more or leſſe, and touching the time, he may delay to love himself, and he may love himself and his own essentiall glory to morrow, not to day, As the Author ſayes, the out-goings of revenging justice are moderated in punishing; he speaks wonders and things unworthy of God. The place, *Isa. 42.* speaks not of this glory, for no idol, *God loves no creature, can more take away from the Almighty this essentiall & defends glory of God, nor his blessed Nature can cease to be, but there is the glory of a glory declarative of pardoning mercie, as well, as of revenging his pardo- ning mer- cie, no less then the glory of his reveng- ing justice, and if he love the one, by ne- cessitie of nature, he must also love the o- ther,* cloathed with revenging justice, or as just, and his own glory of revenging justice, but that God loves himself as mercifull and ready to forgive, or his own glory of pardoning mercie freely, and by no necessity of nature: Which the Author must ſay, for the place, *Isa. 45.* Should otherwife bear this ſense, *my glory of revenging justice only, I will not give to Idol gods and creatures.* But the place of *Isa. ch. 42. 8.* should not conclude, but they might ascribe the glory of salvation and mercifull deliverances and victories over *Judah, the Temple, the Sanctuary to their idol gods, the contrair whereof is intended by*

PART. I. not by necessity of nature.

29

by the Prophet; But if the Lord, by necessity of nature, love his The place, declarative glory, *as he loves himself, then he must love glory of Isa. 42. 18.* one attribute, as well as of another, and ſo as his Nature, not free- *I will not dome or ſovereignty puts him to it, to defend the glory of justice, try to an-* when man ſins; Yea ſo as he cannot be God and essentially jult, ex- *cept he vindicat his glory of justice; Yea ſo he must love the glo-*

*ry of ſaving and pardoning mercy, as himself, for the one glory is no leſſe essentiall to God (if it be essentiall at all) then the other. And by this means, God, by necessity of nature, to pre- ſerve ſafe the glory of ſaving mercie, muſt ſend his Son, and by the like necessity, by which he loves himself, he muſt redeem man; Now the Lord does not love himself, of free grace, for he every way, for the infinite excellency of his Nature is love-worthy, and there is no interveening of freedom, or free grace, or ſovereignty in the Lords loving of himſelf and his own essentiall glory. There is a declarative glory, which is not essentiall to God, of which the Scripture, *Prov. 16. 4. The Lord made all things for himſelf, that is, for his glory, to be declared. Eph. 1. 6. He hath choſen us to the praise of the glory of his grace, v. 11. In Christ we have obtained an inheritance. 12. That we ſhould be to the praise of his glo- ry. Rom. 11. 36. All things are to him, to his glory. Isa. 43. 21. This people have I formed for my ſelf, they ſhall ſhew forth my praise.**

All these are to be understood not of the essentiall glory of God, but of the declarative glory of God, that ſhines ad extra. *God by necessity And this glory is not essentiall to God as ſo declared, for he was in- of nature, finitely glorious from eternity, and ſhould eternally be essentially glorious, though neither world, nor man, nor Angel, had been created. And the meaning of that, Isa. 42. 8. is miſtaken, the length of the Heaven, toto Cælo. It is not this, as I ſo by that love my ſelf, ſo by neceſſitie of nature I will, and deſire that neceſſitie, my glory due to me, as God, be not given to idol gods, and creatures.* *1. What by neceſſitie of nature God wills, that certainly, and by neceſſitie of nature is and existeth, as he loveth himſelf, and his Son if by that by neceſſitie of nature, and begets his Son by neceſſitie of nature, neceſſitie, ſo also by neceſſitie of nature God is loved, and the Son of God is he should be loved, and the Son is by neceſſitie of nature, begotten of the Fa- ther. But it is moſt untrue, that by neceſſitie of nature, the Glory declarative of Glory.*

*God punisheth freely**PART. I.*

of God is not transferred to Idol gods and creatures; The Scriptures cry the contrare. When ever Idolatrie is committed, Isa. 40. and 41. Isa. 46. Rom. 1. Acts 17. his Glory declarative is given, most sinfully to another against his approving will. 2. What ever sin God forbids, he forbids the existence of it, by his approving will, not by necessitie of nature, for if God essentially and by nature willed that sin and Idolatrie should never be, he would efficaciouslie hinder it; But what God wills by his commanding will, we see he does not efficaciouslie hinder the existence thereof: For then sin and Idolatrie should not be at all, nor have any existence, which is contrare to Scripture and experience; And surely, if God love his declarative Glory essentially as himself, he must essentially no lesse love to keep this glory, when Angels and men do obey him, and to hinder the taking away of this Glory by sin, then to revenge the taking away of this glory by punishment, for every sin against a positive Law, to eat of the tree of knowledge, or for the Jews to eat swines flesh, before Christ abolished such Lawes, as well as sins against the Law of nature, are contrare to the Glo-

God must ry of God, and so contrare to that essentiale love that God hath to his Glory, and to the Glory of the Lord, the Law-giver himself, by necessitie of nature. Ergo, by necessitie of nature, because he cannot but love himself. he should preserve his legislative Glory, (it is as properly and esse-
the existēce of sin, and fentiallie the Glory of God, which he requires of us, in doing his will, as the Glory of suffering punishment for sin committed, is by the same will, because God can-
necesse his Glory) therefore, by necessitie of nature, because God can-
not but love himself, he should essentially hinder sin: And if God
givitie absolve the guiltie, where is the Glory of his justice? True, it
Glory, if should be lost, so when God suffers the Angels to fall, and Adam
he love it, as he loves to sin, where is the Glory of his legislative Majesty? it is lost so
himself by far. God is oblidged to defend the Glory of his Justice: say and
necessitie prove that he is oblidged by necessitie of nature to defend the Glo-
ry of his Justice, more then by the same necessitie he must defend
his legislative Glory. 3. God must defend all his Glory with the
same necessitie, except the Scripture make some exception of some
Glory which he must preserve, as dearer to him then some other
Glory, which is unwarrantable to say, and if God must, by neces-
sity of nature, and as God, because naturally he loves himself and his

*PART. I.**not by necessitie of nature.*

his own Glory, defend his own Glory, then, by necessitie of na-
ture he must defend the Glory of all his Attributes, of Holiness,
Graciousnesse, Greatnesse, Omnipotencie, Eternitie, Infinite
knowledge, &c. that the Glory of not one of these be taken from
him by sin: And because the Lord maketh, and worketh all, that
he doth without himself, in the creature, for his own Glory.
Prov. 16. 4. Rev. 4. 11. Rom. 11. 36. in all that he doth, he must
by necessitie of nature love his own Glory, quoniam seipsum non
potest non amare, because he loves himself. Ergo, by this ground
the Lord doth nothing freely without himself, and so the Lord
makes not the rain to fall, the tree to bud, the sea to ebbe, the
wind to blow, the fowls to flee, the fishes to swim, for the de-
claration of the Glory of his goodnesse, or his power, or his mercy,
his holiness, with any freedome, but all these he must do for Glo-
ry to himself by necessitie of nature, which Glory he loves as him-
self, for his Glory in all he doth without, he loveth by necessitie
of nature, as he loves himself saith the Author. And therefore
as he cannot preserve the Glory of his Justice, but by punishing sin,
and that by necessitie of nature, so he cannot preserve the Glory of
the rest of all his Attributes (which Glory also he loves as himself)
but by doing all without himself in like maner by necessitie of na-
ture, which utterly destroyes the libertie and freedome of God in
all his works of Providence and Creation, and so God shall be a na-
turall agent in all his works without himself, not a free agent in

God might
Creating and Redeeming. 4. The Scripture sayes, he works all
things according to the counsell of his will, for his Glory, and there-
fore he intends not his own declarative Glory as he loves himself: declarative
For by necessitie of nature he loves himself, and cannot but love
himself. But he might, if so it had pleased him, never have in-
tended to shew forth his own Glory, and does not show it forth
by necessitie of nature as he loves himself. Yea he might never
have created the world, never have acted without himself: For
he was sufficient within himself and stood in need of no declarative
Glory: Gen. 17. 1. Acts 17. 25. 5. Yea if by necessitie of Justice,
God cannot but punish sin, especially this justice shall carry him to
follow the Law of Works without any Gospel moderation, which
is that the same person that sins, and the same soul, Ezek. 18. and
no

God punisheth freely

If God no other, should die for sin: for all these. *Thou shalt destroy all punishment, the workers of iniquitie.* *Thou art of purer eyes than that thou can behold iniquitie,*, and the like, are expressions of a pure legall ty of ju-
ice, bee proceeding in the Lord, against such as are out of Christ, under
the Law, not under the Gospel, to wit, *the workers of iniquity* whom the Lord in justice shall punish in their person, not in their
surety. And if there be such a connexion objective *ex naturâ rei*, between sin and punishment, it must be between punishment and
the very person and none other, but the same that sinned: For among men this is justice. *Noxa sequitur caput*, so that by ne-
cessarie of nature, God shall not be God, nor essentially just, if he
punish not eternally Adam and all mankinde in their own persons,
and so by necessarie of justice, he cannot punish Christ; And it
cannot be denied but there is a dispensation of free Grace, and that
it is no act of Justice but of Grace, that God make Christ sin, i. e.
a sacrifice for sin for us, 2 Cor. 5. 21. And that the Lord laid upon
him the iniquities of us all, Isa. 53. 6. and made him our surety.
Nor let any man object, how could God make Christ a propitiation
for sin to declare his righteousness? Or how could such justice, by
that action be debarred? since justice did not exact such an action:
If without violation of justice it might have been omitted, if God
should have been infinitely just from Eternitie, if he had done no
such thing? Shall a Prince get himself glory in the name of ju-
stice, by doing that which, by his absolute Sovereignty, he may
certainly leave undone without hurt of justice. It is Answered, this is to
declaring measure God by mortall men: Shall an earthly father freely for no
real good to himself beget hundreds of children, when he needs
not, and yet he foresees the largest number of them shall perish
eternally, and the eldest must die and be made a curse, to save
the rest. The Lord punished Christ for us to declare the glory of
his Justice in punishing sin in his own Son, who was the sinner by
dam, or the imputation, for out of the depth of infinite wisedome, the Lord
surely freely imposes a law upon his creatures: He might have imposed
no such law under such a punishment. By no necessity of nature
makes God to do the Lord threaten death, for the eating the fruit of that tree,
punish, by prove, that God should not have been God except he had threat-
necessity of ned death for the eating of that fruit, and except he had punished
that

PART. I.

not by necessity of nature.

that eating with death, either to be inflicted upon the eater or
his surety. Quid heres? Prove that by the Word of God, it is
sin to eat, when God forbids; but the Lords soul hates sin. True,
but does the Lords soul hate sin naturally, as he loves himself and
by necessity of his essential justice as contradistinguished from his
immutabilitie, and his truth and faithfulness, according to which
attributes, he decreed and said, *that the soul that sins shall die*, and
(*he that eats shall die*) and he cannot change, nor alter, what he
hath decreed, and cannot but be true in his threatenings. But the
Question is, whether (laying aside the respect of Gods unchange-
ableness and truth) there be such a connexion internall, between
eating and dying, or between eating forbidden of God, and pu-
nishment, as God cannot be equally and essentially just, nor can
he be God, except he punish forbidden eating; for sure eating of
that fruit, is not of its nature, sin, but it is sin, from the only for-
bidding will of God, for the Lord had been no lesse essentially just,
had he commanded Adam to eat of the Tree of Knowledge. Ergo,
it is punished from the forbidding will of God. for say that to be
punishable or to be punished be essentiall to sin, if eating of such
fruit be sin from the forbidding will of God, the essence thereof
must be from the same forbidding will, then must it follow that God
hates not all sin, by necessity of nature; And that he hates such
eating only conditionally, if he forbid it; but he from his meer free
will, did forbid it. So the Question shall not be, whether God
in justice, punished Christ, and made him a propitiation to declare
his justice, but what the relative justice *ad extra* is, by which
God punisheth sin, and whether God should leave off to be God
(hallowed be his high Name) if he should not make first penall
Laws to threaten all sin with punishment. 2. Whether he should
not be God, if he should not punish all sin, even the eating of the
forbidden tree. 3. What can be said that is more weak and wa-
trie, to enervat the glory of free Grace, then to confound the the manife-
Glory of Gods Justice in giving Christ to die for sinners, and this station of
glory as manifested and declared: For sure the manifestation of his glory to
that glory is a work of free Grace, and most free, if God do any Angels and
Men, are thing freely, he must freely, and by no necessity of Justice, Mercy, much diff-
Omnipotency, Patience, Grace, &c. manifest the glory of all seren-

these

Declared these to men and Angels, and these attributes and the internal glory and splendor, beauty, or (to speak so) the fundamentall glory of all fundamental glory are the attributes of God is essentiall to God, and his very Nature. And they deny the Lord, who teach that any attributes or such glory are in God freely or contingently (if I durst so speak) for then might we say, these may go and come, ebbe and flow, in the Lord, and he should be God, though Mercy, Omnipotency, Glorioussesse, Graciousnesse, were now and then wanting in him, as he punishes not alway, and yet he is eternally just, he saves noe alwayes, and yet he is eternally mighty to save, and abundant in compassions. but as to the manifestation of Power, Mercy, Justice; that is freely in God: He sent his Son, and gave his Son to death for us, out of love, John 3. 16. But it is against common sense, to infer, Ergo, God sent his Son, by necessity of love, and mercy, and free Grace. So that he should not have been infinitely loving, mercifull, gracious, if he had never sent him. And it is as poor Logick to say, because of grace and free-love he sent his Son, and so might not have sent him, as to say he loved where there was no need, & it is in vain to shew the glory of Justice (saith the Author)

Qualis enim amor iste esse when God can take away sin, out of free pleasure, and why should potest, quem in ea re, qua be expose his Son to shame, death, and a curse, whereas he might nihil opus habere taken away sin freely, because it is his pleasure? This is the DEUS very thing that Socinians say, there is no need of blood, and satisfaction by blood, if God out of his absolute Sovereignty can offendit?

The free-take sin away without blood, and so there was no need of realldom of pu-satisfaction; This is against the Holy Ghost, and we may hear it. All the Scriptures cryes that out of free grace the Lord sent his Son, and delivered him to death; By the grace of God He tasted by Socinus, as contrair death for every man, Heb. 2. 9. Shall we infer there was then no to the ne-necessity that he should die? It is safest to say the only wise God cessicle of decreed that sin should be. 2. That the glory of his Justice should appear in taking away sin, not in our way, but in the way of God, to wit, in a way of justice, of mercy, of free grace, in incomparable love, of mighty power; and in all these so acts the Lord as he should not leave off to be the Lord, but acts most freely, though he had not taken that course. But far be it from the godly not to adore him in this, as the admirable way beyond the thoughts of men and Angels.

It were safest to draw holy practises by way of use from this. In all pactions between the Lord and man, even in a Law-Covenant there is some out-breakings of Grace. Its true, there was no Gospel-Grace, that is a fruit of Christs merite in this Covenant. But yet if grace be taken for undeserved goodness: There are on these respects of grace.

1. That God might have given to Adam something inferiour to the glorious Image of God, that consists in true righteonsnesse, knowledge of God, and holinesse, Gen 1.26. Eph. 4.24. Col. 3.10. It was a rich enough stock, this holy Image to be so badly guided. And who looks spiritually to their receipts? Its either too much of grace and holinesse that another hath, and too little that I have, so arises virtuall sighing and grudging at the dispensation. Or 2. a swelling that it is so much, as if it were not receiving. I am holier then thou, Isa. 65. i. a miskenning of him that makes me to differ, 1 Cor. 4.7. A blecking of others, Luk. 18. 11. A secret quarrelling at God as too strick and hard in his reckoning, Mat. 25.24. And what pride is this, because I am a mere patient under gifted holinesse, to usurpe it as mine own? As if a horse should kick and fling, because he wears a borrowed saddle of silk for a day.

2. Being and dominion over the creatures is of undeserved goodnesse. Who looks to a borrowed body and a borrowed soul, yea and self are and to self, and to that which is called I, as to a thing that is free-undeservedly gifted? So that though thou be in an high opinion of self, self favours.

is self, and what it is, from God. And when thou rides, whence is it that I am the rider, and the wearied horse the carrier, but from God? 3. The Covenant of Works it self, that God out of Sovereignty does not command, is undeserved condescending; that God bargains for hire, do this and live, whereas he may bide a Sovereign Law-giver and charge and command us, is overcoming goodness. Law is honeyed with love, and hire; it is mercy that for our penny of obedience, so rich a wadge as communion with God that God is given. 4. The influences to acts of obedience, come under a rewards twofold consideration. 1. As congruous and suitable concurrences of God to Adams acts of obedience: And so they were free gifts to Adam not promised, as we shall hear in the New Covenant.

2. As such influences by which the standing Elect Angels (who were

Humble thoughts of free-Grace should take us up. PART. I.

An admi- were under this Covenant as well as Adam) were differenced from rable sove- the Angels that fell, and were confirmed that they should not reigny in fall, in this latter respect. Absolute Sovereignty shines in Adams the stand- fall, so if a Sparrow cannot stir its wing without God, Mat. 10. 29. ing of An. gels and in nor a hair fall from our head, ver. 30. far lesse could Adam fall, the fall of and all his, without a singular providence; And farre lesse could man.

Adam go on and act without influences from God. And if strong

Gifts and habits of saving grace can not keep creatures on foot. Adam and upright, created in holinesse, could not then stand his alone; Shall our clay legs now under the fall bear us up? What Godly trembling is required in us? 5. The gift of Prophesie, Gen. 2. 23, seems to be freely given, besides the Image of God, and Adams knowledge, Gen. 1. 19. of every living creature, according to their nature may be proven, but it appears to be naturall, and he is a lamentable example to us of abusing the Image of God, and good gifts; But no habite without the continued actings of God can keep us in a course of obedience: There is no ground to make habits of grace our confidence. 3. There can be no giving and taking between the creature and the Creator. Elihu pleads well for him, Job 35. 7. If thou be righteous what gives thou to him? Or what receiveth he of thy hand, v. 1. Thy wickednesse may hurt a man, as thou art, and thy righteousness may profite the Son of man. Job 22. 2. Can a man be profitable unto God, as he that is

The hum- bling thoughts that God needs not men, nor their ser- vice, nor any crea- ture, shuld take us up. wise may be profitable to himself? Is it pleasure to the Almighty that thou art righteous? Or is it a gain to him that thou makst thy wayes perfect? So Eliphaz. And David, Psal. 16. 2. My goodness extendeth not to thee. Acts 17. 25: Neither is the Lord worshipped with mens hands, nor with their spirits: as if he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life & breath and all things. What then is the glory of the creatures obedience to him? It is some shining of the excellency of God upon men and Angels, from the works of God, and our obedience to him. But suppose there were no creature to pay the rent of this glory to him, is the Lord a loser therefore? Hath he need of our songs of glory? Or that creatures should be Heralds of his praise? Or needs he the workmanship or structure of Heaven, Sun and Moon to be a Printed Book to spell and sound his glory? If he need not the Book (as he needeth nothing created. Who sayeth I am the Lord Al-sufficient)

PART. I. Nothing can be given to God All-sufficient.

ficient) he needs not one letter, nor any sense of the Contents of the Chapters of that Book. There is a secret carnall notion of God in us, when we act and suffer for God, that brings a false peace, Secret in us and some calmes of mind, we have pleased him once, and beside that peace, a scumme and a froath smoakes up unsensible in the heart, we are profitable to God, it would be the worse with him, if he wanted our prayers and service: but had the Lord any missing of Heaven and of Angels and Men, in these infinite and innumerable ages of duration, that went before any created being? When he was upon these infinite and self-delighting thoughts, solacing himself in that infinite substantial fairenesse and love his Son Christ, Prov. 8. 89. 30. (2.) You can give nothing to God Creator of No crea- all, but it must be either an uncreated God-head, but he who ture can perfectly possesseth himself, will not thank you for that, or your give to God gift most be a created thing: But how wide is his universall dominion? can you give to one that, of which he was absolute Lord before? all the Roses are his, all the Vineyards, all the Mountains, he is the owner of the South and the North, of the East and the West, and infinite millions of possible Worlds, beyond what Angels and all Angels can number, for eternitie of ages, are in the bosome of his vaste Omnipotencie; He can create them if hee will.

And what ye give to another, it was out of his dominion, but all things are in his dominion, for who spoiled him of what he had? David blessed the Lord, when the people gave for the Temple, excusing himself and the people, that they took on them to give to the great Lord-giver: 1 Chro. 29. 11. Thine, O Lord, is the Reason: greatness, and the power and the glorie, and the victorie, and the why none can give majestie, for all that is in the heaven and in the earth is thine, to GOD thine is the Kingdome, O Lord, and thou art exalted as head above all. vers. 12. Both riches and honour come of thee, and thou excellent reignest, and in thy hand it is to make great, and to give strength passage of unto all. 14. But who am I, and what is my people, that we should be able, so willingly, to offer after this sort? for all things come of thee, and of thine own have we given thee. Hence, none can give to Gd. 1. Because he is JEHOVAH the Eternall God, then he gives all and nothing can be given to him. 2. Because of the greatnessse

Nothing can be given

PART. I.

nelle and infinitenesse of God. Giving is an adding to him, to whom we give. But nothing can be added to him, *for thine is the greatness, the power, and the majestic.* 3. Nothing can be given to him who is universall and full Lord and Possessour of heaven and earth, and all things therein, *for all that is in the heaven &c. are thine.* 4. Nothing can be given to him, who is so Lord, that he is exalted as Head, Prince and King, above all created Kings, and their dominions over their own. 5. But all the goods of the Subjects are the Princes, or the Commonwealths. The Jurists distinguish as the Schoolman Theod. Smising, Tom. I. de Deo, tra-

What do. Etat. 3. disp. 4. q. 5. fig. 65. a two-fold *jus*, *jus altum* & *jus minium* the *bassum*: The Prince and Commonwealth, have a sort of eminent right to the goods of the Subjects, to dispose of them for the publick good, as they may demolish a castle belonging to a private man in the frontiers of the enemies land, because it hurts the country, and may be better made use of by enemies against them for the country; And they may compell him to sell it, but this hinders not, but every Subject hath a dominion and right to his own goods, to use them at his pleasure, which the Prince cannot do. *Ahab* the King hath no right nor dominion over the vineyard of *Naboth* to compell him to sell it or give it against his will to his Prince; For the earthly Prince, nay the man himself, the just Proprietor before men cannot bear that, so as it may be said of God, vers. 12. *both riches and honour come of thee, and thou reignest over all:* For God created the being of gold and of every thing, that we can give to God, which no earthly Prince can do.

6. Nothing can be given to him, *in whose hand is power and might*, and to make great and to give strength: For 1. Riches and things we give are of him. 2. Power, might and strength to give, either Physicall, to bear a burden to his house: Or, 3. Morall, a willing mind and heart to give is *in his hand*: Or, 4. A mixt power, the being of the act of giving is his. v. 7. *Of thine own we give thee.* Can we give to any that which is his own already? Can ye give to a Crowned King over such a Kingdome his own Crown? Can ye give to the righteous owner of his own lands, his own Garden, and his own vineyard, in gift? but every being created is the Lords.

8. Saith

to God All-sufficient.

PART. I.

8. Saith David, v. 15. *We are strangers before thee, and sojourners as all our fathers were:* And that faith, the Lord is the only Heritor, and we but Tennents at will, and strangers both fathers and sons, though for five hundred or a thousand years fathers and sons have lineaely and in heritage before men possessed such lands: yet before thee (saith he) we and our fathers have but Tennent-right, and are strangers from thee. And what can a meer stranger to life and being give to the just Heritor and Lord of life and being?

9. And our dayes (saith David) on the earth are as a shadow, and there is none abiding life, and being is a shadow of being, and God is the only fir't excellent being: and suppose we should give life and being to and for him, it is but a borrowed shadow that we give him; And we are not lords of our own being, we have not absolute right over our selves to give our selves to him. If *Dogg* will not give himself to God, and act for God, *Psal. 51. 2. God shall take thee away and pluck thee out of thy dwelling place, and root thee out of the land of the living.* Job 27. 21. *the east wind of God carrieth him away, and as a storm hurleth him out of his place,* plucked Ye shall below life and being worse then upon God. *God shall make morter of thee, O fool!* who makes a god of borrowed ^{place.} I, great I and poor *Nothing-self*: Nay if there be a Pronoun in thee O let it be this: *Oh if my separation from Christ and the blotting of my name out of the Book of Life, and my heaven might be a footstool to heighten the glory, the high glory of the Lord in the salvation of many.* 2. This Pronoun *self and mine* is a proud usurper ^{3.} The unity against God. Was he not an Atheist or a churle, and his name *folly*, of such as who said, *1 Sam. 25. 11.* and breathed out so many *my's*? Shall boast of the *I take my bread and my waters, and my flesh which I killed for my nouns, my shearers, and give it to men whom I know not whence they be?* and selfs. And he was as madde a fool who thus speaks, *Isa. 10. 13.* By the strength of my hand have I done it, and by my wisdom, for I am prudent: & I removed the bounds of the people—14. And my hand hath found as a nest the riches of the people, and as one gathereth eggs that are left, so have I gathered all the earth, and there was none that moved the wing, or opened the mouth, or peeped. This is the fool-axe boasting against him that heweth with it. And another fool said: *Make an agreement with me by a present, and come*

The folly of boasting in self and mine. PART. I.

come out to me, Isa. 36. 16. And this mad-nothing is above God, chap. 37. 10. Let not thy God in whom thou trustest deceive thee. The Tyrant of Egypt, the great Dragon that lyeth in the midst of the river said, My river is mine own, and I have made it for my self, Ezek. 29. 3. God made the Sea and all the Rivers. There be three Pronouns in the mouth of another proud Monarch, Dan. 4. 30. And the King shake and said, Is not this great Babylon that I have built for the house of the Kingdom, by the might of my power and the honour of my Majesty? So soon as there falls from the great Lord of being a chip or shadow of created being, especially where being is rational and under a Law, there follows and

Created sinlesse self refutes (the Lord withdrawing) a proud supposed I and a vain conceit of self, and a dream of God-head comes in with borrowed is to be de- being; And therefore created sinlesse self is to be denied. Adam nyed. denied not himself and thought in his sick imagination he should be like God knowing good and evill, Gen. 3. Christ the more excellent Adam pleated not thit noble self, Rom. 15. 3. Καὶ γὰρ ἔχεις δύναμις εὐλογῆσαι. He denied himself as man, as a gracious merciful man, to be God or more then a man. And this self denial is in effect Angels, who blush and are sinlessly ashamed of self, and cover their faces with wings before shining infinitesse of Glory, and proclaim him thrice Holy, holy, holy, Isa. 6. 2, 3. And who knowes not we owne grace as our own? my prayers my faith, my holiness, my tears, as if grace had a relish from self, not from God: but Paul, 1Cor. 15. 10. Not I, but the grace of God (not my grace in me) that was with me, διότι ἀπὸ αὐτοῦ ἦστε τὰ θεῖα καὶ εἰσοι.

4. But is there no passion between GOD and the creature?

Surely we must say that the covenant between God and Adam is of another nature, yea and promises also. then these that are be-

The Covenant between God and man is of a far other nature, then the Covenant between man and man. between man and man; for there is proper giving and taking betwixt the creature. 2. The proper covenants between man and man require that both parties be free and independent one of another, there may interveen a *jus*, a right and a debt upon the promisor to him to whom the promise is made. *Omne promissum ex ore fideli cadit in debitum.* Jurists say there is no proper binding Covenants between the father and the son, the lord and the servant; for the son and the servant are not lords of themselves nor *sui juris.*

The

PART. I. Nothing can be given Covenant-wayes to God al-sufficient. 4.

The father by no passion can remove the foundation of the debt of nature that the son owe to the father: for impossible it is, but if such a man be son to such a man, but he owe to his father as to an instrument, *quod sit & vivat*, being and living, and the son can not satisfie by paying the father for that summe, and the father can not cancell the band nor give him an acquittance. Far lesse can any recompence the Lord for life and being. The fallen Angels and damned in hell and all wicked men are in the Lords Compt-book everlasting debtors to him for being. But God who is more then a Father (to whom men are but painted fathers) may thus farre loose the bond, as he may command the son to sacrifice the father, as well as once he commanded the father Abraham to offer up his son to God. But God cannot resigne his right that he hath over the creature to a creature, because he cannot leave off to be Creator, and so cannot lay aside or make over Creator-right, *jus Creatoris*, to any. 2. Say that a creature had a *jus* or right over the Creator, God can it is either an uncreated right or a created right, so to pursue God not quite by Law, as to cause him do him Justice; it cannot be an uncreated or part with Creator-right; for that were near to blasphemie: For no created head can bear the royll Crown of the King of Ages. If it be a created universall right, this created right must be under the dominion of him who dominion over all things that is universall Lord of all: then may the Lord make use of it at his pleasure; then may not the man make use of it at his pleasure: for may be given to an absolute dominion of one and the same thing cannot be in the ven, and hands of two absolute Lords, who may have contradictory desires therefore concerning the same thing: such as the holy Lord and sinfull men nothing can often are. Let us correct the bold pleadings and the daring char-

ges that our vain hearts put upon the Lord: *Why dost thou strive against him* (saith Elihu, Job 33. 13.) *for he gives not account of any of his matters?* Men dare say, when they are under the vengeance of ordinary sufferings, *The wayes of the Lord are not equal*, Ezek. 33. 10. *If our transgressions and our sins be upon us, and we pine away in them, how shall we then live?* But upon whom We are not should sins and transgressions and the punishment thereof be, if to strive not upon the carcases of the Authors? Will ye raise letters to sum- with the mond him? Where is the judge? Where is the Tribunall? But gracious he promised so and so; But this is not the Question of strict justice: Lord. F that

42 There is no strict justice between the Creator & the creature. P. I.
that saith something against the veracity and faithfulness of God,
but nothing against the justice. But neither doth a promise as a
promise raise a plea of injustice against the holy and glorious Lord,
suppose he should not fulfill his promise. For 1. A paction by pro-
mise creates no equality of justice between thing and thing, between
wage and work: otherwise he that is called to the Vineyard, and
labours from the third hour, hath a just plea: for he should have
more wages than a penny, which he gets who labours but one

The Co-
venant, but
not the
proportion
bewixt
works and
the Lords
rule in re-
queroulus nature. 1. Naturally we argue from much working,
warding and would conclude God, much running, long sweating, and pains
our labour, in keeping the Covenant of Works should binde God, except he
nor should be unjust, to give me as many ounces and pound weights of Glory
we be gai-
ners, if the everlasting, as I have fasted moments, and told over prayers upon
Lord shuld beads, and uttered sighs: Wherefore have we fasted and thou seest
so deal not? We work and keep the Covenant of Works, but God payes
us not our wage. Though it be a doubt to me, if the Covenant
of Works had stooden, and Adam and all his had fulfilled it per-
fetly; if the Lord shuld weigh in an even ballance, by ounce
weights, our poor labour, and great reward of Glory, for had he
entered such a market, the losse had been ours; we could not have
obtained life eternall that way, for our stock of time-working

There is a
commuta-
tive and
distribu-
tive justice,
between
God & us, not in God, as the soundest and learnedst School-men teach,
the former There is another justice of proportion *duarum rerum ad duas ali-*
bath no *as res*, of two things proportionally answering to two things, di-
place in stributive justice is this, and it keeps a Geometricall propor-
the abso-
lute Lord. on, *Angustine with Scripture* faith, God is become our debtor

P. I. God becomes not our debtor by strict justice, but by promise. 43
not by receiving any thing from us, but by promising what he Augst.
pleaseth. serm. 16. de verb. Apo-
stol. debitor nobis factus est Deum,

2. It followes from the Parable, that Gods bargaining with us
depends not upon the equality between thing and thing, the work
and the wage; But upon his own free pleasure of disposing of his
own: And it is the froathinesse of our nature to judge the penny of non aliquid
Glory, that we get by labouring to be our own, whereas after the accipiendo,
promise, and after we have fulfilled the condition, it is not ours, sed quod ei
but Gods, and he calls it his own, and it is to be disposed on by the placuit pro-
mitendo. Lords free-grace. Friend, may not I do with mine own, what I
please? Mat. 20. 15. 2. No promise as a promise can give us a Glory is
proper right, by way of strict justice, to plead with God. 1. A not our
promise of grace is a free promise, and no man can say, because we have
God promises the new heart to most undeserving men, that are of a wrought
flony heart, and doe profane his holy name amongst the Gentiles, for it.
that therefore it is just by condignitie of the thing, that a new A promise
heart should be given to them, that are foolish, disobedient, and as a pro-
serving diverse lusts. The farrest that hard faced Jesuits go in wife can
this, is to tell us of the poor penny of the merit of congruity, for give us no
the right weight of the summe and thousands of saving grace which right of
Papists have refused as ashamed thereof. strict jus-
tice to any

3. If a promise as a promise should make an equalitie between reward.
one thing and another, and so lay a band of strict commutative ju-
stice upon God, then should every promise do the like, *quod con-
venit et quod non convenit ratione*, but that cannot be said: For then
if God should promise glory of ten thousand millions of degrees a-
bove the glory that Angels and men now injoy, for speaking one
good word, that should be a free promise, but that promise
should not make an equality between so hudge and rich a reward of
glory, and so hungry and poor a work as the speaking of a good
word, so as God should fail of justice, if he should deny a reward
so great, for so small a work: For the denying thereof should be
against the veracitie and faithfulness of God, if he should not ful-
fill his promise, but he should not fail against strict justice either in
not rewarding the work with a condigne reward, or in not giving
to the man that spake the good word his own. For there is no
just equality between work and wage here. Nor can ever so feckless
a work,

PART. I.

God is under no band of commutative a work, or all the works of men and Angels, make the glory of life everlasting our own. For glory remains ever the proper gift of God, and under his dominion.

4. A promise is, by order of time or nature, latter and posterior to the good thing promised, as words of truth are latter to things, and things have the same valor and worth, before and after the promise, yea if one promise to give for a plot of ground, a summe of money of value, five hundred times above the worth of that plot of ground, that promise can not make the unequall and unjust price to be a just and equall price. Even so the promise of God to give eternall life to the obedience of Adam can make no equality of strict justice between the reward and the wage; For the reward promised for the wages is equall and just before the promise, and *ex naturâ rei*; and so mult lay bands on the Lord, so as he cannot do contrait unto it, which is against all reason.

None gave first to the Lord, and it shall be recompensed to first to the him, and he that gave first to him, man or Angel, must give his Lord, men own (or then it is no giving) which he received not from God, or Angels, either created being, or gift, or work (for any uncreated gift none can give to him) as is said. 2. What is given is amongst the all things that are of him, as the efficient, and to him, as the last end, and through him, as the conserver of all, and so can be no gift to him, Rom 11.36.

And what God of free goodness, decrees to do, that he may decree not to do; and things falling under his decree, are not necessary, he cannot decree that man should be a reasonable creature, for it involves a contradiction to be a man, and not to be a reasonable creature. But no shadow of contradiction there is for the Lord to forbid to eat; and to forbid to eat under a punishment:

And the not created world (it being from eternity nothing and a God was non ens) could not have any *jus* or right to plead that God would no debtor stand to what he decreed, and give being and create a world, for if no Justice the Lord should not give being to it, and create what he had decreed from eternity to create, he should fail against his own unchangeable Nature, but should do no injustice to an uncreated world, except we say God should be unjust, if he had not created the world: For being of justice is due to the world, and God refuses

PART. I.*justice to the creature.*

fuses to pay the debt of being to the uncreated world, which is Non entis non-sense. And upon the same ground, if he should annihilat the *worlda sunt accidentia.* world or take away life from living things, he should be unjust; It is safer therefore to say that God oweth the creature nothing, but we are his debtors, for service and praises, while we have any being.

4. Use. If God, of his free will, so placed Adam to reward his obedience: We think hard to serve God for wages, and to be placed in a condition of obedience. Eve, and we with her, sucking the same milk, thirst after such lawlesse Independency to be ^{to obey &} serve God, from (Gen. 3.5.6.) under God; Whereas Adam and Angel-courtiers who hath that have wings to obey, and the Noble and High Heir who so noble learned obedience through the things he suffred were in this condition, and Christ a King in the shape of a Servant was obedient to death, to the death of the Crosse, Phil. 2. Hence, to weary of submitting to God, speaks much unnatural pride, yea will not be under God. 2. There is little of Christ in such, for it was life to Christ and meat and drink, Psal. 40.8. Heb. 10.8. John 4. 34. Act. 10.38. to obey, and it is the Angels life, Isa. 6.2,3. Psal. 103.20. Rev. 4. 8. and they are neer him, who both at once serve and Raigne, Rev. 22.3,5. much delight to obey, speak much of God in the heart. Tyre not of your Master; examine more, untowardness to pray, to confer, to give, &c. if it be not a cause of deadnesse to creatures and liselesse shal depon.

5. Use. If creatures keep their Covenant-naturall with God, shall not the oxe, the cran, Isa. 1.3. Jer. 8.7. the asse, 2 Pet. 2. 16. who never had a design of rebellion, depon against us in Judgment? Ah! what an unnaturall policie, the first evill wit of him that sinned from the beginning, John 8.44. and whom we follow at the heels, it is to please our own wit, in Covenant breaking. Such as are sick of love for their own wylie time-serving custome; If all Our soft naturall men in their death bed damne not this folly, aske them and they shall speak.

6. Use. If God Covenant with us for hyre, when his absolute-poor re- nesse may bear him to command, how sinfully soft are our spirits, wards, and weak is reason, that is broken with a straw, when an apple toolittle conquers Evals eye and heart? Talents of Silver, and a wedge of moved Gold things.

*It is a Kings life to serve God.***PART. I.**

Gold Achaz, and Gehazi; A drink of water, if not at hand, in time of thirst, make the people murmur against *God*; the more sanctified, defecat and spirituall reason be, the farther it is above that which crusheth *Balaam* and *Judas*; The first heavens motion, the *primum mobile*, which draws all the rest, must be the most excellent, and the moving power must be most spirituall; its neither heaviness which is in stones or clay, nor lightnesse in the aire and fire, but a more heavenly force, which throwes about that body, so the motions of sanctified reason which is swayed and driven by no Argument, but from eternity, communion with *God*, a Kingdom above time, must be most spirituall. The dogge is moved with a bone, the oxe with hay.

7. If no law and poor obedience of ours can buy a communion with *God*, let us examine the peace that flowes from obedience; Its purer and more solid peace, that flowes from Justification, and more immediately removes the warre between *God* and us, *Rom. 5.1.* and comes by a purer and nearer emanation from *God* and from the ransome of Redemption that is in Christ, then that which flowes from created acts of inherent holinesse. (2.) Our first Adams Element is Justification by works, in which we love to live and die. The Law is an home-born Idol in us: Our apprehensions of our own actings are lively and vigorous, the 3000. *Aets 2.37. Saul, Aets 9.6.* and the Jayler, *Aets 16.30. ask what we shall doe?* *et cetera.* But it is not the law word of working, *Rom. 4.2,4,5,6. Rom. 3.20,28.* Its much to be dead to the Law, and to Law-righteousnesse: *Gal. 2.19,20. I live not, but Christ lives in me.* Christ (2.) is a stranger to us, and comes from without, gifted righteousness comes from heaven. Grace only makes us willing debtors to grace. The pride of self, will neither begge nor borrow from, nor be debtor to a Crucified Saviour, when it despiseth him untill the roof of the house fall. 3. Seldome do these two concurre,

Seldome deadnesse to works of grace, and lively activity in the doing of them. Paul attained to both (but every man is not Paul) *1 Cor. 15.9,10.* to works, *I laboured more abundantly then they all.* But fearing and trem-activity In bling at at that (I) *et cetera*, he strikes sail to Christ, yet not I, but the works is *grace of God in me.* This pride Paul notes in the Jewes, they once stouped not, nor bowed (as inferiours to their Master, King, or Lord,

PART. I. *It is a Kings life to serve God.*

•Lord, or Father and Husband, so the word) to the righteousness *Rom. 10.3.* of *God*. When (I) (self) or nature meets with working, yea *in sinato-* with grace often, there followes some loftinesse, except it be *adversitate* humbled and mortified (I) which can weep and say. *Lord what am I?* *in tristitia.*

C H A P. VIII.

What place death hath in the Covenant. 2. What such as Cain and Judas are to do in their desperate state.

3. *And why the L ORD is nowhere called the G OD of Adam.*

Q. **W**HAT room hath death in the Covenant?

A. Death hath room in the broken Covenant of Works, as the Pursevant and Sergeant of revenging justice. Hence deaths reign, [*I must die whether I will or not*] Unwillingnesse to die and bondage through fear of death is the Law-sting in death, from which Christ hath delivered us, *Heb. 2.15.* Original sin and death came and entred the world by the Covenant of Works. The Covenant of Grace made not death, but found it in the world, Christ made of an old enemy death a new servant: its now the Kings ferry-boat to carry the children over the water. Its a suitable condition to a spirituall state to die being sent for, not legally summon'd, and to die, because I desire to be dissolved, *Ph. 1.23.* not because I must. And better it is to summon our selves then to be summoned. Thongh we love heaven too much as a place of pleasure, rather then a place of holinesse, yet most men would wish a better causey to it then to sleep through the cold grave or a dark hole in the earth.

Q. *What room hath life in the Covenant? Ans.* The Administration of the Law-Covenant is first habituall holinesse of works, and then a crown. The Administration of grace is first faith and a title to Christ our life and *hope of glory*, and then habituall holinesse, begun here and perfected hereafter. The Gospel-life is both a reward and a duty of praising and loving eternally in place of all the ten Commands, yea of Law and Gospel. The Law-life (for

The room
of death in
the two
Covenants.

The change
that Christ
hath made
in death.

What a soul is to do, that's neer despaire. PART. I.
(for ought that is revealed) is a reward to be purchased by our le-
gall obedience.

Q. If Adam in the intervall betwixt his fall and the publi-
shing of the blessed Seed, was not to despaire, but to rely upon God
as mighty to save; What should such as Judas or Cain do?

What fu-
das & Ca-
in in their
despairing
mood, are
to do.

A. The conscience of Cain and of despairers, being no authen-
tict Bible nor Judge, which can carry the controversie between
them and God, so long as they are in the way, or are viators, the
Gospel treaty betwixt them and Christ yet standing and not broken
off upon the part of Christ, they are to cherrish and hold up the
Treaty, and (as it were) to force speech out of Christ, and to
pursue the news of an offered salvation. 2. There is no Spirit of
God that suggests to them despaire, and bids them write them-
selves in the black roll of Reprobates, for though they beleefe hell,
as the Devils haply beleeve there is a God, yet they blow the coals
of that hellish furnace, and kindle a fire before night. 3. They
being under the Law of Nature, are to rely on infinite mercy able
to save. Their witty darknesse of unbeleef faith they beleeve, but
they hate mercy in the generall toward others, as to themselves.

What weak
doubters
are to do.

When faith
acts most
strongly.

VVilful-
ness in un-
beliefe.

and so re-
sistance must
be made to
that blind impul-
sion of will in
un-
beliefe, by which we please our selves in doubling our doubting.

A. The conscience of Cain and of despairers, being no authen-
tict Bible nor Judge, which can carry the controversie between
them and God, so long as they are in the way, or are viators, the
Gospel treaty betwixt them and Christ yet standing and not broken
off upon the part of Christ, they are to cherrish and hold up the
Treaty, and (as it were) to force speech out of Christ, and to
pursue the news of an offered salvation. 2. There is no Spirit of
God that suggests to them despaire, and bids them write them-
selves in the black roll of Reprobates, for though they belieue hell,
as the Devils haply belieue there is a God, yet they blow the coals
of that hellish furnace, and kindle a fire before night. 3. They
being under the Law of Nature, are to rely on infinite mercy able
to save. Their witty darknesse of unbeleef faith they belieeve, but
they hate mercy in the generall toward others, as to themselves.

(3.) Should

PART. I. And the believer in darknesse. 49

(3.) Should the commanding of killing the Son, Gen. 22. 2. seem
to contradict the whole Gospel of the promised Seed, Gen. 15. 4.
yet knowing both to come from God, Abraham did well to leave VVeareto
the supposed contradiction to be solved by God, and believe both
as we are to beleeve food, in no food, and in famine.

Q. Where was there a word that God was Adams God? Ans. traditions
Not directly. For 1. that Covenant was like Letters of the Kng to God in
raised to such a day, and the date being expired, the Letters cease time of
to be in force. 2. Adam was to winne and purchase (as it were) darknesse.
God to be his God, by consummate obedience. God never said that
he would be Adams God by giving him influences to obey, and to VVhy it is
obey to the end, all influences granted to Adam, to will and to do, not said,
were granted to him. 1. By God Creator, not by the grace of a that God
Redeemer, as in the Covenant of Grace, to walk, Ezek. 36. 27. God of A.
to love, Deut. 30. 6. to persevere, Jer. 32. 39. 40. 2. Thele influ-
ences were free gifts, but not promised. 3. They seem to be ordi-
nis naturalis, naturall, though they did bow and previously in-
cline the will, but not so in the New Testament, for the whole
Covenart is called by the promise of the giving of a new heart, Heb.
8.10. If. 54. 9. 13. Jer. 31. 32, 33. Ezek. 11. 19, 20. Hos. 2.
18, 19. And therefore better it is that God be Lord of my heart, Better our
and it be his, then that I be lord of it, and my heart be mine own hearts be
heart, the lesse of our heart be upon our heart, the more upon the Lords
God, the better. Ah! we cannot skill to guide a heart. 3. The then our
threatning of death to Adam, if he should sin, Gen. 2. 17. may own.
infer a Covenant of life, and that God should be Adams God, if
he should obey,

CHAP. IX.

What life is promised in the Covenant of Works. 2. Whe-
ther all we, especially the Reprobate, by the fall, lost all
right to the creatures. 3. How the Lord is our God.

Q. What is meant by life promised in the Covenant of VVhat a
Works! A. 1. Not a life in Christ and the fruit life was
of the merit of blood, as our life is in the New Covenant, Job. 10. 11. promised
Job. 3. 16. to Adam.

G

*Whether, by the fall,**PART. I.*

Job. 3.16. For Adam was not Mediator of reconciliation here, he was a sort of publick Law-head in whom he was to stand or fall, if any please to call him so a Mediator *as ad i* but it is a Law-life happily a communion in glory. 2. But the life he lived, and the creatures for his service seems not to belong to this life, for the creatures were given to *Adam*, he not working for them. Yet I should not oppose, if any say that earthly blessings were given to *Adam*, as a reward of an actuall obedience, as they are given to such as keep the Law, *Deut. 28*. But sure our gain in Christ of such a life, bought by so noble a Ransome as the Blood of God-man, is not little. Its rawnesse and greennesse of wit, to value it so low as we do. Children see not what a hireing and taking apple Heaven is.

Q. Whether or no did Adam and all the Reprobates in his loynes, of our right to the creatures, by sin, losse right to the creatures?

A. There is a three-fold right.

1. *Naturall.*
2. *Providentiall.*
3. *Spirituall.*

A three-fold right, *ly*, so creature, and man not created, can have no *jus* or claime to naturall, being or life, the *Creators* free gift is our best Charter to life and being. 2. This right may be conceived, conditionally, as if God create the Sun, a power to give light is congruous, and debita naturall; spirituall; & quall. *Solis* suteable to the nature of the Sun, nor can the creature

There is no law to being can not be sin, because there is no law and command to have being thing to receive or not to receive being and life from the Creator: and living. *And where there is no Law, there is no transgression.* And therefore to have being and life cannot be in it self a sin.

2. Providential right is but a continuating of life and being, until the same power that gave it, shall remove it, by way of punishment; For God as *Creator*, of his Sovereignty, gives being and life, and the comfortable use of the creatures; but as a Judge ordinarily for sin he removes it, though he, I deny not, out of his Sovereignty, may, and possibly doth, annihilate the meat that the Angels

*PART. I.**we lost right to the creatures.*

Angels in assumed bodies, and which the Man Christ, after the Resurrection, did eat.

3. The spirituall right is that new supernaturall Title, which the Elect beleevers have, in order to a supernaturall end, and all these being made theirs, to promote their salvation, *1 Cor. 3. 21.* *All things are yours. Rev. 21.7. He that overcometh shall inherit spirituall all things*, by Covenant-right, for he adds, *And I will be his right is, & God, and he shall be my Son, Psal. 37.10.* A drinck of cold water, how excellent. by this Charter, is better then a Kings Crown, and hath refreshed some more then all the choise wine the earth yeelds. The love of the Giver is better then wine, *Cant. 1. 2.* and here the Charter is, by many thousands, more precious then the Land. For nature common to all is over-gilded with free-Grace. And the naturall life and being, and the materiall heavens we shall injoy, are blessed in another manner to the glorified, then these they now injoy, *1 Cor. 15.40, 41, 42, 43, &c. 2 Pet. 3. 13. Rev. 21.1. Isa. 65. 17.* and they shall be above the heavens that are, when the mysticall body shall be perfected, yea, and the dust into which the bodies of the Saints are resolved, keeps a spirituall Covenant relation to God in Christ: As *Exod. 3.6. Mat. 22.32. Joh. 6.39. Rom. 8.21, 22, 23.* for no joint or part of the body, but it must share of Covenant glory. We look little to any thing but to have and injoy the dead lump and body of Gold, dead lands without Christ. See *Hos. 2. 18. 22. Ezek. 34.25. 27. Ezek. 36.29. Lev. 26.6. Psal. 37.9, 11, 29. 1 Tim. 4.8. Heb. 13.5, 6. Math. 6.25, 26. Psal. 34. 10.* O fair inheritance. 4. As to the second (which is the main controversie) to injoy life and being, is the substance of the act, no sin. Men contraveen a Law to be so and so born, to wit, in sin, for its forbidden by a Law: But to be born and live, is no sin, but by To live & order of nature, before Original sin. Nor is it forbidden more to injoy to man to be born and live, then its forbidden to beasts, nor to eat, sleep, wake, then to them: So neither is it commanded by a Law to die, but it is commanded and commended to die well, to fall asleep in Christ, *1 Thes. 4.14. 16. to be faithfull to the death, Acts 7.60. Rev. 2.10. Rev. 14.13.* (2.) The Elect who are *born heirs of wrath, as others, Eph. 2.3.* And all the Reprobate should kill themselves, or be killed, from the birth, if to live and eat were sin, in it self

*Whether, by the fall,***PART. I.**

in it self. But only the Lord of life and death, and his Minister, the Magistrate hath power to take away life and being, no man can be his own burro. But if it were sin in it self to live, they ought to expire and restore an usurped life, which they possesse, *mala fide*, to the owner the Lord, as a theef is obliged to restore stolen goods (3) The dominion of Reprobates over the creatures, is a part of the good Image of God, Gen. 1.26, 27. and they breath, live, ride, sail, and are no more then the Elect to lay these aside, then they are to lay aside the naturall knowledge of God, by which they are to glorifie God as God, Rom. 1.19, 20, 21. Rom. 2. 14, 15. Act. 14. 16, 17. Now the Reprobates have not utterly lost the Image of God, as to know there is a God, to honour their parents, to hurt no man.

4. This opinion looks the rather like a fancie, that it is a temptation in weak ones, under a sad desertion, Sathan riding upon their Melancholie (a complexion not sanctified, usefull to Sathan, and if ^{Their tem-} sanctified, a seat of mortification and humble walking) for they ^{pration,} who think judge it sin to eat, and drink, and sleep, they having no right there- they should unto, but so they have no right to live, and are obliged to kill not eat, nor themselves, and upon the same ground, it was sin to Adam to pray.

5. speak, to answer God, to breath, to hear the news of the blessed seed, which all are acts of life, and so acts of sin, and upon the same ground, that they cannot perform these without sin, they should not pray, for in praying, they cannot but *take the Name of God in vain*. For we are not to abstaine from a duty, because of the sinfulness, which adheres to the duty, by reason of our corruption, for in Christ the sinfulness is pardoned, and the duty accepted.

6. It necessarily must follow, if it be sin to eat, because the non-converted have no right spirituall in Christ, to bread, the converted may spoil by their grounds, all the non-converted, of their converted, goods, houses, gold, gardens, vineyards, lands, and upon the have no right to a same ground, for the crime of non-regeneration, they must also ny thing, deprive them of their lives, and kill them; For they have then we alike right, that is, no right (these men being Judges) to either may spoil life or goods. And so, *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self, & deprive* must be meant of the converted neighbour: but with fire and sword life and all other neighbours may be killed and spoiled, and so there should they have,

PART. I. *we lost right to the creatures.*

no stealing, no oppressing, no crushing of the widow, the stranger, the fatherlesse, the weaker; not grind the faces of the poor, though their Redeemer be strong, contrair to the Scripture, Prov. 23.11. Jer. 50.33, 34. Psal. 94.5, 6, 7, 8. Psal. 14.4. Exo. 22.26, 27. Isa. 3.12, 13, 14, 15. Mic. 2.3. and so it were lawfull to take Crowns, Kingdomes, inheritances, lands, dignitie, and honour, from all the unregenerate Princes, powers, and rulers on earth, to cut off with the sword all the heathen Nations who as yet know not Christ, and it were lawfull for the regenerate sons and brethren to kill and spoil Father, Mother, Brethren, Sisters, Kings, Potentates, Countrey-men, strangers, Orphans, exiled, captives, prisoners, sick, weak, imprisoned, all infants that are by nature the heirs of wrath, upon this ground, *the converted ones judge all non-converts to be void of all due right to life, or goods*, and so in these men, the societies, Churches of Christ must cease.

Obj. These who injoy that of which they deserve to be deprived, have no due right to that of which they deserve to be deprived; but are usurpers, and so sin. But all the non-regenerated are such, or, *they who use that to which they have no right*, do sin in the act of using it.

Ans. 1. *They who injoy that of which they deserve to be deprived*, they sin, and have no due right to use it; Is not universally true. They who injoy that which they may and ought by their own private power, restore, such as ill conquered goods. They sin in using that, true, Prov. 3. 27. Exod. 22. 26, 27. Luke 19. ^{it is, that} *the* ^{who injoy that, of} ^{which they} ^{deserve to be} ^{deprived.} How true 8. Its a sin to withhold the rayment though laid in pawn, which should cover the poor mans skin in the night, and they have no right to injoy that.

But they who injoy that, what ever it be, of which by sin, they deserve to be deprived, they have no due right to that, it is denied: For if it be life, being, eating, sleeping, and such things, and sin in using it, as only can be taken away, by a judicall power, and by God the Lord of life and death, and can not be taken away by themselves, (for it is lawfull for no man to punish himself and take away his own life) nor by any other, except for capitall crimes, they have due providentiall right to keep and injoy all such things until the same power that gave them remove them, nor do they sin in using them.

The spirituall use of being and living. PART I.

Living in them. And it is most dangerous to say, that Devils and the damned in Hell who dishonour the Majesty of God by their living and being, and so by sin, deserve to be annihilated and deprived of their Reprobate being, do sin, in that they live and are not annihilated, and that is no usurping of life. all the Elect before their conversion, sin in that they enjoy being within 24. hours, but by invincible providence he is rescued out of the hand of the Magistrate, and lives diverse years after, the sentenced man sins not before God nor against the law of the land, in that he lives, nor can he be called an usurper and unjust, *mala fidei*, possessor of his life: For the sentence was not that he should take away his life with his own hand, but that it should be taken away by the judiciale hand and executioner of the Magistrate. Nor *is this Providentiall right*, a right of meer permission but of positive donation and free-gift, for then we might by the same reason, say that Reprobate men have a right of meer permission to keep and enjoy the knowledge of these, that God is: *Superiours, Parents*

The Re- are to be honoured: the whole is more then the part; Yea they have probate & the same naturall and providentiall right by nature that other sinners have to the one as to the other. 2. *These who enjoy that, of which they deserve to be deprived, they sin in the act of using;* as touching the substance of the act of living, being, eating, drinking: That is most false. *These who enjoy that, of which they deserve to be deprived, they, in modu,* in the way, maner, and end of living, eating, &c. do sin: It is true: and such have not spirituall and supernaturall right in Christ (which they ought to have, if they be in the Visible Church and hearers of the Gospel) to life, being and the creatures, and they sin in not believing, Rom. 14. not eating for the Glory of God, 1 Cor. 10. 31. Naturall men care not if they have and enjoy things so they have them: They have being, so have earth, stones, &c. they live, so doe trees and hearbs, they have health, so have beasts and birds, they swallow up many years, so do Ravens, and Harts and other beasts, a long time to have a lump, many thousand yairds and miles of life are sought, *diu sunt, non diu vivunt.* But who lives for God, who sleeps, who wakes, life & time who eats for God and his Glory? and they who make themselves & no right their last end, Idolatrously put self in the roome of God, who only to life.

How the Lord is our God.

• is the last end of all, Rom. 11. 36. Rev. 4. 11. Prov. 16. 4. and as good make self the first Author of Heaven and Earth and Creator as the last end. Ye who eat and drink, who pays your reckoning? Christ? Or are you usurpers? Have you any Charter? Or do ye robbe the Lord?

Q. What way is God ours?

A. By Covenant, Ezek. 34. 24. Genes. 17. 7. Jere. 32. 38. Zech. 13. 9. But he is not ours as if we had some gifted right and dominion over him, as we have over the creatures. 2. Not is he ours as we are his, the clay hath no soveraignty over the Potter. Nor 3. is God simply as God ours, but God as it were coming down in How God Christ to us Covenant-wayes as God incarnate, to make out his is ours, goodness, grace, mercy to and for us. 4. Its true God incarnate, Christ, is principally Gods, 1Cor. 3. 21. not ours. He is all for God, he is Immanuel, our Immanuel in order to save us, and so is more ours then the God of Angels.

2. God is the fluer of the Saints desire, more to them then all heaven in the length and breadth thereof, and all the inhabitants thereof, Psal. 73. 25. Isa. 63. 16. more then all the Angels and to the Man Saints, 1Thes. 4. 16. (2.) There is no hell to Christ but afar off God, Psal. 22. 1. Math. 27. 45. no heaven but the glory he had with the father, John 17. 5. (3.) There is nothing more like a spiritual disposition then when the Spouse, Cant. 3. hath soul-love to Christ: *I sought him whom my soul loved.* (2.) She hath an ardent desire after him, *I sought him but I found him not.* 3. There could not be such diligent search after she found him, if there had not been strong faith. 4. And her conference with the watch- There may men, *Saw ye him whom my soul loveth?* faith, She enjoyed Ordinances and means, yet there may be (which is to be observed) a want of graces, furniture of grace and a want of Christ, *I went a little further,* I & yet unfound him *whom my soul loveth,* Cant. 5. There is 1. a wakening heart. 2. A discerning of the Beloved, and a telling over again of his words, *Open to me, my sister, &c.* 3. A stirring of Christ's hand upon the key-hole of the heart. 4. A moving of the bowels for him. 5. A seeking of him and a praying, but no finding nor answer. 6. A love-sicknesse for him, and yet a missing of himself, *I sought him but I found him not.* So compare Cant. 1. 1, 4. with Cant.

How God is our Lord.

Cant. 2, 3, 4. with v. 6, 8. and other places, it will be clear a God-head can only quiet the spirit, and that its a question whether we know the field where the Pearle is, and the Rubies, Saphirs, precious stones that are hid here, which do in worth exceed the capacity of Angels and Saints.

Therefore should his glory be the last end and stirrer of us in all spiritual soul acts in our actings, and grace the only efficient in all, and so much of God (if he be ours by Covenant) as our wayes, intentions may smell of him. But there is much of the creature, of self, of gain, of empty glory, in our spirituall actings. God weighs not down the creature nor heaven and union with Christ: as Exod. 32. 32. Rom. 9. 3.

(2.) Its a spirituall soul that misfeth God, rather then the train of God rather all the graces of faith, love, hope, desire of and joying in him. And know he is away though heaven were in the heart, and can then any discern when the Ordinances are empty. 3. It engages all we are, created sa to be before God, and to live wholly in him, not in our selves. 4. We are not to believe in believing, nor to be sick of love with the love of Christ, nor to make a god of faith or love. Its a spirituall condition to have grace and to misse Christ.

CHAP. X.

Corvin.

cont. Molin.

c. 8. §. 7.

Primo iude-

re per ino-

bedientiam

primi homi-

nis ruplo.

cessabat eti-

am obligatio

ad eam obe-

dientiam le-

ge prescrip-

tam.

Ibid. c. 9.

S. 5. Re-

monstr. in

Scrip Synod.

Dord. 4.

p. 145.

W hat are the false grounds of the Lords making the Covenant of Grace?

A. There are two bastard grounds devised by Arminians. Because the Covenant of Works cannot oblige both to active and passive obedience, but to one of them only (say they) and the Covenant of Works was so rigid, that God could not follow it out, and cast infants in hell for a sin which is theirs, only by imputation, and was pardoned to the first man that committed it. Therefore he was necessitated to make a Covenant of Grace with all mankind, none excepted. But the Covenant of Works is broken, and can now be a way of Justification and salvation to none, but yet it obliges all. And sin cannot make us lawlesse, for the spiritual Law is of an eternall obligation. 2. They that never heard of Christ, perish by the Law, and not by the Covenant of Grace of which

How God is our Lord.

PART. I.

Cant. 2. 3. 4. with v. 6. 8. and other places, it will be clear a God-head can only quiet the spirit, and that its a question whether we know the field where the Pearle is; and the Rubies, Saphirs, precious stones that are hid here, which do in worth exceed the capacity of Angels and Saints.

Therefore should his glory be the last end and stirrer of us in all our actings, and grace the only efficient in all, and so much of God (if he be ours by Covenant) as our wayes, intentions may smell of him. But there is much of the creature, of self, of gain, of empty glory, in our spirituall actings. God weighs not down the creature nor heaven and union with Christ: as Exod. 32. 32. Rom. 9. 3. (2.) Its a spirituall soul that mislēth God, rather then the train of And misses all the graces of faith, love, hope, desire of and joying in him. God rather then any And know he is away though heaven were in the heart, and can discern when the Ordinances are empty. 3. It engages all we are, created & vying grace, hands, knees, body, Exo. 20. 5. Psal. 44. 20. 1 Cor. 6. 19. self to be for God, and to live wholly in him, not in our selves. 4. We are not to believe in believing, nor to be sick of love with the love of Christ, nor to make a god of faith or love. Its a spirituall condition to have grace and to misse Christ.

CHAP. X.

Corvin.

cont. Molin.

c. 8. §. 7.

Primo adde-

re per in-

bedientiam

primi homi-

niis ruplo.

cessabat eti-

am obligatio-

ad eam obe-

dientiam le-

ge prescrip-

tam.

Ibid. c. 9.

now be a way of Justification and salvation to none, but yet it

S. 5. Re-

oblidges all.

And sin cannot make us lawlesse, for the spiritual

monstr.

in Law is of an eternall obligation.

2. They that never heard of

Script. Synod.

Dord. 4.

Christ, perish by the Law, and not by the Covenant of Grace of

which

Q. What are the false grounds of the Lords making the Covenant of Grace?

1. There are two bastard grounds devised by Arminians. Because the Covenant of Works cannot oblige both to active and passive obedience, but to one of them only (say they) and the Covenant of Works was so rigid, that God could not follow it out, and cast infants in hell for a sin which is theirs, only by imputation, and was pardoned to the first man that committed it. Therefore he was necessitated to make a Covenant of Grace with all mankind, none excepted. But the Covenant of Works is broken, and can

Ibid. c. 9. now be a way of Justification and salvation to none, but yet it is of an eternall obligation. 2. They that never heard of

Christ, perish by the Law, and not by the Covenant of Grace of

which

PART. I. *The Arminian ground of the new Covenant, rejected.* 57

which they never heard, and the Gospel is written in the heart of The Law none. 3. The first Covenant was holy and spirituall, and God & the first Covenant should unjustly threaten death upon infants, if they be not guilty is holy, and of eternall condemnation, as Arminius, diff. pub. 7. tb. 16. 3. oblidgeth and the Scripture saith, infants are guilty of this sin, Eph. 2. 3. alio to active Rom. 3. Psal. 51. 5. Job 14. 4. As also Christ must not have died oblidgement always.

There is another of Christ's Blood. The other bastard ground is, the naturall antecedent desire and love of God to have all saved, moved him (say they) to make this Covenant of Grace with all. But this makes away free-grace, and changes God at the blind Talmud,

which faith God hath a secret place in which he afflicts himself, because he burnt the Temple, and delivered the Jews to captivitie.

Also, the Lord rememb'ring the captivity of the Jews, and their desolation, he poures out two tears every day in the Sea or Ocean, faneled to be the

Alcoran saith, that God and the Angels wish well to Mahomet, the Covenant of GOD, but cannot free him from death. So made the Heathen their Ju-

piet' to deplore the destinies which he could not amend. And what is this, but to say, God hath passionate desires to have all, Elect, and Reprobate, Men, and Angels, to obey and be eternally saved, but he cannot help the matter; and therefore must upon the same account, be sorrowfull and mourn that he cannot get all

saved, which destroyes the power of grace and restrains the out-goings of free-love.

CHAP. XI.

The three-fold Covenant considered. 2. The Law preffed upon Israel was not a Covenant of Works, but a darker dispensation of Grace. 3. The three-fold Covenant of Arminians refuted. 4. Diverse considerations of the Law and the Gospel.

Here be who hold that there be three Covenants. 1. A Covenant of Nature, whereby God as Creator required perfect nature.

Bib. Ord. 1.

diff. 7.

Doctrin. si-

det. Iudic.

ord. 5. trac.

8. 1.

ibid. 1.

diff. 7.

The Co-

venant of

perfect

perfect obedience from Adam in Paradise, with promise of life, and threatening of death.

2. Of Grace. 2. The Covenant of Grace, whereby he promises life and forgiveness in Christ's Blood to believers.

3. The subservient Covenant, made 1. With Israel, not with Adam, and all mankind. 2. For a time with Israel, not for ever, as the natural Covenant. 3. In Mount Sinai, not in Paradise. 4. To terrifie and keep in bondage (the other from an inward principle required, obedience.) 5. To restrain Israel from outward sins, to prove the people, that the fear of God might be before their eyes, that they should not sin. So they expound of nature, which hold and so was that on Mount Sinai, to do all that are written in the not.

Book of the Law. Deut. 27. 26. Deut. 28. 1, 2, 3, 4. &c. to that same end, to love God with all the heart, and with all the soul, Deut. 10. 12. Deut. 5. 1, 2, 3. Deut. 6. 1, 2, 3. Deut. 5. 29. Deut. 6. 5. With all the heart, with all the soul, with all the might, which is expounded by Christ, Mat. 22. 37. Luke 10. 27, in as full a height of perfection as ever was required of man. 6. It was written to Israel in Table of stone. The natural Covenant was written in the heart, where a circumcised heart promised to Israel, Deut. 30. 6. though sparingly. 7. It was (say, they) given by the Mediator Moses, as that of nature was without a Mediator. Yea, Moses was the Typical Mediator of the young Covenant of Grace.

The differences between the subservient Covenant, and that of Grace.

The difference between the subservient, God only approves righteousness and confesses, in that of Grace he pardons and renues. Ans. Acts 15. 11. *We believe through the Grace of the Lord Jesus, we shall be saved even as they under that Covenant.* Acts 10. 43. To him as they gave all the Prophets witness, that through his Name, who oecall it, and ver believeth in him, shall receive remission of sins. Abraham and David were justified, in that sin was not imputed to them, nor grace are null.

2. 5. I said I will confess my transgression, and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Isa. 43. 25. I, even I am he that blots out thy

by transgressions for my own sake, and I will not remember thy Righteousness. So David was a man according to the heart of God, So Asa, nesse and Josiah, Jehoshaphat, Samuel, Baruch, Gedeon, Daniel, the Prophets, under that subservient Covenant (except they be under a Fourth Covenant) were renued, justified, saved by faith, Heb. 11. Covenant as under a Covenant of Grace.

2. The former was, do and live, this was, believe and live. Ans. Doing and living was but a shuting them up under the Law, that they might flee to Christ in whom they beleaved; else the futhers must be saved and justified by works contrair to Rom. 2. Rom. 4. Heb. 11.

3. In antiquity, the former came in as added 430. years after the promise of grace, Gal. 3. 17.

Ans. True, but he speaks of the Covenant in Sinai, according to the strict Law part, which could not save, and so its different. But that proves not two Covenants.

4. In the former is compulsion and the Spirit of bondage, in this heart inclining freedom and the Spirit of Adoption. Ans. Yet the differences are accidental, there was a legall awing of the hearts, as if they had been Servants, yet Heirs and Sons they were, Gal. 4. 1. The whole Book of the Proverbs spake to the Godly as to Adopted Sons. They were beleavers, Heb. 11. Rom. 4. Acts 10. 13. and to Sons as touching a spirituall state, John 1. 11, 12. In regard of Oeconomy, it was somewhat more rigid and legall, they were restrained as servants; Yet it was the Covenant of Grace, by which beleeving Jews were justified and saved, Acts 15. 11. v. 11. Acts 10. 43.

5. In the former man is dead, in this man is humbled for sinne? Ans. Legally dead, except they would flee to Christ, and legally condemned; but there was true humiliatiion for sins under that Covenant. As David, Josiah, Hezekiah, and all beleevers then, as now, were pardoned and justified.

6. In the former there are commands, not strength, but here there be promises and grace given? Ans. The full abundance of grace and of a new heart, was reserved untill now. And the Law could not make perfect nor give pardon, in the blood of beasts; touching that legall dispensation: But both grace, the Spirit, pardon,

pardon, righteousness and life were received and believed; by looking on Christ to come.

7. In the former, Canaan was promised, in this, Heaven. Ans. Canaan is promised only but sacramentally, and that was a pedagogicall promise for the infancie of that Church, but a type which was then in that Covenant, and is not now, make not two Covenants, one then, and another now? Except ye say, there was then a Lamb in the Passeover, which was a Type of Christ to come, and there is now no such Type, because the body is come, and Christ the true High Priest offered himself. Therefore there are two Christs, one then to come, another now who hath come already. The Lords dispensation with Israel is often called a Covenant, now it must either be a Covenant of Works, or of Grace, or a third Covenant.

But the truth is, the Law as pressed upon Israel was not a Covenant of Works.

1. The Law as the Law or as a Covenant of Works is made with perfect men who need no mercy; But this Covenant is made with sinners, with an expresse preface of mercy: *I am the Lord thy God that brought thee out of the land of Egypt, &c.* It is made with stiff-necked Israel, Deut. 29. Deut. 30. c. 31. c. 32. and that is called a Covenant from the end and object, as motions are denominated from their end: for the end of the Lords pressing the Law upon them was to bring them under a blessed necessity to seek salvation in their true City of Refuge Christ Jesus, who redeemed them out of the spirituall bondage of sin.

2. It was the Covenant made with Abraham, which was a Covenant of Grace: and though, if it be called, Deut. 29. 1. a Covenant beside that which was made at Horeb: Because 1. Renued again after their breach. 2. Repeated a little before the death of Moses, Deut. 32. 28. 29. 30. (3.) Because there were some additions of speciall blessing, cursings, Ceremoniall Commands that were not in the formerly proposed Covenant, Exod. 20. yet the same it was in substance, to love the Lord with all the heart, Deut. 3. 10. 12. 13. 14. The same with that of Abraham, Deut. 8. 18. That he may establish his Covenant, which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day. When he is to deliver them out of Egypt, Exod. 2. 24. And God heard

PART I. Israel saved by Grace, as we are. heard their groaning, and remembred his Covenant with Abraham and Isaak and Jacob. So the Lord expones it in his appearing to Moses, Exod. 3. 6. Jer. 31. 32. Not according to the Covenant which I made with their fathers, in the day that I took them by the hand, to bring them out of the Land of Egypt. Now that was the Covenant which God made with Abraham, of which Circumcision was a seal, Gen. 17. not of a temporary Canaan only, but of heart Circumcision, Col. 2. 11. For the Lord expresly tells them, when he took them by the hand as his married people, to bring them out of the Land of Egypt, and out of the house of bondage, Exod. 20. He meant no other Covenant then he made with Abraham, of believing, Gen. 15. and of walking before him and being perfect, Gen. 17. 1, 2. which is somewhat more legall, as Moses and the Lord himself expones it, Exod. 2. 24. Exod. 3. 6. Exod. 20. 1, 2. And he shewes them, Lev. 26. if in their enemies land they repent and shall come out and meet the rod, and their uncircumcised hearts shall willingly accept of the punishment of their iniquity: 42. Then (saith the Lord) I will remember my Covenant with Jacob, and also my Covenant with Isaac, and also my Covenant with Abraham will I remember. Beside there are not here three Covenants, but one, there is no word of the subservient Covenant with Israel in Sinai. Except that when he mentions the one, he excludes not the other. For to walk before the Lord required in Abrahams Covenant Gen. 17. 1. is to walk in all the ways of the Lord, to fear and love him, Deut. 10. 12. 13. and Samuel, 1 Sam. 12. 22. Joshua, Josh. 24. 22, 23, 24, 25. And Micer, Luke. 55. And Zacharie, ver. 70, 72, 73. refer to the Covenant made with Abraham, and Deut. 6. the Covenant at Horeb, the Lord made with Abraham to give Canaan to his seed, ver. 10. Deut. 7. 12. If thou hearken to these judgements to do them, it shall come to passe that the Lord thy God will keep unto thee the Covenant of mercy that he sware unto thy fathers, &c. 3. This Covenant hath the promise of a circumcised heart, Deut. 10. 6. and of the word of faith that is near in the mouth, and of the righteousness of faith clearly differenced from the righteousness of the Law by doing. For so Paul, Rom. 10. 5, 6, 7, &c. expones, Moses, Deut. 30. 11, 12, 13, 14.

*Israel was under the same**PART. I.*

4. The Covenant of Works taught nothing of the way of expiation of sin by blood typifying the Ransome of blood that Christ was to pay for our sins, as this Covenant, all along had sacrifices and blood to confirm it. *Exod. 24.8.* *And Moses took the blood and sprinkled it on the people, and said, behold this is the Blood of the Covenant which the Lord hath made with you, concerning all these words.* Now the words were the ten Commandments. See *Heb. 9. v. 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24.* (5.) This Covenant is made with Israel only; *Exod. 20. Deut. 5. c. 6. Deut. 6. 5, 6, 7, 12.* The Covenant of Works is made with all mankind. (6.) No people under the Law can be justified and saved thereby, nor have their sins pardoned. *Rom. 3. 9, 10, 11. — 19, 20. Rom. 4. 1, 2, 3, 4. Rom. 9. Rom. 10. Psal. 130. 3. Psal. 143. 2. Gal. 3. 1, 2, 3. — 10, 11, 12, 13.* But in this Covenant, Abraham, David, Gen. 15., Psal. 32. Rom. 4. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. And the Jewes by faith, have remission of sins and salvation, as also the Gentiles have, *Acts 10. 43. Acts 15. 11.* (7.) The Lord minds to lay aside the Law as inconsistent with the Covenant of Grace, *Gal. 3. 18.* *If the inheritance be by the Law, then it is not by promise, but God gave it to Abraham by promise;* For to live by this Covenant, is a life of promises, all being here promised, both with the condition, and perseverance therein, and a new heart, righteousness, pardon, and life. A man that hath his estate in papers and in good words that are transient things, may seem a poor man, but to live by promises here is the rich life of the heirs of hope, this is strong consolation under deadness, absence, faith working under-ground in the dark, *Gal. 3. 23.* If there had been a Law which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the Law.

How God commands them to do the Law, it was not that they should live thereby, and though he commanded us the same, what. it is another command, as it were, it is not so much now that we obey from the Authority of God Law-giver under pain of damnation (though that be not laid aside, but urged in a Gospel intention upon heirs) as from the love of God, Grace-giver, as also there is an intrinsicall amenitie in Christ drawing, and obedience now becomes connaturall, free, delightfull. Let these consider, to whom the yoke of obedience is a torment and a man-mill.

PART. I. Covenant of Grace that we are.

18. The Passeover and Circumcision, *Gen. 17. 7.* all along were seals of the Covenant, as Baptism one with Circumcision in substance, *Col. 2. 11.* is the seal of the same Coyenant, *Acts 2. 39;* as the Law required no Circumcision, no shedding of blood, no Repentance, no new heart, but eternall condemnation followed the least breach thereof. *Paul saith indeed, Gal. 5. 3. If ye be circumcised (as the false Apostles would have, that thereby you may be justified & saved) you are debtors to keep the whole Law perfectly,* as the only way to life, and by no other Covenant can you preventing be justified and saved, now *Abraham was not circumcised that way,* circumcision did bind *Abraham to keep the Law, as a Ceremonie and Seal of the Covenant of Grace commanded of God.* But the Law as a Covenant of Works doth command no Ceremonie, no Sacrifice, no Type of Christ Mediator at all.

Its true that first Covenant had *Moses* for its mediator, but as he was a Type of Christ, so Christ yesterday and the day was the Covenants reall Mediator, but vailed. The New Covenant hath better promises; *Heb. 8. 6. Heb. 7. 22.* its a better Covenant, *Heb. 7. 22.* hath a better reall, not a Typicall suretie, a better Priest who offered himself through the eternal Spirit, *Heb. 9. 14.* a better Sacrifice, because of the plainenesse, *John 16. 29. 2 Cor. 3. 18.* because the reall promises are made out to us, because of a larger measure of Grace, *2 Cor. 3. 1, 2, 3, 4.* And the first Covenant is faulty, *Heb. 8. 7.* not because there was no Salvation by it, the creature is *Heb. 11.* but that is comparatively spoken: because the blood of beasts therein could not take away sins, *Heb. 10. 1, 2, 3, 4.* because forgiveness of sins is promised darkly in the first Covenant, but plainly in the other, because Grace is promised sparingly in the former, but here abundantly, the Law being written in the heart, *John 7. 39. Esa. 54. 13.*

And it is true, *Gal. 4. 22, 23, 24, &c.* they seeme to be made contrarie Covenants: But *Paul* speaks, *Gal. 3.* of the Law as relative to that people, and so it pressed them to Christ, and keeps them as young Heires under bondage. 2. He speaks of the Law absolutely, as contradistinguised from the Gospel, *Gal. 4. 21.* so the Covenant is a Covenant of Works begetting children to bondage: 2. Who come short of righteousness and the inheritance, and shall not be saved, *Gal. 4.*

*Israel under the same***PART. I.**

saved. 3. Who are casten out of the Kingdome of Grace. 4. Who persecute the Godly the Sons of promise, so is the Law as it was in Adams dayes, and is now to all the Reprobate; so the Godly are not under the Law and the Covenant of Works. The Covenant urged upon Believers is to prove them, when they stand afar off, and tremble, *Exod. 20. 20.* Fear not (saith Moses) God is come to prove you (not to damne you) and therefore *Calvyn* solidely observeth that *Paul*, *2 Cor. 3.* speaks with lesse respect of the Law then the Prophets do, for their cause, who out of a vain affectation of the Law-Ceremonies, gave too much to the Law and darkned the Gospel, and sayeth the one was 1. Literall. 2. Written in stone. 3. A Sermon of death and wrath. 4. To be done away and lesse glorious, whereas the Gospel is Spirituall. 2. Written on the heart. 3. The Ministrie of life. 4. And glorious: and praises put upon the Law, agree not to it of its own nature, but as it was used by the Lord to prove them, *Exod. 29. 20.* and chase them to Christ.

The Arminians also (especially *Episopius*), make three Covenants. 1. One with *Abraham*, in which he requires sincere worship and putting away strange gods: Beside 2. Faith and Universal obedience, and promised Canaan to his seed and Spirituall blessings darkly. 2. One in Mount Sinai in these three Laws Morall, Ceremoniall and Judiciall, with a promise of Temporall good things, but to no sinners promise of life Eternall. 3. A Covenant of Grace, with a promise of pardon and life to all that believe and repented, to all mankind, but lie denyes 1. All infused habits, contrare to *Isa. 44. 1, 2, 3.* *Isa. 59. 20, 21.* *Zach. 12. 10.* *Job. 4. 14.* *Job. 7. 37.* *John 16. 7, 8.* *1 John 3. 9.* he sayeth that 2. all commands are easie by Grace. 3. That the promise of earthly things in their abundance is abolished, in that we are called to patient suffering. 4. That there is no threatening in this Covenant, but that of Hell fire. But the Covenant made with *Abraham* is that of Grace made with all the Seed, *Deut. 30. 6.* *Deut. 7. 5, 6, 7, 12.* *Lev. 26. 40.* 4r. and made with all Believers, who are *Abrahams* children, *Gal. 3. 13, 14, 18, 19.* *Rom. 4. 1, 2, 3, 4.* *Luke 19. 9.* yea with the whole race of man without exception. (2.) The second Covenant which promiseth only blessings is made rather with beasts, the

The Ar-
minians
make three Covenants, dis-
tinguisht

Epist. par. 3.
disp. 11.

Self fear-
eyes, as without, so also within *Rev. 4. 8.* We may hence learn, such come nearest to the nature of these pure and heavenly Spirits, who have eyes within to see what they are, and their blacknesse of face and feet, when they compare themselves either with the Holy God, or his Holy Law. 2. The Carnall man is a beast, *Psal. 49. 20.* and beasts have no reflet acts upon their own beastly state. 3. The more of a spirituall life is in any the more stirring in communing with their own heart, the Law makes, the more of life that is in the worme when tramped on, the more stirring it makes, deadnesse and stupiditie in not being versed and well read and skilled in our selves and our own heart, argues little of the

PART. I. *Covenant of Grace with us.*

walked, then with men, contrare to *Psal. 73. 25.* *Isa. 57. 1, 2, 3.* *Psal. 37. 37.* and it must build some Chalmer in hell, where the fathers were before Christ, a dreame unknown to Scripture. The third Covenant makes the Covenant of Grace a Covenant of Works; and holds out life and pardon, upon condition that free-will repent and believe and stand on its own feet, For there is neither faith, nor a new heart nor repentance promised contrare to *Deut. 30. 6.* *Ezek. 11. 19, 20.* *Ezek. 36. 26, 27.* *Isa. 59. 19, 20,* 21. *Isa. 44. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.* *Zech. 12. 10.*

CHAP. XII.

1. All are to try under what Covenant they are. 2. Threatnings under the New Testament are more spirituall 3. Desertions under both are compared. 4. Considerable differences of such as are under the Covenant of Works, and such as are under the Covenant of Grace. 5. Of legall terrors. 6. Of convictions compelled, free, legall, &c.

Quest. 1. **W**Hether should not all try under what Covenant they are.

Answ. Self-searching is a reflect act upon the state (and such acts are more spirituall, then direct acts) and therefore it should be the work of all, to try, under what reign they are, whether of the first or second Adam. And where as Angels cover their faces and their feet with wings, *Isa. 6.* before God and are full of selfe eyes, as without, so also within *Rev. 4. 8.* We may hence learn, such come nearest to the nature of these pure and heavenly Spirits, who have eyes within to see what they are, and their blacknesse of face and feet, when they compare themselves either with the Holy God, or his Holy Law. 2. The Carnall man is a beast, *Psal. 49. 20.* and beasts have no reflect acts upon their own beastly state. 3. The more of a spirituall life is in any the more stirring in communing with their own heart, the Law makes, the more of life that is in the worme when tramped on, the more stirring it makes, deadnesse and stupiditie in not being versed and well read and skilled in our selves and our own heart, argues little of the

I
Spirit,

Threatnings under the New Testament spiritual. PART. I.
Spirit, and estrangement to a spirituall Covenant, nor can any lay hold on the Covenant of Grace in a night dream.

Ques. Whether are there rarer threatnings of Temporall evils under the New Covenant, then under the Old?

Answ. It cannot be denied, except the threatnings of the Sword, Famine Pestilence on Jerusalem, and the desolation upon the Jews, *Math. 23. Math. 24.* but in place of all the diseases of Egypt, *Levit. 26.* and the long Roll of dreadfull judgments and curses temporall, *Deut. 28.* denounced against the New Testament transgressours of the former Covenant, Christ and the Apostles are more sparing in denoucing temporall plagues in the New Testament.

Christ sayeth the worme never dieth, the fire never goeth out, the Hypocrite is to be bound hand and foot and casten into utter darknesse, *Math. 23. 12.* and the Holy Ghost such shall not inherite the Kingdome of Heaven, *1 Cor. 6. 9. Eph. 5. 5.* the

Heb. 6. 8 Apostle is near a curse, his end burning, *Heb. 8. 6.* he is to look for judgement and firie indignation, *Heb. 10. 27.* to some is referred the blacknesse of darknesse for ever, *Jude 7.* the lake that burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death, *Rev. 22. 8.* Because 1. Temporall blessings and curses are more legall, and more easily believed, when the light was dimmer then now,

when light is fater, convictions stronger, and men are more apt

to believe Everlasting wrath. 2. Its a more Gospel way to bear in the threatening of Everlasting wrath then of Temporall rods.

3. Desertions and tryalls under the Law were more legall and sharp and sad upon David, Ezekiah, Job, Jeremiah, Heman, *Psal. 6.* compared. *Psal. 38. Psal. 77. Psal. 102. Psal. 88. Isa. 38. Jer. 20.*

But it is to be thought, that in regard the day now hath dawne, the Gospel desertions *ceteris paribus* for the abundance of light, are more sharp nearer to dispaire, see *2 Cor. 1. 8.* We were pressed out of measure above strength, in so much that we despaire even of life, having received the sentence of death. Its a doubt if Paul should be so pressed by a sentence of temporarie death. Though there be a larger measure of faith, to bear up the soul under the New Testament: but it would appear there is more of hell now then under that dispensation, and that the Gospel despair of *Judas* and of these that cry for mountains and hills, to cover them, *Luke*

PART. I. Marks of such as are under the Law, &c.

Ques. 23. 29, 30. is more intollerable under the Gospel. (4.) There is a more numerous company of these who have not loved their lives to the death, and the Martyres that suffered more exquisite torments for Christ, under the persecuting Emperours and reigne of Antichrist, then ever before; the constraining love of Christ, which is stronger then death or hell hath so swallowed up all temporarie sufferings, the Spirit hath such influence on the flesh. (5.)

When the world seeks wisdome, 1 Cor. 1. and Rabbies of the Jews A larger and learning and artes abound all the world over, as the profound number of Philosophers of the Gentiles, the wonders of nature prove, yet Godly, of not many wise are called, *1 Cor. 3. 21, 26, 27.* and unlettered and ignorant, are, in number, for Godly spirituall knowledge, farre beyond the Godly learned; and make that true, *Esa. 11. 9.* The wise and earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters learned accover the Sea, and *Isa. 30. 26.* And the lights of the Moon shall cordling to be as the light of the Sun, and the light of the Sun shall be as the light of seven dayes, so hath the Lord darkned carnall learning, though of it self the good gift of God, with the shining of spirituall wisedome in the fools of the world, for so are they judged, *1 Cor. 1. 27.*

Q. 3. What are the speciall differences of one under the Covenant of Works, and of one under the Covenant of Grace? Its a Law.

Answ. 1. The dominion and kingly power of sin, to condemn and stike to be judge to eternall wrath, and also to command against all shaddow of reason, such crying sins, *1 Cor. 6. 9, 10. Rom. 1. 29, 30. Gal. 5. 20.* of sin, the 21. *Eph. 4. 17, 18, 19. Col. 3. 5. 1 Tim. 1. 9. Rev. 21. 8. Rev. 22. 15, 16.* without exception makes an universall slave; for as far as the dominion of sin go, as far goes the dominion of sin, and this is to

be under the Law, *Rom. 6. 14.* (2.) There is subjection to the Law when men are agents in resigning and giving themselves over, or offer themselves as sacrifices at the altar, or servants that tender their service to their masters, *Rom. 6. 16.* to sin, which hath strength from the Law to condemne, *1 Cor. 15. 56.* and to be a captive is not intended, but comes on by occassional force, *Rom. 7.* such are patients as it were. But 3. Then they are sinnes servants, when there is a Law of sin and a Covenant, as there is between a master and a servant, And 2. full consent, and men give themselves.

Marks of such as are under the Law, PART. I.

selves, and willingly commit and deliver themselves (the word spoken of Christ's willingnesse to offer himself for us, *Eph. 5. 25.*) to God the Judge, *1 Pet. 2. 23.*) to commit filthinesse ~~in abundance~~ ^{overla} with greedinesse, *Esa. 9. 19.* when the renewed part enters not a spirituall protestation on the contrare, see *Rom. 7. 19.* the carnall protestation entered by naturall reason is not the protestation of the renewed will and affections against the will and affections, but will against will makes a division of the practical act, and division weakens, the half is leſſe than the whole, especially when half and half are contrare, half fire and half water makes the burning leſſe, half light, half darknesse makes twylight, its not perfect day light, yea and it not only lessenth, but weakneth, yea and alters the kind of the morall act, no reason can admit that when a merchant casts his goods in the sea for fear of shipwreck, that he does an act of prodigallie or wistrate: It wants delight and full consent. Herod's killing of John Baptist, though he did it with sorrow, yet was no compelled nor devided action between renewd affection and unrenued affection. And so it was no protestation in favour of the Law of God, for he was not grieved, because murthering of the man of God was against the honour of God, but because not murthering of him was against his supposed credit, he should appear before men perjured, and to kill was a torment of conscience, it was then a protestation in favour of his own credite and conscience naturall. Hence the formall objects of action and action, show the clear difference between the combate between sense and reason, or between a naturall conscience and the flesh, (for a naturall conscience cannot plead for, and protest in favour of the spirituall Law of God) and the combate between the flesh and the Spirit. 2. The second speciall difference is in the Law convictions and the Gospel convictions, convictions under the Gospel, are stronger and more solide, for they have more of sanctified reason: 2. Will. 3. Inclination of heart and affection: A believer accuseth himself and joines actively with the Spirit to convince himself, and brightens his own guiltiness, *Psa. 51. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. Dan. 9. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 20.* but a Law conviction comes upon Divels and they tremble, *John 2. 19.* and ungodly as are under the Law, and are unsent for, by resistance from a naturall

**Compelled
convicti-
ons argue
Law. Spi-
rit,**

and of such as are under Grace.

naturall conscience, as heat from fire, light from the Sun: Compelled convictions speak a Law state.

2. It is easier to be found and Orthodox, then to be Godly, Sa-
than in a manner soundly believes there is one God, *Jam. 2. 19.* and that Christ is the Son of God, *Luke 4. 34.* and so doeth the carnall Jew teach that it is not lawfull to steal, to commit adulterie, *Rom. 2. 21, 22.* But in the Old and New Testament, Devils never accuse themselves of sin, but tempt to it; and challenge the Law and God, *Gen. 3. 4, 5.* of injustice, never themselves; Di-
vels are most properly under the Covenant of Works, and by no command is the Gospel Preached to them, and next to them are such as are found in the letter of the Gospel, but never convinced of sin: Such are most under the Law, as have least Law-work and Law-condemnation upon their Spirits, these that are under the Law most, as touching their state, are most under the letter, least under the Spirit, as touching any penall awaking. To be under Law-bondage is, a more punishment to Divels and men under a Law vert none. Legal terrors are upon Divels, *Math. 8. 29. Jam. 2. 19.* and *Cain Gen. 4. 14.* punishment as such neither maketh nor denominateth any gracious, it is but accidentall to prepare any for Christ, many tormented with the Law have believed such a case to be the pain of the second birth, when it was but a meer Law-feaver, and have returned to their vomit and become more loose and profane. 1. Because the Law as the Law can convert none. Legal terrors may be mista-
ke and conceived to be the child birth of Regeneration.

2. Wrestling with Law-bondage without any Gospel-Grace is but a contradicting of God, and his justice; and God recompenceth opposing and blaspheming of him in hell, with more sinfull loose- ness. 3. Law-light under legal terrors shines more clearly, and the guiltiness in not making use of rods of that nature is so much the more grievous. Ye that have been scadded and burnt in this furnace, and are come back from hell, are taught by sense to believe there is a hell, and though hell torment can convert no man, yet it renders men more unexcusable: Humbling, wakning, and purifying Law-bondage is more then a work of the Law when it brings forth confessing, praying, believing, humble submitting to God in Job, David, Hezekiah, Heman, and what a Physician is Christ who can heal us with burning and coals of hell.

3. A.

It is easier
to be found
then to be
Godly.

Littell 3. A man under a Law work may give a legall and dead assent to both the truth and goodnesse of the promises liberally conceivon on the conviction ed, as temporaries doe, and *Simon Magus* wonders, but *Saul*, mind, and *Acts 9*, the *Taylor* trembles, *Acts 16*, but that is in regard of the conviction not of the mind only, but of the conviction of affection and the yeelding to what shall I do? But *Faxie* trembleth, but only in regard of littell conviction on the mind, but neither he nor *Magus* comes to what shall I do? they differ as the burning light of a fire, which both casts light and with it shining heat also, and the light that precious stones cast in the night, which is both little and hath no heat. Fyric and piercing convictions are good, there is a dead conviction of the letter that doth not profite.

Natural 4. There is a strong Law-conviction that vengeance followeth the scaddings of Sodomie, and the killing of parents, because naturall instinct kindles and fires the soul with Law-apprehensions, when the minde hath engraven sharpnesse to discerne undeniable danger of principles, but the conscience is more dull in apprehending that spirituall vengeance followeth such spirituall sins as unbelief, because they be firy, and not tempered with grace. tempts the soul to a supernaturall assent, that Christ is a Teacher sent of God, *Job. 7. 28*. *Job. 3. 2*. the conviction is more strong: But because it is more supernaturall, and instead of kindly affection of love which it wants, it is mixed with hatred and anger and so degenerates into fierie indignation aginst the Holy Ghost, as *Job. 15. 24*.

Bare-con viction is compared with *Matt. 12. 15, 26. 31*, cleareth. 5. Conviction which is no more but conviction, is no godly principle, nor makes no Godly any heart change, yea it goes dangerously on to wonder and despise, except it send down coals of fire to the affections. 6. He who is under the Covenant of Grace findes a threefold sweetnesse in obedience.

A sweet- dience. 1. An inbred sweetnesse in the command; 2. In the strength by which he acts. 3. An inbred sweetnesse in a commun- nion with God. No man is any other way under the Law, then because it is under a yoak, what is only written seems the oldnesse of the let- ter, *Rom. 7*, and is dead of it self, and layes on a burden, but gives of God, in no back to bear. He that is under Grace findes sweetnesse of a child under grace.

flesh

flesh and blood as to be crucified, *Job. 10. 18*, yet it obtains a sweetnesse of holiness from Gods will, *Psal. 40. 8*. I delight to do thy will, O God, (even to be made a curse and crucified) Thy Law is within my heart, and he would but fulfill all righteousness, even that which seems to be the outside of the Gospel, to be sprinkled with water, *Math. 3. 15*, and this Christ would doe as under the Covenant of Grace.

2. The stirrings and breathings of the Spirit makes the work sweet, hearing brings burning of heart, *Luke 24. 32*, willing gladnesse, *Acts 2. 41*, and some sweetnesse of stirred bowells comes from the Lords putting in his hand through the Key-hole of the door of the heart, *Cant. 5. 4*, where as to an naturall man under the Law, to lift up a Prayer is to carie a millstone on his back, every syllabe of a word is a stone weight which he cannot bear. 3. hire for a childe under Grace. Were there no more in praying, but a communion with God, how sweet is it? when Christ prayeth, the fashion of his countenance is changed, *Luke 9. 29*. There is a heaven in the bosome of Prayer, though there were never a granting of the same, sure there is a sin in making heaven a hire, and in making duty a relative thing, a horse for a journey, a ship for a voyage to fetch home gold, where as there is heaven in praising God before the Throne, such as is both work and wages, and so in spirituall duties here.

7. Suppose there were no letter of a command, because there is suteableness between the Law ingraven in the heart, and the spirituall matter commanded, a childe of Grace under Grace sets about duties, so that (in a maner) there is no need to say to David, Get thee to Jerusalem and to the house of God, for he sayeth, *Psal. 122. 1*. I was glad when they said, let us go to the house of the Lord. As there needs no command that the Father love the child, nor is there need to exhort the Sea to ebbe and flow, or the Sun to shine: nor are many arguments usefull to presse the mother to give suck to the chlld, nature stands for a Law here, the strength of the ingraven Law in the heart, overpowreth the letter. So the nature, the indwelling anointing, as a new instinct putteth the law of Grace to act. But here we are to bewar, that we separate not the Word and the Spirit, the Father of Spirits loves to work with his own tools, and sow with his own seed the Word of God,

*new nature
child of grace
not the Word

Covenanting exterrnall

God, these three agree in one i. The Spirit acting. 2. The habie of Grace acted upon by the Spirit, who blows away the ashes, and 3. The word of exhortation: nor doe we extoll dead letters and livelesse formes, as *Libertines* say, for we take in with the letter the quickning senfe and convincing meaning of the Word, and is considerable that the Spirit drawes sweetly after him; the nature, faculties of will, minde and affections, and they need no other allurement but the Word, the Spirit, and the new nature: But when they barbarouslie slew their children and made them passe through the fire, they must put out of their ears and hearts the crying and howling of the murthered Babies, with the noise of the beating of drums; nature serves the Divell often weeping, and Sathan deadenes nature, Grace so mortifies as the consent of delegation goes alone. *Psal. 1.2. Psal. 119. 72. 97.*

CHAP. XIII.

*There are two sorts of Covenanting, on exterrnall, prof sed, rifiable, conditionall, another internall, reall, absolute
and the differences betwixt them. 2. Infants External
ly in Covenant under the New Testament 3. Some Ques-
tions touching infants.*

Persons are two wayes in Covenant with God, externally by Visible profession, and conditionally, not in reference to the Covenant, but to the thing promised in Covenant, which none obtains, but such as fulfill the condition of the Covenant: For consent of parties, promise and restipulation whether expresse, by word of mouth, *Deut. 5.27. We will hear and do, Josh. 24. 24.* And the people said unto Joshua, the Lord our God will we serve and his voice will we obey. Or yet tacit and implicit by profession. *I will be thy God, and the God of thy seed,* makes parties in Covenant. The keeping or breaking of the Covenant, must then be extrinsecall to ones being confederate with God. And 2. Infants born of Covenanted Parents are in Covenant with God, because they are born of such Parents, as are in Covenant with God. *Gen. 17.7. I will be a God to thy seed after thee.*

(2.) The

PART. I.

and personall.

(2.) The Covenant choise on Gods part is extended to the seed, The seed Deut. 4.37. *And because he loved thy Fathers, therefore he choise & Infants their seed after them. Dcnt. 10. 15. Only the Lord had a delight in thy Fathers, to love them, (and) he choise their seed after them, (even you (Fathers and Children) above all people, (as it is) this day.* And the Covenant choise of seed is extended to the seed in the New Testament. *Act. 2. 39. For to you, and to your children is the promise made.* He speaks in the very tearms and words of the Covenant, *Gen. 17.7. οὐαὶ τοῖς ἐκτόνωσιν, every one of you be baptized,* he saith not every one of you, old and young, Parents and Children, repent. For that command of Repentance is given only personally to them who moved the Question, *What shall we do, Men and Brethren?* 37. For we are under great wrath, and crucified the Lord of Glory. The Answer is, you aged, *Repent.* 39. True. But ah, we prayed, his blood be upon us and our Children. He Answers to that, every one of you be baptized. Why, that must be every one of you who are comanded to repent? No. It must be every one of you to whom the promise is made, but the promise is made *ὑπὲρ τοὺς τέκνους σου.* Observe the very two Pronouns that are, *Gen. 17.7: Deut. 4.37. Dcnt. 10.15. to thee and thy seed.* To you and your seed, and children. Now the Answer had been most impertinent, if he had mentioned their children, except in order to their Baptism, and their being in Covenant. For 1. their Children crucified not the Lord Jesus; Nay by Anabaptists grounds, their Children not being visibly in Covenant with their Parents, and not capable of actuall hearing the Word, of actuall mourning for, and repenting of their sins, as *Zech. 12.10. Mat. 3.8,9,10.* they were not concerned either in the evill of their Parents, who crucified the Lord of Glory, nor in the good of their Repentance more then stones. So that (every one of you be baptized, for the promise is to you and to your Children) should be impertinent, and also false; for Covenant promises are no more made to Children, then to stones, say the opposites of Infant Baptism. Yea also, as the Lord in the Old Testament, calls Israel *his people.* My people old and young. *Saul shall be Captain of my people. David shall feed my people,* old and young, and shall punish with the sword the murthering of Infants. 2. Because he choise (with a Covenant choise) the

The pro-
mise of the
Covenant
must be
made to in-
fants, *Act. 2. 39.* else
the sense of
the words
cannot
stand.

Infants in
Covenant
under the
New Te-
stament.

Covenanting externall

Jews and their seed, *Deut. 4.37. Deut. 10.15. Gen. 17.7.* then he must be the God of their seed. But he choiseth with a Covenant choise, and calling all the Nations, *Isa. 2.2,3.* All the kindreds of the earth under the New Testament, *Psal. 22.27.* All Egypt and Assyria under the New Testament. *Blessed be Egypt my people, and Assyria the work of my hand, Isa. 19.29.* All the Kingdome of the world are the Lords, and his Sons, and he reigns in them, by his Word and Gospel, as the seventh Angel soundeth, *Revel.*

Old and 11.15. All the Gentiles are his, *Isa. 60.1,2,3,4. Mal. 1.11.* All young of the ends of the earth, and the heathen, *Psal. 2.8,9. Psal. 72.7,8,9,10.* Now if they be not his by visible and externally professed New Test. Covenant, they must be the Lords Kingdoms only, because some are in Co- in these Kingdomes. 1. Are come to age. 2. Professe the truth, venant ex- 3. Give a signification that they are converted and chosen, and so ternaly, as Israel was. baptized. But so infants and all the rest of these Kingdomes who fixedly, in a Church, hear the Word, professe they are followers, and by so doing are witnesses against themselves that they have chosen the Lord to be their God, and have consented to the Covenant, as *Joshua* saith, *Josh. 24.22.* must be under the New Testament cut off from the Covenant, and a place must be shown where God hath now under the New Testament, broken the staves of beauty and bands, and hath laid this curse upon all the Infants of Egypt, Assyria, of all the Kingdomes of the earth, that the Lord is now no God to them, and feeds them no more, and therefore that which dies, let it die, and that which is cut off, let it be cut off, as it is, *Zech. 11.9.* And the like must be said of all that are come to age, and not baptized, or as good as not baptized. And Covenant promises are not to the Children of Beleevers, contrair to *Aets 2.39.* nor to the aged, untill they be converted visibly and Baptized; This then hath never yet been fulfilled, that the Gentiles and Heathen are become the Lords people. Sure, it is (2.) and was a mercy for the seed to be in Covenant, *Exod. 20.6.* I am the Lord shewing mercies unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my Commandements. *Psal. 89.28.* My mercy will I keep with David and his seed. What mercy? My Covenant shall stand fast with him. Hence they are called the sure mercies of David. *Isa. 55.* The Lord following the seed of the Godly with

PART. I.

and personall.

with real mercies (so that it cannot be called the favour of a ceremony and instituted or positive priviledge belonging only to the Jews) as that his seed is blessed, *Psal. 37.26. Psal. 112.2.* This mercy must be taken away either in mercie or in wrath: but that a real mercy of a blessing should be taken away in mercy, except a spirituall mercy of saving grace in Christ were given in place thereof, cannot be said, far lesse hath it any trutl that a real mercy can be removed in wrath from Infants in Jesus Christ, in whom the Nations are blessed. And we see, *Deut. 28.* the blessing of an obserued Covenant, and the curses of a broken Covenant are extended to the fruit of the body to the Sons and the daughters, v.4 18. 32. *Job 21.19. Job 29.14. Job 18.15,16,17.* And that this is not a New Testament dispensation, who can say? And that outward positive favours are bestowed on Infants. is clear. (1.) That Christ laid his hands on them and blessed them, making them a fixed copy of the indwellers of his Kingdom. (2.) The promises of the Covenant are made to them, *Aet. 2.39.* (3.) They are clean and holy by Covenant holinesse, *1 Cor. 7.14.* which cannot be meant of being born of the marriage-bed. For *Paul, Rom. 11.16.* saith the same of the Jews, root and branches, Fathers and Children: And no man dreamed that *Paul, Rom. 11.* intends to prove that the Jews shall be insert in again, because they are free of bastardie Father and sons. Now Infants understand no more any of these to be blessed by the laying on of the hands of Christ, and to be such as have title to the promises, *Aets 2.39.* and to be Covenant-wise holy, *1 Cor. 7.* then they understand Baptism. (4.) The same Covenant made with Abraham is made with the *Corinthians, 2. Cor. 6.16.* I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Which is Prophesied of the Gentiles under the New Testament, *Ezek 11.17,18,19,20. Ezek. 34.23,24,25. Jer. 31,31,32,33,34,35,36. Jer. 32.36,37. 38,39,40. Zech. 13.9. Hos. 1.10,11. 1 Pet. 2.9,10.* And it is made to the Gentiles with an eke of a new heart, and a larger extent of the Covenant under the New Test. for which cause it is called a better Covenant, hath better promises, *Heb. 7.22. Heb. 8.6,7,8,9,10,11,12.* Now that were a strange eke and excellency of the New Testament Covenant above the Old, to forfeit, without farther processe, all Infants under the New Testament

*Externall Covenanting**PART.I.*

lement of all Covenant-right, which was due to them of old under the Covenant which the Lord calls *faultie*: *Egypt shall be my people*, except their 1. Infants. 2. And except their aged, and their non-Saints. (5.) Infants in the former Covenant had right by birth to the means of salvation, to be taught and Catechised in the Law of the Lord, because born of Covenanting Parents within the Visible Church, and so had title to Covenant-calling, and Gods Covenant-choosing, *Mat. 22.4.* as is clear, *Gen. 18.19.* *I know Abraham will command his Children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord*, *Exod. 20.10.* *Deut. 6.6.7.* *And thou shall teach them diligently unto thy Children*, *Exod. 12.26,27.* *Pf. 78.4,5,6.* Now if Infants be without the Covenant as the Infants of Pagans, then they have no more Covenant-right to the hearing of the Gospel, and a treatie with Christ, and Covenant, then Pagans have. Its not enough to say their Fathers owe that much naturall compassion to their souls, as to teach them, it being a Parents duty; Yea, but what warrant hath a Father as a Father to make offer of a Covenant of Grace in the Name of God to one Pagan more then to another, since all are equally without the Covenant, if there be a Covenant-call warranted to them, where is the Fathers command to propone and ingadge the Covenanters consent, if the Children be Pagans? but as they have a right by birth to the call, they being born where the call soundeth, they must have some visible right to the Covenant it self, more then other Pagans. Its but of small weight to say that, *Rom. 9.* Paul expoundeth that in the New Testament, *I will be thy God, and the God of thy seed*, only of the spirituall seed, such as *Jacob*, who was predestinated to Glory, not of those that are carnally descended of *Abraham*, otherwise it should follow, that these that are in the Covenant, might believe that they should be saved, though void of Faith and Repentance.

Answe. The purpose of the Apologized stle, *Rom. 9.* is to Answer a sad Objection: if the Jews be cast off, and rejected of God, as Paul, by his extreme desire to have them saved, insinuates, then *the Word of God takes no effect*, and his calling and choosing of them for his people, takes no effect, v. 6. He answers, it is not failed, though the body of Israel be rejected. *For there are two kinds of Israelites, some only carnall and born according*

*PART.I.**and personall.*

according to the flesh: Others *sons of promise*, and chosen of God. Now the word of promise takes effect in the latter sort, to wit, in the chosen, and in the sons of promise, for they are not cast off of God, and so *the Word of God takes effect*, v. 6. (2.) But the truth is, if there be none Covenanted with God, but the chosen under the New Testament, then there is no such thing as an externall and visible Covenanting with God, under the New Testament, then must all the Nations, *Isa. 2.1, 2.* Kingdomes of the World, *Rev. 11.15.* all *Egypt, Assyria, Isa. 19. 25.* all the *Gentiles, Isa. 60.* be internally Covenanted and sons of promise, and predestinated to life? And that, *2 Cor. 6.16.* *I will be your God, and ye shall be my people*, under the New Testament, must infer, that all in Covenant under Christ must be spiritually, in Covenant, and the Visible Church of *Corinth*, and of all the Kingdome of the world, *Rev. 11.15.* must be the invisible and chosen Church, and as many as are called, must be chosen, contrair to *Mat. 22.14.* Hence. Q. 1. *Have Infants now under Christ no privi- Children -* ledge nor Covenant Grace externall by their birth and dissent *mult have* from their beleeving Parents? Ans. Sure they have. For *Aets 2.39.* the promise is to you and to your children. Either to all chil- *being born* of belee- *der the N.* dren *or to some*, the Text makes no exception. If it be said to all ving Pa- rents, un- *Test. some* not made to the aged but conditionally, so they beleeve. And yet Covenant the promise shall be made to Infants and Children, but not while priviledges they come to age. 2. To be cut off and casten out of Covenant is a dreadfull Judgement, *Zech. 11.9. Hof. 2.3,4,5. Rom. 11. 20.* well, because of unbelief they are broken off. Then because the Jewes beleeve in Christ already comed, all their children, for no fault, but for the beleef of their Parents, must be cut off. (3.) Whereas Paul makes it a misery that the *Ephesians, 2. 12.* were strangers from the Covenants of promise, saving no hope and without God, without Christ. And Peter, that the Gentiles were no people, *1 Pet. 2.* then that misery lies upon the Infants of Christians and all within the Visible Church, untill they be converted and baptized, and the Gospel is no favour to them, that they are within the net, and in the office-house of Grace the Visible Church, where

Children have Covenant priviledges PART I.

where the word is Preached to children, who are to be taught, Gen. 18.19. Deut. 6. 7. Exod. 12. 26, 27. Psal. 78. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7. 2 Tim. 3. 15. and the Lord reckons it among the favours, that hee bestowes not on every Nation, but onely on his owne Covenanted Israel, that the Word of the Gospel to gather them and their Children, Math. 23. 37. 2 Tim. 3. 15. Psal. 78. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. and his Statutes and his Judgments are declared and Preached to them, Psal. 147. 19, 20. Deut. 5. 1, 2, 3, 4. c. 6. 1, 2, 3, 4, 6, 7. Psal. 81. 4. and that the Oracles of God, and the promises are committed to them, Rom. 3. 1, 2. Rom. 9. 4. the promises and the giving of the Law, and the Covenants and the service of God. And that this is a special blessing in the New Testament to old and young is clear from Acts 13. when Paul turnes from the blaspheming Jewes to the Gentiles. 47. *I have set thee to be a light to the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation to the end of the earth.* Now this Covenant salvation is, Isa. 49. 6. *I wil give thee to restore the preserved of Israel. — 8. I will give thee for a Covenant to the people to establish the earth. — 9. That thou mayest say to the prisoners go forth, &c.* Now if it be said, it was indeed a singular priviledge to the Jews, but what places of the New Testament make it a Covenant priviledge to the Gentiles and their seed, if the Word of the Covenant Preached to the aged under the New Testament, can the same wayes, by accident, be Preached and promises come to the ears of the unbaptised Children, now growing to be capable of hearing the Gospel, Acts 2. 39. 2 Tim. 3. 15. as to Pagans, and such as are no lesse stranges to the Covenant, and void of all right by the Covenant made with their Parents, then Indians and their children who worship Satan? Paul not without command Preacheth the Word of the Covenant to the discerning Gentiles, Acts 13. 47. from Isa. 49: 6, 9, 10. must not the fathers have command to speak the Gospel to their children? Or doth not the warrant that Parents and Pastors have to take within the Covenant the fathers, warrant them to preach the same Covenant to the children? where as, otherwise the Apostles should have said, we have no warrant to offer the Covenant to any or to Preach Christ a given Covenant to any: But 1. To such as are come to age. 2. Such as are Converts. 3. To such as can give

It is a Covenant mercy to the fathers and children that the Word of the Covenant is preached to them.

name is preache

PART I. under the New Testament.

give signification by confession, that they are not onely visible but also invisible and chosen confederates, and they should have said all children are now by Christ excluded as prophanie Gentiles and beathen from the Covenant of Grace, because there can be none (say Anabaptists) but reall Believers under the New Testament in Covenant with God.

Yea but the New Testament offers Christ a Covenant, in the preached promises, alike to fathers and sons. Math. 4. 16. *The people (fathers and sons) that sate in darkness saw great light, &c.* Math. 19. 43. *Therefore I say unto you, the Kingdome of God shall be taken from you and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.* And is it not a punishment to be deprived of the Kingdome? If the Kingdome of God come where the Preached Covenant is, Math. 3. 2. Math. 12. 28. and the Bridegroom among them, and so cause of joy, Math. 9. 15. and the Golden Candlesticks be there and the Son of God walking in the midst of the Golden Candlesticks, Rev. 1. 20. c. 2. 1. sure this is much to children. If it be said, it is very nothing, for children understand nothing of this. What then is meant by the Prophecie of the incoming of the Gentiles, Psal. 87. 3. *Glorious things are spoken of thee, O city of God.* 4. *I will make mention of Rahab and Babylon to them that know me; behold Phylistia and Tyre, with E - thiopia, that man was born there.* 5. *And of Zion it shall bee said, this and that man was born in her.* 6. *The Lord shal count, when he writeth up the people, that this man was born there.* And Christ Prophecy of the desolation extends the judgement of a despised Covenant to the children and the house, Math. 23. 37-38. Luke 19. 44. Luke 22. 24. how should there be under the New Testament Covenant wrath, for the fathers Covenant breaking derived to the children, if in their fathers the fucking children brake not the Covenant, then they have been in Covenant with their parents, especially since a Visible Covenanting, by borrowed allusions to altars, speaking the language of Canaan, offering incense, swearing by the Lord, is spoken of Egypt and of five; that is, of many cities of Egypt, and of all the Gentiles, Isa. 19. 18, 19, 20. 21. Mal. 1. 18. and Covenant blessings shall be derived from fathers to children. The Lord shall say, 25. *Blessed be Egypt my people*

It is a
mercy to
be born in
Zion.

Children have Covenant privileges PART I.
 people, and *Affixia* the work of my hands, and *Israel* mine inheritance. It must be a narrow blessing of Covenanted Egypt, *Affixia, Israel*, if it be a blessing of these come to age. 2. Professing the faith. 3. And baptised. How can the Lord say, *blessed be Egypt*, and though the whole seed be visibly in Covenant, old and young, yet it followeth not that therefore every promise that is absolute, that is, that of a new heart is made to all and every one within the Visible Covenant: for it is promised, *Deut. 30. 6.* to the Jews, and was given to them and undeniably the visible body of the Jews and their seed were the chosen and externally Adopted and Covenanted people of God, *Deut. 29. 10, 11, 12, 13. Deut. 7. 6. Deut. 10. 19.* and the Lord calls them those whom he delivered out of *Egypt*, his people, *Exod. 3. 7.* I have seen the affliction of my people, *Ezek. 37. 12.* O my people, I will open your graves, as many as *Saul* and *David* did feed, whether they have a new heart or not, the Lord calls them his people, *1 Sam. 9. 16. 2. 2 Sam. 7. 8.* See *Psal. 50. 7.* Hear O my people, *Psal. 81. 13.* *Jer. 9. 26.* and so the Church of *Corinth*, *2 Cor. 16.* is called his people, and the Kingdomes of the world the *Lords Kingdomes* in Covenant, *Rev. 11. 15.* and there were many of them uncircumcised in heart, *Jer. 9. 26. Isa. 1. 10. Amos 9. 7.* and with many of them, God was not well pleased, *1 Cor. 10. 5.* and so it is most false that none are in Covenant under the New Testament, but only Believers; For *Judas, Demas, Simon Magus*, and all the externally called (for they cannot be baptized but as in Covenant with God) *Math. 22. 10.* are by their profession in Covenant externally, as the Jews profession saith they accepted of, and consented unto the Covenant of Grace, for *1 Cor. 10. 7.* Be not ye Idolaters as some of them, commit not fornication, tempt not Christ, murmur not, as some of them, v. 8. 9. these and the like say we are the same way in Covenant as they were and our Visible Church, now, and the Visible Church then are of the same constitution.

Q. And may we not say, that the same Covenant of Grace, we are under, is the same in nature and substance with that Covenant made with Abraham? Ans. The same Christ was their Mediator, as ours, *Heb. 13. 8.* their Rock and our Rock, Christ. *1 Cor. 10. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. Ioh. 8. 56.*

(2.) We

PART I. under the New Testament.

(2.) We are justified as *Abraham*, and *David*. *Rom. 4. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. Gen. 15. 6. Ps. 32. 1, 2.*

3. They were saved by Grace, the Gentiles as well as they, *Acts 15. 11.* by faith, *Acts 10. 43. Heb. 11. 1, 2, 3, 4, 13, &c.*

4. There is no more reason to say, it was a civil Covenant made with *Abraham*, because it distinguished *Abrahams* seed from other Nations, and an earthly Covenant, because *Canaan* was promised to them, not to us, then to say there be two Covenants of the Covenant of Works, one made to *Adam*, with a promise of an earthly Paradise, and another Covenant of Works to the Jews, with an earthly *Canaan*; And a third to these who in the Gospel time are under a Covenant of Works. Yea upon the same account, the Covenant of Grace made, *Psal. 89. 2 Sam. 7.* with *David*, having a Throne promised to him, should be yet another Covenant different from the other two; And since a Covenant here is a way of obtaining salvation up in condition of obedience, *John Baptist* should be under another Covenant of Grace, then the *Apostles*: For to their faith is promised the working of miracles, *Mark 16. 16, 17, 18.* But *John* wrought no miracles, and many thousands of believers work no miracles, and they must be under a third Covenant: For though *Canaan* was promised to *Abrahams* seed, there is no reason to call it an earthly Covenant, or another different covenant, for to all believers the blessings of their land are promised, *Ezek. 36. 25, 26, 30, 31. Jer. 31. 31.* compared with *38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43. Mat. 6. 31. Luke 12. 31. 1 Tim. 4. 8. Heb. 13. 5, 6.* 5. What if we say the Covenant made with *Abraham*, *Exod. 3.* proves by our Saviours reasoning, *Mat. 22. 31, 32, 33.* that Infants shall not rise again and be in Angel state and saved, otherwise if Infants and all believers in the *Saducees* time be not under the same Covenant with *Abraham*, no Infants shall have a Covenant-Resurrection, nor a Covenant-Salvation; Or then there is some other salvation for Infants that are saved, to wit, some Pagan heaven without the Covenant, and without Christ, and if Infants be Pagans without the Covenant, either none of them are saved and chosen to life. Contrair to Christ, *Mat. 18. 2, 3, 4. Mark 10. 13, 14, 15, 16.* and the Anabaptists grant. Or there is a salvation i without a Covenant, and so without the New and Old Testament. 2. Without

L

the

Faith sanctifieth

PART. I.
the Name of Jesus and the Blood of the Covenant: Contrair to *Acts 4.12. 1 Job.1.8. Rev. 1. 5.* (3.) they shall be saved without the Visible Church, the way that Pagans are saved.

Q. 3. Are they not saved all of them? Is not this enough? But because the Kingdom of Christ is spirituall, the Element of water can do them no good, except they beleeve?

Ans. If his Kingdom be not spirituall, because his wisedom hath appointed external signes, then no promise (which is but good words) shall be made to Children, contrair to *Acts 2. 39.* for

The New they can do them no good untill they beleeve. 2. Then should Test. King. there be no Preaching of the Gospel to all Nations, as *Mat. 28. dome of 20.* for impossible it is that all Nations can be profited by the Go-
CHRIST is spiritu-
all, though to be under the Gospel Preached and the dispensation of signes and
there be in seals, even to the aged, such as are Baptism, the Supper, rebukes,
it external censures. 4. To be a visible member, and visibly in Covenant, and
signes and
seals.

Now certain, it is a new Testament Ordinance that Ministers Preach and baptize all nations, though the greatest part beleeve not.

How faith does sancti- **Q. 4.** If faith sanctifie as faith, then an unbelieveing Whore might be sanctified by a believing fornicator: For faith will do its formall work in every subject?

Answ. Paul never meant that faith doth sanctifie in every sub-
ject, but in *subjecto capaci.* Faith sanctifieth not incest and sin, husband, they are not capable to be separated to a holy use: If fire as fire burn, then might all the water in the Ocean be dried up with the least sparkle of fire. If prayer as prayer obtain all things, shall it obtain that the sacrificing of your son to God, shall be accepted of him as holy and lawfull worship? Mr. Baxter saith excellently upon this subject. A thing must be first lawfull, before it be

Mr. Rich. **Baxter,** **plain Scri-** **1 Cor. 7.** sanctified; God sanctifieth not sin in, or to any. See the Argument learnedly and solidly vindicated by him, so as the dispute preareproof is at an end now.

for Infant Baptism. **Q. 5.** What holiness is it that is called federal, or Covenant holiness which is in Infants?

Arg. on **1 Cor. 7. p.** **• 8, 99.** **Ans.** It is not so much personall holinessse (though it may so be)

PART. I.*federal holinessse.*

be called, because the person is a Church member, separated from *Offederal the world to God* as holinessse of the seed, Society, Family, or *holinessse.* Nation, which is derived from father to son, as if the father be a free man of such a City, that priviledge is so personall, as it is by the Law hereditarie freedome derived from father to son, if the father have *jus ad media salutis* right to the means of salvation, so bath the son. Hence this was first domestical, God made the Covenant with *Abraham* and his family: *I will be thy God, and the God of thy seed, Gen. 17.* it was extended to him, not as a father only, but as to the head of the family; the children of Servants born in *Abrahams* family were to be circumcised and to be instructed as having right to the means of salvation. *Gen. 17. 12. He that is eight dayes old shall be circumcised among you, every man-child in your Generations* (to it is Generation-holinessse) *he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, that is not of thy seed.* So God shewes clearly that in *Abraham* he choosed the Nation and the house, *Gen. 18. 19. I know Abraham, that he will command his children* (that is too narrow a Church Visitle) and his household after him, that they shall keep the Way of the Lord. 2. Afterward he choosed the Nation to be a peculiar people holy to himself, *Deut. 7. 6, 7.* but not with another new distinct Covenant, but in the same Covenant. 8. But because the Lord loved you, and would keep the oath that he had sworn to your fathers, to wit, to *Abraham. Deut. 10. 15. He chose their seed after them, even you, above all people, not above all houses.* Amos 3.2. You only have I known of all the families of the earth. So the external Church Covenant and Church right to the means of grace is given to a society and made with Nations under the heirs of New Testament, *Isa. 2.1, 2, 3. Psal. 2.8, 9. Psal. 22.27. Psal. 87. glory.* 2, 3, 4. *Rev. 11. 15. Matth. 28. 19, 20.* And not any are baptized in the New Testament, (except the *Eunuch*, and *Saul, Acts 8. 39.*) who were baptized firstly, but they were baptized as publick men representing a seed; also, societies are baptized. All *Judea, Mat. 3. 3. All the land of Judea, Mark 1. 5. All the multitude, all the people, Luke 4.7. 21.* Sure the fathers were so Christianed and Baptized as their children had right to the same seal. So *Job. 3.22, 23, 26. Cornelius his house and all with him were baptized;*

Acts 10.33.47. Three thousand at once, *Acts 2.39,40,41.* The Jayler and his house, *Acts 16.33.* servants and friends. The What fede. household of *Stephanus*, *1 Cor.1.16.* was Baptized. And this general holines is holden forth as the Church, as the household of *Narcissus* which is. *are in the Lord, Rom.16.11.* *Aquila and Priscilla, and all the Church at their house. v.5.* *The Church at the house of Philemon, Phil.v.8.* which teacheth that the Covenant holiness is of societies and houses under the New Testament as in *Abrahams* house, and as *Abrahams* house was Circumcised, so are whole houses under the New Testament Baptized. 4. *Paul* aptly calls it the holiness of the lump, or Nation, and the first fruits, root-holiness, the holiness of the root and the branches. Of the Olive Tree and the branches, *Rom. 11.16,17.* (5.) The speciaill intent of God in sending the word of the Covenant must evidence this; he sends not the Gospel unto, and for the cause of one man, to bring him in, but to gather a Church and his elect ones, by a visibly and audibly Preached Covenant to a society, to a City; to *Samaria*. *Act 8.* To the *Gentiles*, *Acts 13.* To all Nations, *Mat. 28.19,20.* that they and their children may have right to salvation and to the means thereof, and to the Covenant, and therefore we are not curiously to inquire whether the faith of the father be real or not, if the Gospel be come to the Nation, to the House, to the Society. The Lord in one *Abraham*, in one *Cornelius*, in one *Jayler*, (whom he effectually converts as far as we can gather from the Scriptures) choises the race, house, society, nation, and gives them a Covenant-holiness, the mans being born where the call of God is, does the turn, as much as the faith of the Parent. For by the root is not necessarily meant the Physicall root the father. For born where *Abraham* was not the Physicall root and father, nor *Cornelius* the Gospel of all the servants and friends in the house. But if a friend be in that nation & race, is right to Baptism and the means of salvation. But as touching real the ground holiness, it is not derived from a believing father, to make the son a believer, Scripture and experience say the contrair. Nor *is internall and effectuall confederacie with God, that, by which one is a son of promise, Rom.9.* and predestinate to life, a nationall favour. For no man is chosen to life in his father, because the father is rest parents chosen:

chosen: A chosen father may have a reprobate son. 2. Election onto life is not of nations or houses or societies, but of single persons. It is not said, before the nation had done good or evill, I chose this nation all and whole, not this, but I loved this man, not this man.

Q. What is the formall reason and ground that any hath right to Baptism?

Anf. If we speak of a passiue right, if the *Eunuch* beleeve, *Act. 8.* and if such have received the Spirit, *Act 10.* they may receive baptism. The *Eunuch* moves not the Question whether *Philip* should sin in baptizing him or not. The *Eunuch* was troubled to make sure his own, not *Philip's* Conversion. They who bring that Argument, *Act 8.* and that, *Mark 16.* to prove that only such should be baptized, who beleeve actually and are come to age: They prove that the Church sinneth, if they baptize any, but such as are predestinated to life and really beleeve. *Act 8. 37.* For the faith that *Philip* asked for, was reall, *with all the heart,* *is real saving faith, Mar.16.16* not as the faith of *Simon Magus*: And the faith, *Mark 16.15.* is not visible only.

2. It can not be visible faith only, for that is in *Simon Magus*, he doth visibly so beleeve and is baptized. Yet upon that faith he was not saved, being in the gall of bitterness (3.) *He that believes not, is damned.* The meaning must be, he that believes not savingly is damned: Or then he that believes not visibly, as *Magus*, and *Judas*, is damned, but this is most false, for *Peter* believes not as *Judas*, and yet he is not damned: Or then the meaning must be, he that believeth both really, savingly, and also professedly and visibly, is saved. And that is true, but it concludes that none are to be baptized, but both real and visible believers. 4. If it be true that none are to be baptized but Covenanted ones, as *Acts 2.39.* And if none be Covenanted ones under the New Testament, but real believers and such as are predestinated to life, as our Anabaptists teach from *Rom. 9.* then must the Church without warrant of the Word baptize *Magus*, *Demus*, *Judas*. (5.) Then must also all Judea; all the Generations of vipers baptized have been both real and visible believers, for they were all baptized, *Mat. 3.3,4.* *Mark 1.5.* *Luke 1.7.21.* Let Independents consider this, and what *D. Fulk*, and *Mr. Cartwright*:

*The place, Act. 2.32. for**PART. I.*

Wright, Parens, Calvin, Beza; and our Divines speak on these places against the auricular confession of all the huge multitude. (6.) It is a wonder that any man should dream that the Eunuch made a case of conscience, *Act. 8.* whether it was lawfull to *Philip* to baptize, and not whether he himself did beleeve and could worthily receive the seal, *Act. 8. 36.* here is water (saith he) *τίχανει μὲς θαύμων*. (7.) So none can warrantably baptize any but persons dying in faith, and its not certain these have the faith that is, *Act. 8.37. Mar. 16.16.* But for the formall warrand of

The formal ground of baptizing. such as baptize: neither are the aged as the aged, nor Infants as Infants to be baptized; for so all the aged and all Infants even of Pagans are to be baptized. Nor 2. are all in Covenant, to be baptized: For such as are only really and invisibly in Covenant, and do make no profession of Christ at all, are not warrantably by the Church to be baptized. Only these whether old or young that are, *tali modo visibili federati*, such as professedly and vitilly in Covenant, and called, *Act. 2. 39.* are warrantably baptized. Hence they must be so in Covenant, as they be called by the word of the Covenant, for they cannot be baptized against their will, *Luke 7. 29. 30.*

Q. What warrand is there, Act. 2.39. for Infant Baptisme?

Ans. I shall not contend for the actuall baptizing of them at that instant. *But every one of you be baptized inasos* father and sons. Why? the promise is to you and to your children, break the Text into an hundred pieces, and blood it as men please, the Genuine Thesis which cannot be neglected, is, *These to whom the promise of the Covenant does belong, these should be baptized, επαγγελλεται*. But the promise of the Covenant is to you and to your children.

These to *Ergo*, you and your children should be baptized. The assumption whom the is the expresse words of Peter and the Proposition is Peters. promise is *Every one of you be baptized, διανοησιν* for to you is the made promise of the Covenant. *Calvin, Bullinger, Brenius, Gualther* should be clear it. 2. Who they are, who are in the nearest capacity to be baptized.

But the promise is made to these who are far off, to the Gentiles, whom made to the Lord shall call, then all that are under the call and offer of children, Christ in the Preached Gospel, as *Prov. 9. 1, 2, 3, 4. Math. 22. 14.* bid

PART. I. infants Baptisme considered.

bid them come to the wedding, Luke 14. 16, 17, 18. &c. are externally in Covenant, and such to whom the Covenant is made, and should be baptized, its presumed they give some professed consent to the call and do not right down deny to come, else they should be baptized against their will. 3. *Calvins* shewes *Act. 2. 39.* that the *Anabaptists* in his time, said, *the promise was made to Believers only*, but the Text saith, *it is made to you and to your children*, to infants, to the children of the Prophets and of the Covenant made with the fathers, *Act. 3. 25.* Now what ground doe *Anabaptists* give that all infants believe, or that some believe since to them, their children were as *Pagans without Christ*, without the Covenant? if to the children when they come to age and shall believe? but what need to adde, and to your believing *Children*? for these are not children but men of age, their fathers and they both being believers. Now *Peter* sets down two ranks, the aged who heard the word with gladness, and were pricked in heart, v. 37. 41. and the children, and to both the promise is made, and what ground is their to exclude sucking children? for the word, *Act. 2. 39.* is *Math. 2. 18. 1 Cor. 7. 14.* where sure the word is taken for sucking children of whose actuall faith the Scripture speaks not. 2.

The promise is to you and to your children, can have no other sense then, the promise and word of the Covenant is preached to you of the and to your children in you, and this is to be externally in Covenant, both under the Old and New Testament. If it have another sense it must be this, *the Lord hath internally Covenanted with you and to you the 3000 who have heard the word and with your children, and your children are the spirituall seed, and sons of promise, predestinate to life eternall*: as *Rom. 9.* they expone the seed in Covenant: But 1. Were all the 3000 *Ananias and Saphira* and their children the spirituall and chosen seed? for he commands all, whom he exhorts to repent, to be baptized: And 2. Now to *Simon Magus* and *Demas*, and numbers of such, *Peter* could not have said, *the promise is made to you and to your children*, if it be only made to real and actuall believers, as they say, *Peter* therefore must owne them all whom he exhorts to repent, as the chosen seed. But if the former sense be intended (as how can it be denied?) to wit, the word of the Covenant is preached to you, an offer of Christ

The place, Act. 2. 39. for

is made in the preached Gospel to you. Then it cannot be denied, but the promise is to all the Reprobate in the Visible Church whether they believe or not, for Christ is preached and promises of the Covenant are preached to *Simon Magus*, to *Judas* and all the Hypocrites who stumble at the Word, to all the *Pharisees*, as is clear, *Math. 13. 20, 21, 22, 23.* *Acts 13. 44, 45.* *Acts 18. 5, 6.* *Math. 21. 43.* *1 Pet. 2. 7, 8.* (3.) The promise, I will be your God, and are in Co- ye shall be my people, must be one way expounded in the Old Te- venant stament, to wit, you are externally only in Covenant with God. But in the New Testament, it must have this meaning, I will be your under the New Te- God, *2 Cor. 6. 16.* that is, you are all predestinate to life, and the stament, al sons, by promise, and the spirituall seed, to whom I say, I will be the King- your God: But so it may well be said, there were no internall Co- domes of venanters in the Old Testament, and there be none but only inter- the world, nall Covenanter in the New Testament, so that when the Lord which are the Lords sayeth, *Rev. 11. 15.* The Kingdomes of the earth are mine, and and Christ's, my sons. He must say, the Kingdomes, *Egypt, Assyria, Tyrus,* *Rev. 11. 15.* *Ethiopia, &c.* are chosen and the spirituall seed, and these Cove- must be nanted Nations and the Kingdomes of the Gentiles are all in- believers & ternally and effectually called, and there are no Visible Churches internally and effectually called, and there are no Covenants in the New Test. but only all invisible and saved. 4. If these in- cove- nant with words, The promise is to you, and to your children, be limited, to God. as many as the Lord shall effectually call, either fathers or children. How these But Mr. Stev. Marshel judiciouslie observes; there is no more a words, and Covenant-favour holden forth to their children, then to the chil- to your chil- dren are not dren of Pagans; for the children of Pagans, if God effectually call them, have the promises made to them. 5. Its clear that exter- nall Covenant-holiness, is to these men ceremoniall holiness now out of date; and then externall calling the only means of internall and effectuall calling, *Math. 22. 14.* *1 Cor. 1. 18. 23, 24.* *Luke 15. 1, 2.* and the fixed Church-hearing of the Preached Gospel is a ceremony. 2. That God should be the God of Infants of the seed of the Jews, a mercie to fathers and sons coming from free love, *Covenan-* *Deut. 10. 15.* *Gen. 17. 7.* *Deut. 7. 6. 7. 8.* and Prophesied as a meet- ting & the blessing of the Gospel Preached to the Nation, is but a Ceremony to the opposers of Infant baptism, contrair to all ancient Prophesies, *Isa. 6. 2. c 19* *Jer. 23. 1. Isa 1. 6. &c.*

PART. I. for Infant Baptism, considered.

89
cy to the Gentiles by all the Prophets was a ceremony removed now in Christ. Yea 3. externall Covenanting, and adopting, and choising of Israel is no mercy, except that a Pedagogie of the Law is a mercy for a time. 4. The promise is to you and to your children, must be in a contradictorie way expounded, to wit, the promise is no more made to your children so long as they are Infants, then to Devils. Yea fathers and children not beleeving, though chosen to life, are excommunicated from Visible adoption, calling, hearing the Gospel promises, for there is no Covenanting now under the New Testament, but only internall Covenanting of the elect. 5. Young *Timothy* and children of ~~having~~ Parents, If there be and all the aged within the Visible Church, have no right to hear no Covenanting the Preached Gospel, before they beleieve and be the holy seed, more then Pagans. Yea 6. they can have no command of God, to hear the Gospel, nor any Covenant or Gospel warrant, untill they be believers, for if there were no promise made to hearing and considering the word, if they shall beleieve, while as yet they believe not, and untill they be effectually called, there can be no command, and no Law, to hear the Gospel and the Covenant-offer made in Christ. It shall then be no more sin for unconverted persons to turn away their ears from the Law, and not to hear the Gospel. 7. It were non-sense to say to men under the externally proposed Covenant, repent, hear the Gospel, use the means, receive the seals, and yet you have no right to hear, nor have we any warrant to baptize you, untill ye beleieve; for there is no promise made to you, nor to your seed and children, untill first you beleieve. And it must say there was no threatening to Adam, *Gen. 2. 17.* before he sinned, and no promise to Adam nor to any now, do this and live, untill Adam first sinned, and first obeyed the Covenant; and so, if John Covenant to labour in Peters Vineyard, and Peter promise to him four pence, so he work twelve hours, otherwise he shall not pay him four pence, though John accept of the Covenant, and work but one hour, whereas his Covenant is to work for twelve hours, then no man can say to John (work, for there is a promise made of four pence to you) the other might deny; no such promise was made to me, except I work twelve hours. It were, sure, unfaithfull dealing to John to say M so.

Infants are under the Covenant of Grace.

PART. I.

so. For the four pence ought not, by this Covenant, to be given to him, except he work twelve hours: but he cannot, without palpable falsehood, say, I have broken no Covenant, in not working twelve hours: For though I consented to the Covenant, and began to work an hour, yet the promise was not to me simply, but to me as working twelve hours; but there is neither face nor faith in this Answer: For the fulfilling of the Covenant is only to give four pence to *John*, if he work twelve hours; But the promise and compleat Covenant was made to him, and he hath foully broken. Yea a conditional Covenant agreed unto and accepted, is a Covenant, if we shall (as in reason we ought) distinguish between a Covenant, and they are truly in a Covenant or threatening, is a Covenant and threatening oblidging *Adam*, if it shall be agreed unto, by silence, as *Adam* accepted the threatening, *Gen. 2. 17.* by silence, and Professours within the Visible Church, by their profesting of the Doctrine of the Gospel or Covenant of Grace, their receiving of the seals and professed hearing of the Word, are under the Covenant of Grace, and engadge themselves to obey commands, promises, threatenings, and therefore promises are as properly made to them, *Acts 2. 39.* as commands, and threatenings, exhortations, invitations, and Gospel requests are made to them. But tho the *Anabaptists* ignorantly confound the promise, and the thing promised; the Covenant, and benefits Covenanted. *The promise is to you*, and so are the commands, & threatenings, whether ye beleeeve or not, the command is to you, and layes an obligation on you, whether ye obey or obey not, and the threatenings are to you, whether ye transgres, or transgresse not. It is true, indeed, the promise, that is, the blessing promised, righteousness and eternall life is not given to you, untill ye first beleeeve. *Object.* Is not the promise made the same way to the aged as to the children, and the same thing required of both: *The promise is to you and to your children.* But the promise is made to the aged only, if they actually beleeeve. Ergo, the promise is made to the children only, if they actually beleeeve, and so not to Infants. *Answe.* Neither proposition nor assumption can bear weight. For the proposition, when God saith, *I will be thy God O Abraham, and the God of thy seed.* Is it needfull

PART. I. *though they actually beleeeve not.*

full that God require the same conditions, that is actuall beleeeving, that he may save Father *Abraham*, and also actuall beleeeving from hearing the word of the Covenant Preached from all Infants born of *Abraham* and dying in Infancy, or then all these Infants so dying must be eternally damned? Nay. We beleeeve many Infants (we reserve to the Holy and Glorious Lord his liberty of election and reprobation, *Rom. 9. 11, 12.*) among the Jews were saved by the Covenant of Grace, though they died Infants. And this we condemn in *Anabaptists*, that they show no revealed way of God of saving Infants of beleeeving Parents dying in Infancy, more then *Anabaptists* of saving Pagans and their Infants, for to them both are alike without the Covenant of Grace and without Christ; and therefore beleeeving Parents have no word of faith or of the Gospel to pray for salvation by Law or by Gospel, or the salvation of their Children dying in Infancie, for such prayers by *Jesus* have neither warrant in the Covenant of Works, nor in the Covenant of Grace, by their way. And yet that we are to pray, is to be gathered from *Gen. 19. 8.* *2 Sam. 12. 16.* *Job 1. 5.* *Mark 10. 16.* *Psal. 28. 9.* and if we pray for their salvation, they must be saved by either Law or Gospel. Its not enough, to say that parents, we may pray for savages that never heard of the Gospel, nor of the more then Covenant of Grace, that they may be saved. For seeing there is no name under Heaven by which men may be saved, but by the Name of Jesus, *Acts 4. 12.* *Job. 14. 6.* There is no other warrant of praying for such, then that God would send them the Gospel; and since Christ prayed for Infants and blessed them, which is a praying for them, *Gen. 48. 15, 16.* *Deut. 33. 1. 6, 7, 8. &c.* *Eph. 1. 2.* *Gal. 1. 3.* *1 Cor. 1. 2.* *2 Tim. 1. 3.* See *Mar. 10. 16.* he must own them as blessed in Christ in whom all the Nations of the earth are blessed, and so Covenanted with God in Christ.

2. It is false that the promise is made only to the aged, upon condition of actuall beleeeving. 1. It is made to their children expressly in the Text, and for the way of their beleeeving, we leave it to the Lord. Nor is it true, that the promise is made to the aged, made to upon condition of beleeeving. The promise is made to them absolutely, whether they beleeeve or not. But the blessing of the promise and Covenant of Grace is given and bestowed only upon the aged condition nally, of belie- ving.

*How visible professours and Infants**PART. I.*

nally, if they believe. The promise is absolutely made: its called conditionall from the thing conditionally given.

Obj. But is not this an approven distinction, that persons are within the Covenant, either externally, professedly, visibly, or internally, really, or according to the intention of God? Ergo, such as are externally within the Covenant, are not really & indeed within the Covenant of Grace.

Ans. The Adverb (*really*) relates to the reall fruit of the fulfilled Covenant, and so such as are only externally within the

How vi. Covenant, are not really within the Covenant, for God never dispensable professed, nor intended to bestow the blessing Covenanted, nor grace fessors are to perform the condition of the Covenant upon them? But they really with in the Co- are really Covenanted and engadged by their consented profession venant, & to fulfill the Covenant. And as the commands and threatnings of not really the Covenant of Grace lay on a reall obligation, upon such as are within it, only externally in Covenant, either to obey or suffer, so the promise of the Covenant imposes an ingagement and obligation upon such to believe the promise, but some times, we say the promises of the Covenant of Grace are not *really* made to the Reprobate within the Visible Church, because God intends and decrees to, and for them, neither the blessing promised, nor the saving grace to fulfill the condition or to believe. And therefore these words are figurative, *Heb. 8.10.* This is the Covenant that I will make with the house of Israel, I will write my Law in their minds, &c. that is, this is the speciall and principall Covenanted blessing, I will give them a new heart: which must not be called a simple prediction, though a prediction it is, but it is also a real promise made absolutely to the elect, which the Lord fulfills in them: And this is called the Covenant. Because 1. they are no better then non-Covenanters upon whom the Lord bestowes not this part and blessing of the Covenant. 2. The truth is, the promise of a new heart is not made to the Visible Church, which is only Visible: but to the Elect and Invisible Church. And if Anabaptists shall expone these words, *Acts 2.39.* The promise of a new heart is made to you and to your children, upon condition that you and your children believe, which they cannot do untill first they have a new heart, its as good as Peter had said, God promiseth to you and

*PART. I.**are really in Covenant.*

and to your children grace to believe, and a new heart to obey him, upon condition that you first believe. And that is, Gods promise The new to you to believe upon condition that ye believe, which is ridiculous, heart is not and therefore we cannot say that this promise of a new heart is promised made to all that are commanded to believe and repent and be baptised. For Elect and Reprobate and all are under these commands, if they be members of the Visible Church: But the promise of a new heart is not made to all within the Visible Church.

Quest. How then? Must the promise of a new heart be here excluded? And shall nothing be meant in the Word, but a promise of forgivenesse and life is made to you and your Children.

Ans. I should judge it hard, to say, that were the only promise here made, the promise of a new heart is made to you all, therefore repent and be baptized. The Antecedent is not true, 2. promised, Therefore because Peter speaks unto, and of a mixed multitude, Fathers, Children, Elect and Reprobate, who must first understand, whether a new heart be therein or excluded. the promise of life and forgivenesse is made to you. Ergo, all come to age, repent and be baptized. And because the promise is made to your children, therefore let them be baptized. And 3. the promise of new heart is not to be excluded, because there were in the company to whom, and of whom the Apostle Peter speaks, many Elect, in whom the old Prophesie, *Jer. 31. Ezek. 11.* was to be fulfilled; For he saith, The promise is made to as many as the Lord shall call; to the Gentiles, it were a fense too narrow, to exclude that promise, and therefore, as the great promise, I will be thy God, and the God of thy seed (which chiefly is meant, *Acts 2.39.*) requires not the same condition in fathers and infants, nor the same condition in fathers, wives, hewers of wood, Officers and Commanders, little ones, and such as were not born, *Deut. 29.* with whom the Covenant is made: For the same faith in fathers and in infants, and faith working in the same duties cannot be required of husbands, wives, Magistrates, and hewers of wood) so neither is the promise made the same way to fathers, children, Jews near hand, and Gentiles farre off, to Elect and Reprobate.

Q. How can the promise of the Covenant, to write the Law in the

In what sense the promise of a new heart is made, and to whom.

PART. I.
the heart, be made absolutely, and not to the Reprobate, but to the Elect only? For the Elect are only these to whom that promise is made, and yet the Reprobate are really in the Covenant of Grace, and the promise is made to them, as hath been said.

Mercies of the Covenant. It is no inconvenient that the Reprobate in the Visible Church, be so under the Covenant of Grace, as some promises are made to them, and some mercies promised to them conditionally, not alike and some reserved speciall promises of a new heart, and of perseverance belong not to them. For all the promises belong not the same way, to the parties visibly and externally, and to the parties internally and personally in Covenant with God. So the Lord promises in co-miseth life and forgivenesse shall be given to these who are externally in the Covenant, providing they beleieve, but the Lord promises not a new heart and grace to beleieve, to these that are only externally in Covenant. And yet he promiseth both to the Elect.

Hence the Covenant must be considered two ways, *in abstracto* and formally, in the letter as a simple way of saving sinners, so they venant of believe, so all within the Visible Church are in the Covenant of Grace, and so it contains only *the will of precept*. 2. In the *concreto*, as the Lord caries on the Covenant in such and such a way, commensurably with the decrees of Election and Reprobation; As the Lord not only promises, but acts and ingraves the Law in the heart, commensurably with his decree of Election, so the Elect only are under the Covenant of Grace. The word tells of no condition or work, or act to be performed by any, which if he do he shall have a new heart: and therefore the promise of the *ingraven Law in the heart*, is not a simple promise made to the Covenanter as Covenanters, for so it should be a promise to all visible Covenanters (for visible Covenanters are essentially Covenanters) but it is both a promise and a prediction, yea a reall execution or an efficacious way of fulfilling the decree of Election to such and such and as chosen, and specially loved of God Covenanters.

The new heart is promised to such special Covenanters as Covenanters, for so it should be a promise to all visible Covenanters (for visible Covenanters are essentially Covenanters) but it is both a promise and a prediction, yea a reall execution or an efficacious way of fulfilling the decree of Election to such and such and as chosen, and specially loved of God Covenanters.

2. A new heart hath a twofold consideration, one as a duty commanded. 2. As a blessing promised, as to the former, Ezech. 18. 31. make you a new heart and a new spirit, Jer. 4. 4. Circumcise your heart to the Lord, take away the foreskin of your heart,

PART. I. is made, and to whom.

heart, ye men of Judah, Eph. 4. 23. be renewed in the Spirit of The new your minde, Eph. 4. 14. Awake thou that sleepest and rise from the heart is dead, these are either bare commands, without any Gospel strength considered as a duty given to obey, and so they are legall commands in the letter ob-blidging all visible Covenanters to obedience, and so, all Letter ded. And all Law, no Gospel strength to performe speaks poor uninixed as a bles-sing freely Law. In this case, God repeats and craves back again from broken men a sound heart, which they sinfully lost in Adam, and may justly seek heart conformitie to his holy Law from all men. Or then these commands are backed with Gospel strength to obey, and so they are both commands and blessings promised, as Jer. 31. 33. This my Covenant (a Covenant and something more) shall bee — I will put my Law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts — 34. Ezech. 11. 19. Ezech. 36. 26. Heb. 8.6, 10, 11. so the more strength promised the more Gospel. Neither is there any inconvenience, to say that the Reprobate visible Covenanters are not thus, as touching the speciall promises of a new some spe-heart and perseverance of the Saints, really in the Covenant of cial promise.

Q. Who are they, who are to believe God shall give them a new heart Ans. No man is positively to believe it while God work it in him, for no man is to believe that he is predestinated to Glorie, while he first have the effects thereof in him, the hid Manna, the white Stone, the new Name. But no man is to despise or to create fatall inferences that he is Reprobate, since God begins kindly with him with a Gospel call.

CHAP. X I I I .

Considerations of the Arguments from Gen. 17. Mark 10. 15, 16. Luke 18. Math. 19. Rom. 11. for Infant Baptisme.

If God be the God of Abraham and of his seed, Gen. 17. therefore every male child shall be entered in the Covenant, by the initiall

initiall seal of Circumcision , and so women also who eat the Passe. over, which the uncircumcised might not do : and Peter was sent to the Circumcision , that is , to all the Jews men and women, and so the women is some way in the men , and they might be circumcised in them upon the same gound, because the same promise is

How the made to fathers and to children, must infants be baptized, *Acts 2, Lords Ar. gument for 39.* 1. This is the Lords own Argument , *Gen. 17. 7.* there were Circumci- multitudes of differences between Circumcision and Baptisme as sion sits us we grant , bat in the substance nature and Theologicall essence, and for Bip- tisme. in the formall effects they are the same. We grant that Christ re-

vealed in Types , Sacrifices , to come , darkly offered may differ from Christ as clearly offered Preached without these already abolished shaddows and who is now come. Yet he is the same Saviour to them who believed in him then and now, *Act. 10. 43.* *Act. 15. 11.* And we 2. argue not simply from the letter of the Covenant. *I am your God. Ergo, be baptized,* for one might reply. *I am your God. Ergo, offer such beasts to me , it shall not follow , But I am your God, and the God of your seed offering to you the same Christ and righteousnesse that was offered to Abraham in the same Covenant : Ergo , all of you be baptized who are under the same Covenant. For,*

1. Circumcision of the flesh was a seal of the Circumcision of the heart promised in the Covenant of Grace, *Deut. 30. 6.* and of the cutting of the foreskin thereof, *Jer. 4. 4.* *Jer. 9. 26.* *Ezech. 36. 26, 27.* and baptisme is the same , *Col. 2. 11, 12.* *Tit. 3. 5.*

2. Circumcision is a seal of the righteousnesse of faith, *Rom. 4. 11.* so is baptisme , as *1 Pet. 3. 21.* *Rom. 4. 24.*

3. Circumcision is a seal of the Covenant , and by a metonymie called the Covenant of God in the flesh , *Gen. 17. 7, 13.* so is baptisme a solemn intalling of all Samaria , *Acts 8.* in the Christian Covenant , and so *Acts 2. 39.*

4. Circumcision is a solemne way of instituting any in the Church of Israel , so we are by one Spirit baptized into one body, *1 Cor. 12. 12, 13.*

1. The command of Circumcising is as large as Covenanting, but that is with Abraham the father, and his seed, *Acts 2. 39.* make the command of being Baptized, *in assoe every one of you be Bap-*

zed, as large as the promise of the Christian Covenant, and call : For the promise is to you and to your children, and to as many as the Lord shall call.

2. The command supposes that all the Circumcised, the males of eight dayes old understand not the promise of the Covenant, A compa- the nature, use, signification, and end of the seal, and the command to be baptized, suppose that the children to whom the Covenant command promise is made do not understand the same as touching baptisme of Circum- cision, and the Covenant promise, *Acts 2.39.*

3. If the positive command be generall that all these in Covenant should be marked with the initiatorie seal of the Covenant : As

Gen. 17.7,8. I am thy God, and the God of thy seed : Therefore old and young be Circumcised, then there was no other command in particular, to baptize old or young, but the institution of Baptisme in place of Circumcision needfull. As touching the application of it to persons, old or young, except the ground of exterrnall Covenanting stand as warranting to administrate the seal to all, so Covenanted; Yea, and if there be a positive command and war- rand in the New Testament to tender the Seal of Baptism to none but to the aged, that can give an account of their faith, and do actually beleeve ; then should there be an expresse command in the New Testament concerning Baptism as concerning the Lords Supper, that every one before they be Baptized, try and examine them- selves whether they savingly beleieve or not, before they be Ba- ptized, otherwise they receive their own damnation, as in the Lords Supper, for self judging and self examination, if actuall beleeveng there shuld and being internally in Covenant, as these in whose heart and in- ward part the Law of Grace mult be engraven, be the necessary condition required in all these to whom the Church can warrantably tender Baptism as the seal of the Covenant : And we require a positive command in the New Testament, see that ye Baptize none all before though they profess they be in Covenant, except such as can try they be- and examine whether they savingly beleieve or not : and here A- ptized nabaptisit must flee to the conseqences of the Word and reasons drawn from the Covenant of Grace, as well as we, and an express command they cannot flee unto, nor is it in Old or New Testament: It should not move us, that Infants understand neither command

*The absurdities that follow from the**PART. I.*

nor seal, nor Covenant, for the Argument is against the Holy Ghost, and they are obliged to answer it; for Infants are as ignorant of the promises the speciall mysteries of the Gospel, as of Precepts of the Gospel. And yet the promises of the Covenant of Grace are exprely to Infants of the New Testaments *Acts 2. 39.* promise, *newcovenant.* The Gospel promise made to *Abraham, Gal. 3.16.* The Gospel and promise of righteousness of the Spirit of Life, *Gal.3.17,18,22,29. 23.28. Gal.6.2. Rom.4.13.16.20. Rom. 9.8. 1 Tim.4.8. Heb.4.1. Heb.6.12,15. Heb. 8.6. Heb. 9. 14. 1 John 5.1.* is made *to your children* to your Infants, if they believe (say they) 1. Can Infants actually believe? 2. Is not the promise so made to Turks, if they believe?

But it were an easier way to Anabaptists to say, infants under the New Testament are externally in Covenant, where as Parents believe, and members of the Church are followed with Covenant mercy, only because they understand not, and the administration is more spirituall under the New Testament, and faith more urged,

How many wicked onerous, more, truely, in women with child, virgins, diseased persons, in winter, in cold countreys, against the word, the second Command, the third, the fourth, the sixth, the seventh, then that it needs to be refuted) it being only a ceremony which they may well want. But now Infants of believers are casten out, for no fault, of the Covenant of Grace.

(2.) From Covenant mercy to the thousand Generation. Contrair to *Gen.17.7. Exod. 20.5.*

(3.) From Covenant-prayers and Church-prayers: Contrair to *1 Sam.12.. Ps.28.9. Ps.67.1,2. Ps.103.4,5.*

(4.) From the blessing of the Lords Covenant-presence, who dwels in the Nation, in the Kingdom, *Ps. 135.21. Ps. 132.13,14. Rev.11.15. Isa. 19.25. Isa. 2.1,2,3. 2 Cor. 6.16. I will dwell in them, and walk in them, and be their God, and they shall be my people. 18. And I will be a father to you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord God Almighty.* Though this be spoken to all the Covenanted people of God, yet are Infants *casten out of the bosome of a Covenant Father and God?*

(5.) Infants

PART. I. excluding of Infants from the Covenant of Grace.

(5.) Infants are debarred from Covenant-calling and gathering inunder the wings of Christ: Contrair to *Matth. 28. 19, 20. Matth. 23.37. Psal.147.19,20.* and excluded from Gods Covenant-choise: Contrair to *Deut.7.6,7,8,9. 13,14. Deut. 10.15.* and left being heirs of wrath, a prey to Satan.

(6.) They are Excommunicated from Covenant-blessings earth-ly, and the Tabernacle-protection promised in the Old and New Testament: Contrair to *Deut. 28.4. Lev. 26.6,7,8,9. Psal. 37. 18.22,25,26. Psal.92.10. Psal.112. 1,2,3. Ezech.34.24,25,26. Ezech.36.29,35,36,37. Ezech. 8.7,8.* And in the New Testament, *Matth.6.27,28.33. 1 Tim.4.8. Heb. 13. 5,6.* which were nothing if our Heavenly Father provide bread, protection, safety, dwelling in the land, and our houses, to the fathers, but the chil-dren had no charter but to beggary, to the sword, to be devoured by wilde beasts and the diseases of Egypt: And the Infants have nothing from the Covenant but what Infants of *Amalek, and Babylon, 1 Sam.15.1,2. Ps.137.5.* and of *Sodom* have, *Gen.19.*

(7.) They are members of Satan, of the Kingdom of the Prince of darknesse, not members of Christs Body, since there be but two Kings, two Gods, Satan, *2 Cor.4.4. Eph. 2.1,2. Eph. 6.12. Matth. 12.29.* and Christ the King and Head of his body. And it is known that Infants within the Visible Church, suffer incursions of Devils, dreadfull diseses, death; and being without the Coven-ant, as Pagans; these evils must either be acts of revenging justice, and preparatorie to the judgement of eternall fire, or blessed in Christ: But if the former, they are damned, if the latter, what blessing is there without Christ?

(8.) Being without the Covenant. 1. Infants cannot be chosen and predestinate in Christ to salvation, as *Eph. 1.4. Rom.9.11.* nor *given to Christ to be saved Covenant-wayes, as John 17. 2. John p.2. Thes. 6.39.* nor loved from eternity, nor in time, as Arminians teach, *9,10.* and so must be carried in Christ to Heaven or Hell, or rather to a mid place, without God or providence, or decrees, or fore-know-ledge, or counsel of God. 2. They being without the Gospel- stinacy to Covenant, cannot be redeemed by Jesus Christ his Blood, but some other way: Contrair to *Acts 4.12.* 3. If Infants be born with-out sin, as Anabaptists teach, they die, and go either to Heaven, med in CURIST, not redec-

Infants and so Christ took not on him their nature, and is not their Saviour: or they go to everlasting torment, and yet never sinned, which is repugnant to Divine Justice: Or to some third place of which heaven or hell by this the Scripture speaks not. And yet the word saith, Rev. 20. 12. way.

that the dead small and great shall stand before God, and shall be judged. And the Scripture saith Infants are capable of punishment, and of being cut off, and the Parents punished in them, and they bear Covenant-wrath in their Parents: As is clear in the seed of

Infants saved with- *Jeroboam, of Achab, of others, Ezod. 20. 5. Gen. 17. 14. 4.* Neither remission of sins, Justification, nor life eternall, nor Sonship, nor Adoption in Christs suffering death, and in the Blood of the everlasting Covenant, can belong to Infants if they be without the Covenant.

9. Nor can children be capable of being blessed of Christ, or of his laying on of hands. As *Mark 10.* if they be not under the N. Telt. capable of Covenant-grace: And it is to be minded, that Covenanted Parents, *Luke 18.*

1. Such as came to him to be cured of their diseases, and believed him to be the *Messiah, the Son of David,* as the blind call him, *Mat. 20.* and the woman of *Canaan, Mat. 15. Luk. 18. 15.* ~~messies~~ brought to him little Children, as *Mat. 8. 16. Mat. 9. 2. Luk. 4. 40.* they brought the sick.

2. The children were not diseased, nor possessed: And the Parents being desirous they might be blessed, as the event proved, it is clear they were not children of heathen, but members of the Visible Church.

Of the children brought to Christ. 3. *ταῦτα τούτα διαβλέπετε* Of such is the Kingdom of God, *Luk. 18. 16.* we cannot but think that his meaning is of such as such, is the Kingdome of God, as if all Infants of Jew and Heathen, belonged as subjects to the Visible Church, for then the Infants of all Heathen should be Covenanted members of the Visible Church, and yet their Parents are without the Visible Church, and when they grow to age, they should without any scandall be Excommunicate, which were monstrous, nor can the Invisible Kingdom of God be of such, as if all

Of infants as infants, Infants, because Infants were saved. Nor, the King- 4. Can the taking of them be a meer Embleme that such were done of God is not blessed, for so, beside that Doves and Lambs, for meeknesse are capable

capable of being taken in the arms of Christ and blessed, Christ bids them, in all times coming, be suffered to come, and not forbidden. v. 16. which faith he desired the whole spece of Infants of the Visible Church to be brought to him. Nor doth Christ make acts of Emblems ordinary, but he will have children at all time to come to him: *forbid them not;* He once cursed the fig tree, that was an Embleme: and did but once wash his Disciples feet, and that was an Embleme. And,

5. He could not mean, that only Infants predestinate to glory, should be suffered to come: For he saith indifferently *οὐδὲ τὰ πασία συμφέρει ταῖς παισὶν εἰσελθεῖν τούτα* suffer little children to come: Now he should then have given marks to discern predestinate children and suffer them. (2.) And receive them only as *Disciples, in my Name, Mar. 6. 36, 37.* (3.) He should have laid his hands upon some Infants, as predestinate to glory, and forbidden others to come. And the Parents should have known what children are predestinate to life, and should come, and what not.

6. The Text evidences that the Disciples had a prejudice and a carnall one, at infants, thinking they understood nothing of Christ and of the Kingdom of Grace. The Disciples *ἐπικακούσαντες* rebuked those that brought them: as *Anabaptists* do. And Christ rebukes them and instates infants of believing Parents as members of the Visible Church.

7. Nor was it extraordinary, when Christ said *suffer little Children to come*, but he would have the spece instated members of such a Kingdom. *Ergo*, some of the kind must be saved and examples must be verified (saith Mr: Cobbet judiciously) in some particulars.

8. *Of such is the Kingdome of God*, of such in Covenant relation is the Kingdome of God, of such subjects. For if Christs reason be, of such for humilitie, meeknesse, want of malice, and in-
vy, as *1 Pet. 2. 1, 2, 3. Math. 18. Psal. 131. 1, 2.* is the Kingdome of God: he must mean by the Kingdome of God, the Kingdome of Glory and the triumphing Church, this sense is refused by *Anabaptists*. 2. The Infants of Pagans and of all men, by nature, within and without the Church are as well marked resemblances of converts, as they. And we must say that Christ would have taken

The place, Luk. 18. Mark. 10. Mat. 19. PART. II
ken in his arms, and blessed all the Pagan Infants, and when they grow to age they should be for no fault, but for age only. Excommunicate from the blessing, for Pagan Infants as well resemble humility and harmlessness (if only the personall qualifications of converts, and heart converts, not the Covenant and Church holiness of visible Professours, be here meant) as Infants within the Visible Church.

9. There was no other designe and purpose in Christ, in that emphatick expression, *forbid them not to come unto me* Mat. 19. 14. *as I ye Luke 18. 16. to me their Saviour*, as well as the Saviour of the aged, but to hold forth the common interest of the dun haben. whole spece of infants (*τα παιδιά*) within the Visible Church, their Covenant interest in Christ, for there is no imaginable reason, but the conceit of want of understanding (the prejudice of Anabaptists only) why the Disciples should have aimed to debar them or any poor sinners from acceso to the Saviour of sinners.

10. Christ took them in his armes, layed his hands on them, num tñpor- bl̄ssed them. Now this was a personall reall favour bestowed upon infants, had infants been meer symbolick and doctrinall resemblances of the humilitie of reall converts, and the young ones as much

without the Covenant as Pagans, and as uncapable of Covenant grace and Covenant seals, because void of actuall faith now under bant pueros the new Gospel administration, as horses or beasts, let the opposites of their Baptisme show what sort of blessing it was, that Christ bestowed upon them, if it be not: 1. Of more value then Jacobs Christ's blessing of Ephraim and Manasseh, or at least as reall, and certain, Christ the Lord from heaven must as Soveraigne, who had power to curse the fig tree and it withered, by his Soveraigne power have blessed, in them, the whole race of infants in the Visible Church, and declared them Covenanted Church members under the New Testament in this eminent act of blessing the children and in commanding that all such might have free acceso to him as King, since the young ones were Subjects of the Kingdome of God, as well as the aged, and expressly forbids, that in time to come, they be hindered to come to him, *Mark 10.14. Luk. 18.16. Math.19.14.* and three Evangelists are three sufficient witnesses. (2.) Christ the Lord is the Supreme and Soveraigne Lord of blessing and cursing:

*Hesychius
incipit.
non quis
nolle illi
saluatoris &
manu & vo-
ce benepli-
citi: 14.
dum haben-
tes plenissi-
mum simili-
tudinem e-
pudicentia
liorum homi-
num impor-
tunitate laf-
sari.*

*Chrysostom
Hom. dicti.*

puli expelle-

*causa digni-*tatis Christi.**

*king in his
armes the
children &
blessing
them, did
not act
mere re-
semblances
and Em-
blems. The effica-
cy of Christ's
blessing the chil-
dren.*

PART. I. touching Christ's blessing of Infants, opened.

sing: for in him all the Nations of the earth, and with them, young ones a considerable part of the Covenanted Nations, must be blessed. (3.) If Isaac blessed Jacob, and he must be blessed, Gen. 27. 29. 33. and Jacob blessed the twelve Tribes, Gen. 49.28. and Moses the man of God blessed Israel, before his death, Deut. 33.1, 2. &c. with Covenant blessings, and they were really blessed, Christ must as really with Covenant blessings, have, in this, blessed the whole race of infants of Covenanted parents, except Anabaptists say that it was some complementall salutation, for the fashion that Christ bestowed upon infants, when the Evangelists say, *he blessed them*, Mat. 19.13. & *as also in Mark 10. 16.* They came in diversi 4. by the glosse of the Adversaries. Christ blessed them that bee symbolick and doctrinall resemblances of the humilitie and docility for them.

of reall converts, and they were blessed as meer signes, as the Elements in the Sacraments are blessed, or as new made crucifixes are Christ's blessed and dedicated to divine worship, as resemblances of Christ crucified; and as Popish Images are symbolicallie blessed, a strange devise are rather a strong delusion. 4. If Christ prayed for infants when the as Matthew sayeth the mothers or parents sought that of him, elements Math. 19.13. his prayers must be grounded upon the word of the are conse- Covenanted, and what could he seek for infants peace in these, but Crate.

Covenant mercies and salvation: for Christ was not to work a mi- racle upon them, and he satisfied the desires of these, who brought them on their armes, and therefore could not go on their feet nor give a confession of their faith, they were born as the man sick of the palsie, *(Math. 9. 2.)* (5.) Now as Christ is always hard in his prayes, *Joh. 11. 42.* so his blessing he bestowed upon them His ble-

(though Anabaptists will have them without Christ and the Co- venant and under the curse of God) must either be a blessing of a Lawbles- the Covenant of Grace, or of the Covenant of Works, for a third sing. or a sort of blessing the Scripture knows not: *Moses takes all blessings up in these two. Deut. 27. 12,15,16. Deut. 28. 2,3,15,16. Deut. 30. 19. I set before you life and death, blessing and cursing,* and so

doeth Paul, *Gal. 3. 10, 13, 14. Heb. 6. 7, 8, 14, 15.* But Christ could not bestow the Law blessing of Works upon these infants, for they had not fulfilled the Law in their persons, nor can infants or any flesh be justified by the Law, *Rom. 3.20.* therefore must Christ have

*The Covenant blessing that was of old**PART.I.*

have bestowed upon them the blessing of the Covenant of Grace, Gal. 3. 14. Heb. 6. 14. let it be the blessing of remission and life, or reall right to the Kingdome of God, it is a blessing of the Covenant. 6. The faith of the parents that brought them is holden forth, Math. 19. 13. Then were little children brought unto him, that he might lay his hands on them and pray: then had they faith in Christ, that his praying and bleising should be availeable to infants, its a conjecture that they came with a may be, or as Mr. Cobbet well sayeth, a faith grounded upon a possibilite of Election separated from the Covenant, that is secret, and the Covenant revealed, and so this, not election abstracted from that, can be the ground of faith, Deut. 29. 29. and when Christ saith, Math. 18. 4, 10. that little ones Angels behold the face of his Father, and the Holy Ghost saith, Heb. 1. 13. that Angels are Ministring Spirits, οἱ τοῦ μελλοντού εἰς τὸν Ιησοῦν. For these that shall by heritage or lot enjoy salvation. Its clear infants have their share of salvation, and by Covenant it must be. As also the blessed seed is promised to Adam before he have a child, and to his seed: To Seth, Japhet, Isaac, Jacob, Abraham, when Cainan, Cham, Ishmael, Esau, Abrahams Idolatrous house, to David, when his brethren are refused, and to these as heads of Generations, when contrare Generations, and the houses of Cainan, Cham, Ishmael, are rejected: Hence the house of Israel, the seed of Israel, the seed of Jacob, and there shall be added to the Gentiles, Isa. 49. who shall bring in to the Church their sons and their daughters upon their shoulders, 22. Isa. 54. 1. Sing O barren — for more are the children of the desolate then of the maried wife saith the Lord, Isa. 54. 4. Lift up thine eyes round about, and see, all they gather alled to themselves about, they shall come to thee: thy sons shall come from the Iews far, and thy sons shall be nourished at thy side. Israel marrying and under the Israel according to the flesh is the holy seed, Neh. 7. 61. Neh. 9. 2. the holy seed have mingled with the heathen. 1 Chron. 16. 13. O ye seed of Israel his servants, ye children of Jacob whom he hath chosen, be mindfull of his Covenant. And this holiness by exten-
and

nal Covenanting is extended to the Gentiles, 1 Cor. 7. 14. But now are your children holy; and its holiness the Jews to be called in, Rom. 11. 16. If the first fruit be holy, the lump is also holy:

PART.I. belongs to Infants under the New Test.

and if the root be holy, so are also the branches. So it is prophesi-
ed, Isa. 61. 9. Their seed shall be known among the Gentiles, and
their off-spring among the people: All that see them shall acknow-
ledge them, that they are the seed that the Lord hath blessed. 6. But ye shall be named the Priests of the Lord, (holy by Covenant
as was Aarons house, because in Covenant visibly with God) men
shall call you the Ministers of our God: Ye shall eat the riches of
the Gentiles; and in their glory shall ye boast your selves. Isa. 62. 2.
Thou shalt be called by a new name, which the mouth of the Lord
hath named. v. 12. And they shall call them the holy people,
the Redeemed of the Lord: And thou shalt be called, Sought out,
A City not forsaken. Isa. 65. 22. As the dayes of a tree, are
the dayes of my people: and mine Elect (by calling) shall long
injoy the work of their hands. Sure he Prophesies of a visibly
Covenanted people under the New Testament: For he adds, v. 23.
They shall not labour in vain, nor bring forth in trouble: for they
are the seed of the blessed of the Lord, and their off-spring with
them. Now to any Godly Reader, there is here. 1. a Proph-
ecie to be fulfilled of the Gentiles brought in, as is clear, Isa. 61.
1, 2, 3, 4. Christ, Luke 4. applyes that Text to himself. And 9.
Their seed shall be known among the Gentiles. Isa. 62. 2. The

Gentiles shall see thy Righteousnesse. And for Chapter 65. 1, 2, 3, 4. Paul expounds it of the in-coming of the Gentiles, Rom. 9. 24. 26. seed pro-
Rom. 10. 10. Eph. 2. 12. 13. Rom. 15. 20. (2.) He speaks of a phesied to
Visible Church and of their seed, known among the Gentiles, all be under
that see them shall acknowledge them, that they are the seed which the N. T.,
the Lord hath blessed, Isa. 61. 9. But they did not see the White
Stone (the seal of their election) and a new Name which none
can read but he that receives it, Rev. 2. 17. And they see them
a seed and off-spring of the Covenanted people of God. Isa. 62. 12.
They shall call them the holy people: then they must judge them
a Visible Church. But a Church of such as are predestinate to glo-
ry, they cannot see them to be. (3:) Isa. 55. They are a Vi-
sible Church. 21. They shall build houses and inhabite them —
22. They shall not build and another inhabite, They shall not plant
and another eat. And the reason is, 23 — ? Because they are
(they shall be, its a Prophesie under the New Testament) the
seed

There are promises of a Covenanted seed of the blessed of the Lord, and their off-spring with them. Jer. 23. 22. As the Host of Heaven cannot be numbered, neither the sand of the sea measured, so will I multiply the seed of David. What seed? The visible seed: And the Levits that Minister unto me, will I multiply: He alludes to the promise made to Abraham, of multiplying his seed, Gen. 13. 15. Gen. 15. 5. Gen. 2. 17. And this promise made to Abraham (saith Calvin) belongs to them all, and he would have them not to doubt of the restitution of the people to their own Land. Now the people and Levits, and house of David were never so multiplied in the Jews, after the deliverance from Babylon, and therefore must be extended to the New Testament. And if God establish Davils seed for ever, Psal. 89. 4. And the seed of his people shall posseſſe the gates of their enemies, Gen. 24. 60. And if he powre his Spirit upon the seed of Jacob, Isai. 43. and Circumcise the heart of the seed of his people, Deut. 30. 6. and put his words in the mouth of the seed of his people, and their seeds seed for ever, Isai. 59. 21. And the seed of the righteous be blessed on earth, Psal. 37. 26. not simply because they are a seed (for the whole seed of man should be blessed, if so) but because they are the seed of his servants, Psal. 69. 36. of the Jews, Esther 6. 13. the Children of his Servants, Psal. 102. 28. See Jer. 31. 35, 35. 37. Isa. 6. 13. because the seed of Abraham, and in the Covenant made with Abraham, Exod. 2. 24. 2 Kings 13. 23. Psal. 105. 8, 9. Psal. 111. 5, 9. Gen. 17. 2, 7, 9. Lev. 26. 42, 45. Ezek. 16. 60. Luke 1. 72. Exod. 6. 4. Deut. 8. 18, &c. Then must the Covenant be established under the New Testament with the Visible seed; and if there were an abridging and contraverting of this favour to the Elect only, it would have been shewed, and the Charter of reservation and exception must have been penninged in the Old or New Testament. 2. Otherwise the seed of all Gentiles called in to Christ by the Preached Gospel, must be visibly cursed of God, cut off from the people of God, separated from the Lord, from the Congregation of his people, not to the tenth Generation only as the Ammonite, the Moabite, the Bastard, Deut. 23. 1, 2, 3. and Excommunicated out of the Camp as unclean, New Test. nor should Christians marry or Covenant with them: As Deut. 23. 14. Lev. 13. 43, 44, 45, 46. Deut. 7. 1, 2, 3. Exod. 34. 15, 16.

The Covenant promise is prophesied to belong to such a certain seed of Abraham, and in the Covenant made with Abraham, Exod. 2. 24. 2 Kings 13. 23. Psal. 105. 8, 9. Psal. 111. 5, 9. Gen. 17. 2, 7, 9. Lev. 26. 42, 45. Ezek. 16. 60. Luke 1. 72. Exod. 6. 4. Deut. 8. 18, &c. Then must the Covenant be established under the New Testament with the Visible seed; and if there were an abridging and contraverting of this favour to the Elect only, it would have been shewed, and the Charter of reservation and exception must have been penninged in the Old or New Testament. 2. Otherwise the seed of all Gentiles called in to Christ by the Preached Gospel, must be visibly cursed of God, cut off from the people of God, separated from the Lord, from the Congregation of his people, not to the tenth Generation only as the Ammonite, the Moabite, the Bastard, Deut. 23. 1, 2, 3. and Excommunicated out of the Camp as unclean, New Test. nor should Christians marry or Covenant with them: As Deut. 23. 14. Lev. 13. 43, 44, 45, 46. Deut. 7. 1, 2, 3. Exod. 34. 15, 16.

If there be not a Covenanted seed under the New Test. the children of believers under the New Test. nor should Christians marry or Covenant with them: As Deut. 23. 14. Lev. 13. 43, 44, 45, 46. Deut. 7. 1, 2, 3. Exod. 34. 15, 16.

PART. I. seed under the New Testament.

1 King. 11. 2. Ezra 9. 2, 12. Nehem. 13. 23. Judg. 3. 6, 7. Judg. 4. 2. 3. Except there be some middle between a curied and a blessed seed, a seed in the Church, and in Covenant, and the seed of the Serpent, of Heathen, without the Covenant. 2. A middle between the Kingdom of darknesse, of Satan, and the Kingdom of God of his dear Son: Contrair to Eph. 2. 2, 3, 4. Acts 26. 18. Col. 1. 13, 14. 1 Pet. 2. 9, 10. Eph. 5. 8. which is unknown to Scripture. Yea the Covenant is made to Christ and his seed, Gal. 3. 16. and the same blessings of Abraham, comes on us Gentiles, Gal. 3. 13, 14. But he and all his seed were blessed and in grace by the external call of the Covenant. Ezek. 16. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8. Deut. 7. 7, 8. Rom. 10. 25. I will call them my people that were not my people, and her beloved which was not beloved. And this external calling is of Grace and so Grace, no merit, as well as predestination to life is grace, or for grace. For whosoever are called, not because Elect, but because freely loved of such a God and without merit called, Father and Son, they are in a state of grace: But so are all within the Visible Church. If any object, by Christ's commanding all the Nations old and young are not become the Nations of the Lord and of his Christ, but only true Believers, even by our Doctrine.

Answ. They are become the Kingdoms of the Lord, not only because they are truely converted, but because they are the chosen of God in the Office house of Christ, and Christ reigns over them by the Scepter of his Word whom he is to convert. And external Covenanting with God is of it self free Grace and a singular favour bestowed of God, Psal. 147. 19, 20. Deut. 5. 1, 2. Mat. 21. 42, 43. Luke 14. 16. 21.

2. It is free Grace that God will have hypocrites and real infidels to beget children to him that are internally in Covenant with him; and fills up the number of the Elect by Reprobate Parents who are instrumentall to the in-coming in the world, and into the Visible Church, of many Heirs of Glory: and in so doing there is a Church right communicated from Reprobate Parents to their Children, that are Heirs of Glory.

3. External Covenanting goes before internall Covenanting, as the means before the end, and the cause before the effect: for of the heirs of the world and to the Visible Church, faith of glory.

faith comes by hearing of a sent Preacher, Rom. 10.14. and the Preaching of the Gospel is a saving means of begetting a new heart and of a new spirit: Hence 1. All must be first externally in Covenant, before they can be internally and really in Covenant. 2. God is a God simply to some, and no more but a God to them in regard of outward Church priviledges, as the Word, Seals, Protection, Peace, Hedge of Discipline; his planting and watering by a Ministry. But he is, to speak so, more then a God to others, Hos. 2.19. *I will betroth thee unto me for ever, yea I will be roth*

God is a thee unto me in righteousness, in judgement, and in loving kindnesse, and in mercy. Now the Lord is joyned to back-sliding Israel, in an externall marriage Covenant: But Jer. 3.14. *not in righteousness, in loving kindness and mercy, in reference to the rotten party.* In regard of which he saith, v.2. *Plead with your mother, plead: for she is not my wife, neither am I her husband.* Zech.8.7. *Thus saith the Lord, I will save my people from the East Countrey, and from the West Countrey.* 8. *And I will bring them, and they shall dwell in the midst of Jerusalem, and they shall be my people, and I will be their God, in truth and in righteousness.* Then he is not to all a God in truth and righteousness, fulfilling the first and substantiall promise of engraving the Law in the heart, not that he keeps not Covenant even to external confederats, to wit, the conditional Covenant, for if they should beleieve they should be saved; but he promised not a new heart, and faith to them. 3. Because he is a God external to the Elect, and that of free Grace, therefore he is a God in truth and righteousness, to engrave his Law in their heart. But externall confe- deration is not the adequate cause, for then he should give a new heart to all, with whom he externally Covenants, but the ade- quate cause is confederation external *tali modo*, out of his discriminating love and free grace he is a God to some. 4. He is a God to his Elect that he may engrave his Law in their heart and inward parts; so that the promising to be a God *tali modo*, is the cause, and the engraving of a new heart is the effect. Jer. 31.33. Jer. 32.38. *And they shall be my people, and I will be their God.* That is the cause. 39. *I will give them one heart, and one way; that they may fear me for ever; for the good of them and of their chil-*

dren.
The cause why we believe, is because God is thus and always, in Covenant with us.

dren after them. See the same order, Ezech. 11.19, 20. though the words ly not in that order there and here. And Heb. 8. 10. 5. God is not then a God to any, because they have a clean heart, and the Law engraven therein, for then they should be in Covenant, before they be in Covenant; And so this is true (because he is our God in truth and righteousness, therefore we beleeve) but this is not true (because we beleeve, therefore he is our God) ex- cept we argue fromthe effect to the cause.

But to return: Calvin on Math. 19. 14. We hence gather that the grace of Christ is extended to Infant age, for whole mankind had perished. Beza, Infants are also comprehended in the ^{Calvin.} *Colli-* ^{unde Colligimus al-} *Pareus*, its unlawfull to debarre these from ba- ^{gimus al-} *hanc quoque* peism and the Church, whom Christ bids come to him, &c. Obj. statim ex- *But Christ commands not they be baptiz'd.* Answ. Nor doth tendi ^{his} Christ in this place command the Parents to bring them up in the ^{gratiam,} *nurture and admonition of the Lord:* Nor speak the Evangelists ^{Quid vero} of any Parentall duty; shall we from that conclude, it was not ^{his precas} Christ's mind that the Parents take care of the fourth & fifth Com- ^{et nisi in re.} mand? Pareus saith, it was neither time nor place. Mat. 28. inter. Dei- ^{iperentur} 19. he bids baptize all. 3. He who prayed for them, blessed them, ^{sit os?} laid his hands upon them, invited them to bring Infants to him (of ^{Berz, Ipsi} all which Infants were as uncapable, as of the use and ends of Ba- ^{quoque In-} ptism and of actuall confession of sin and of beleeving) judged they ^{fames in} ought be Baptized. 4. Its never to be found where any are Ba- ^{granito Dni} ptized, but the Head of the Family is Baptized: And when we ^{fodere com-} read that houses were Baptized, 1 Cor.1.16. Acts 16.33. There ^{prebendun-} is no more ground to say Infants are not Baptized, then to say ^{ur.} when the Lord saith to Abraham, Gen. 12.2. *I will blesse thee, and make thy name great.* And 22.17. *in blessing I will blesse thee.* And when the Lord saith, Isai.19.25. *blessed be Egypt* ^{The Cova-} *my people;* he should mean, he would blesse *Abraham*, not his ^{nant bles-} seed, and that he minds to blesse the aged of *Egypt*, and of *A/-* ^{sing of the} *syria*, but not their seed and infants, because they understand not ^{house, is the} what a blessing of God means; and yet the fruit of the womb and the seed are said to be blessed, Psal.37.26. Dent. 7.13. and God so intreated to blesse Israel, and to blesse David's house, Psal.28. 9. Psal.67. 1: Dent.26.16. 2 Sam. 7. 29. the meaning should not

The Covenant-blessing on the house and root, PART. I.

not be that God would blesse the young Infants and Children in *Israel* and in *Davids* houle : And when *Jacob* is said to provide for his own houle, *Gen. 30.30.* And the believer to provide for his Family, *1 Tim. 5.8.* the meaning should be that they shold provide for the aged of the house, who understood what provision is, but shold not provide for the young ones, who can not know what it is to be hungry to morrow. To say young ones are not capable of Baptism, is to begge the Question. For (1.) all *Israel* were *Baptized in the Sea and in the Cloud*, old and young, *1 Cor. 10.1,2.* (2.) All *Israel* old and young are capable of the blessing Covenanted, *Psal. 28.9.* *Psal. 67.1,2.* and to of the seal : *Anabaptists* grant (as they must) if Infants be in Covenant they ought to receive the Seal of the Covenant. Lastly, how is it that by baptized houses, must be meant only these come to age who can actually beleeve ?

The Jews, *Rom. 11.16.* are holy root and branch first fruit and lump, fathers and children, and the Jews shall be brought in again. Why ? The Generation to come in is holy, for the Covenant made with their fathers. Well say *Anabaptists*, but notwithstanding of the federall holiness you talk of, *Rom. 11.16.* that if the root gives not right to the casten off to be Baptized, and admitted to be holy, so is Church priviledges ; for the casten off are no Church, and have the branches, no Church priviledge, your federall holiness then must be a dream.

Ans. But these to come in, and to be re-ingrafted are holy, The Jews intentionally, in the decree of God, because of their beloved fathers, and when God shall call them, the same Covenant made are inten- with *Abraham* gives them right ; and these branches not in being, nally holy in the root and the unborn Generation are only intentionally holy by this te- and when derall holiness, and they shall be actually holy, when they shall they are be born, but it followeth not, but the present Generation not born, they broken off through unbelief, as *Paul* and others called by the name shall be a- of election, *Rom. 11.7.* have right, because of their fathers. For &ually ho- ly.

God hath not cast off his people, whom he hath fore-known. For I am an Israelite (saith *Paul*, v.1,2.) of the seed of *Abraham*, and there are thousands of Jews now hid, as in *Elias* his time, who bowed not their knee to *Baal* ; but the body of them, the great bulk is fallen away and cut off. Hence the Jews are holy federally,

and

PART. I. is also upon the seed.

and not holy, beloved of the fathers federally, and not beloved federally, holy and keep Church-right to Baptism, and Ordinances, in regard of the founder and invisible part : And not holy federally nor having any Church right to Baptism, in regard of the wilfully broken off body, that crucified Christ and stand to their fathers bloody deed, these have no more Church-part nor portion to Ordinances, then *Simon Magus*, *Acts 8.* notwithstanding of their carnall dissent from *Abraham*.

And when God made the Covenant with *Abraham*, *Gen. 17.* and renewed the same, *Deut. 29.* he made it with these who were not there standing, v. 14,15. not with you only, &c, but virtually, radically with us Gentiles, who were not then born, as touching the substantials, for Priest-hood, Law-service, Types, Sacrifices, Circumcision, yea Baptism, the Lords Supper, Pastors, Teachers, Elders to rule, Deacons, were all accidents, to the substance of the Covenant, to wit, to beleeve in Christ and to obtain righteousness and life by Christ: As the same way to the same City hath other hedges, way-marks, bridges, this year which it had not 500. years agoe. And look as a father that knowes he shall beget so many hundred sons who shall all be Kings, and have the same royall inheritance, wri- teth a Charter intituling them all, before they be born, to the same inheritance : They have all virtuall and radicall right, ere they be born, with the first heir ; And when they are born, he makes not another Covenant with them. So *Deut. 29. 14,15.* he sayeth not, He shall make another Covenant with these when they shall be born : but I make a Covenant with you, and with these that are not here, not born. Hence by way of excellency he calleth it the Covenant, the Covenant of the Lord, *Jer. 22. 9.* *Deut. 4.23.* *Josh. 23. 11.* My Covenant, saith the Lord, *Gen. 17. 7,9,10.* *Exod. 19. 5.* *Psal. 50. 16.* His Covenant, *Psal. 105. 8.* He remembred his Covenant for ever, *Psal. 111. 5.* He will remember his Covenant for ever, 5.9. His Covenant with *Abraham*, *Isaac* and *Jacob*, *2 King. 13. 23.* When *Hazaell* King of *Syria* oppressed *Israel*, in their saddest afflictions, *Levit. 26.42,43.* The Scripture is called the Book of the Covenant, *Exod. 24. 7.* *2 King. 23. 4.* *2Chron. 34. 30, 21.* The Question is easily determined, it can be the Book of no Covenant, but of that made with *Abraham*, the oath

The same Covenant in the substantials, is in the Old and New Test.

The first ~~covenant~~ ^{with} Jacob, 1Chron.16. 16, 17. Psal. 105. 9. Jer. 11. 5. Dan. 9. 11. Luke 1. 73. Heb. 6. 15, 17. and to the fathers, *the everlasting* ^{King} ~~Covenant~~, Gen. 9. 16. Gen. 17. 9, 13. which relates to ~~A-~~ ^{is called like} ~~the~~ ^{King} ~~Covenant~~ ^{of} Adam also, Levit. 24. 8. 2Sam. 23. 5. made unto David, 1Chron. 16. 17. Psal. 105. 10. Isa. 61. 8. Heb. 13. 20. which cannot be, by way of if there be so many Covenants, as some speak of: *the new Covenant*, and *the better Covenant*, Heb. 8. 8, 13. Heb 12. 20. Jer. In the Old 3. 81. Heb. 7. 22. which newnesse and excellency is all expounded and New ^{of} the Mediator now God, the *Word made Flesh*, Heb. 7. c. 8.c. 9. Test. ^{which} ^{the} ^{Paul proves} ⁱⁿ ^{the} ^{Scriptures} ^{he} ^{uses} ^{for} ^{the} ^{other} ^{part} ^{of} ^{the} ^{Scriptures}

And we would remember that Rom. ii. Paul proves 1. God hath not casten off the Jewes wholly. 1. Arg. Because I Paul am a Jew, and he hath not casten me off : Ergo in one the Covenant may stand. 2. From his unchangeableness, God hath foreknown them. 3. From the example of the Church in the dayes of Elias. By way of preoccupation, it is true many are fallen off: but as then seven thousand were in Israel who bowed not their knee to Bial, so now; Because the election of grace doth not fall now, or then. Then saith he, *not of works*. He reconceals that he saith with what before, by a preoccupation: And have all the Jewes fallen short of righteousness? and he answers, All are not fallen short. *The election*, that is, the elected have obtained righteousness, the rest not. 2. To make way to exhort the Gentiles to walk worthy of the place and room of the Jews. He speaks some more of the doctrine of Reprobation, as he spake, Ch. 9. of eternal predestination, and of 2. The casting out of the Jews, and of their blinding and hardning. They have fallen in Gods decree, not that they may utterly fall. 2. That the Gentiles may be provoked by their fall.

Hence by diverse Arguments he proves that the Jewes shall be brought in again to Christ 1. From four ends of the Jewes fall, v. 11. (2.) To provoke them to come in, v. 11. (3.) That some may be saved. 4. For the riches of the worlds salvation. Whence the magnifying of Pauls Ministry, v. 13, 14. 2. Arg. From the great fruit ; If their fall be the riches of the world, their incoming again must be the resurrection from the grave of the buried unbelieveing world, v. 15.

3. Arg. They must be brought in. These who are holy separate

PART I. of Root and branches, opened
ted from the world, for the Covenant-call of God, must be brought
in again: But so is Israel. The Assumption he proves by parts. 1.
The masse and root of Israel is holy, the Fathers were the Coven-
anted visible stock, line, root, as all the Old Testament sayeth:
then the posterity, the first fruits, the branches partly born, partly
to be born, must be holy Covenant-wayes: The tree, root and
branches are holy and of the same nature; Therefore the branches
have right to Christ, to the Covenant, to Baptisme and the seals.
Hence Anabaptists, without all reason, say that he speaks not of
federall and externall holinesse, but of reall, internall and true ho-
liness, only of the invisible body predestinated to life: for though
invisible holiness cannot be excluded, except we exclude the ho-
liness of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, who were without doubt
a part of the root: yet he must be taken to speak of that holiness
of the Covenant and Church, as made visible and of the visible col-
lective body of the Jews, not of only reall and invisible holiness.

le^tive body of the Jews, not of only reall and invisible holinesse. By the holy
1. Because this was true in the dayes of *Elias*, If the root be holy ^{root cannot}
the branches are holy ; And it is a New Testament-Truth of perpe- ^{be meant}
all verity, If the Fathers be holy so must the Sons. The Fathers ^{the prede-}
have Church-right to Circumcision, to Baptism, to the Passeover, ^{stinate to}
and to the Lords Supper, so have the Children : but it is most false ^{glory only.}
of the invisible mysticall body and root only, and of reall and in-
ternall holinesse ; For neither in Old or New Testament is it true,
If the Fathers be predestinated to life, justified and sanctified and sa-
ved, so must the Children be. *Ishmael, Esau, Absalom*, and
all the world of Hypocrites called from their prophanenesse *So-
dom and Gomorah*, *Isai. 1. 10. uncircumcised in heart*, as *Egypt*,
Moab and *Ammon*, *Jerem. 9. 26. as the Philistines*, *Amos 9.
7.* Then should that (2.) Distinction of *Jewes in the heart*,
and *inward*, and of *Jewes in the flesh*, *Rom. 2. 28.* and of the *chil-
dren of the flesh*, that are not of the spirituall seed, and of the *chil-
dren of the promise*, *Rom. 9. 7. 8.* and of the persecuting chil-
dren of the bond woman not justified by faith, and of the children
of the promise, *Gal. 4. 23, 24, &c.* fall to the ground. Yea 3.
If by the *root* and the *lump* be understood only Believers and cho-
sen to life, the whole *Israel*, which is as the sand of the sea, should
be saved, whereas the Word of God saith, *a remnant only shall be
saved,*

114. The Place, Rom. 11.16. concerning the holinesse PART. I.
saved, κατεσύα LXX. Tecla. A part taken out shal be saved, Rom. 9. 27. Isa. 10. 22, 23. Hos. 1. 10. 4. By the branches must be meant all the visible body of the Jews, old and young. Now if Anabaptists give us a Visible Church of the Jewes of all reall believers, even the branches and Infants, (which shall hardly be proven by the Scripture) these infants at least being visible Believers may lawfully be baptized, being both internally and visible, and externally in Covenant. For this Scripture is exprestly expounded by them of reall and inherent holiness, and so Infants must be reall Believers and in Covenant. Ergo they must be baptized: What can be replied is not imaginable: but they have not actuall faith, and possibly that is not known to the Church. But this Scripture saith that the branches and root both are holy. 2. It shall be new Divinity, that none are to be baptized but such as are under the actuall exercise of their faith, a thing that cannot be discerned by the Church, in these that are come to age. 5. Here shall also be this new Divinity, that predestination to life and glory must be propagated and derived from the lump to the first fruits, from the root and parents to the branches and children.

5. Its against the whole current of the Text, that Paul spake abstractly of the only invisible body really sanctified, and not of the visible body. For 1. The body invisible is an elect seed that cannot fall away; But the body that here he speaks of are such, of which a part are hardened and blinded, and under the spirit of slumber, and a part elect and chosen. 7. The election have obtained, not an in- the rest are hardened, and of such a body, compared with the body visible bo- in the time of Elias, of which multitudes fell away, slew the Prophets, digged down the Altars, and a good number were believers, that bowed not their knee to Baal, and so is the body now, saith Paul, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. οὐτοὶ τοι γένηται ἐν τῷ ὑπερβολῇ, which is a mixt-body. 3. He speaks of the body that is fallen and stumbled, v.11. and these whom he preaches unto, to provoke them to a holy emulation, to come in to Christ, by the incoming of the Gentiles, v. 13, 14. which is sure a visible body, and which shall be ingrafted again, v. 23. which includes a visible body of diverse generations. 4. Yea he must speak of a Nationall election and external calling, as Deut. 7. 7, 8, 9. Deut. 10. 15. Psal. 132. 13. Isa. 41. 3. Nor

PART. I. of root and branches, opened. 115
of a personall election of some certain persons who fell, were blinded, rejected fully and totally in their persons, and received in and ingrafted as sound believers again: for the Scripture speaks of no such boating in and out, but of a huge numerous body of which some fell, some stand and includes diverse generations. 5. The collective visible body of Jews and Gentiles are such as Paul preacheth unto, v. 13, 14. such as are ingrafted in in the room of the Jews, and ingrafted into the Olive of the visible Body, and partake of the fatnesse of Ordinances, Baptism, Covenant-comforts, promises. Now if any say that this proves not that Infants are ingrafted, then must they say that Infants of the Jews before Christ the Jewes partaked of no fatnesse of the Covenant, Circumcision, Blessings, with the Presence, Protection. 2. That they were not broken off with their fathers, and so that they now stand. 3. That the Infants of the Jews are not holy branches, as the root is holy, as v. 16. and that none but the fathers shall be ingrafted in, and only 4. The aged and the baptized actuall believers of the Gentiles are the ingrafted ones, not their Infants, they are all Heathen and Pagans, as well as the casten off Jewes. 5. That the Jewes ingrafting in again shall be to their great hurt, so as God was long agoe their God, but shall no more in time coming be their God, then of the Pagans and the lately cut off fathers: Nor can the Adversaries say that Jewish Infants were broken off through unbelief, because they are capable neither of belief nor of unbelief to them. Then they remain in the Olive tree, members of the Church as before, and God must be still their God, when the fathers are cut off, vers. 17. And again, when the fathers shall be reingrafted and they made Christians, the Infants shall be out of Christ, and have no more Covenant-right or Church-right to Baptisme, then the Infants of Egyptians and Philistines had to Circumcision.

Obj. Shall not, by this means, all the Infants of all the Gentiles be ingrafted in, and baptized?

Answ. The Text warrants us to say it only of the Children of the ingrafted and called Gentiles, that they have right to baptism.

Obj. This Text is spoken of them that have hereditary Covenant-right, from their naturall Father Abraham. We Gentiles

The seed have not that naturall relation to Abraham, nor are we his natural
sons, nor branches?

venant, not by birth as Answ. Its false, that the Jews by birth as birth, had hereditary right to Church-priviledges, they had right by such a birth birth, but by such a from Abraham taken in out of free-love to Covenant fellowship birth, so & with God, and his children are naturall, that is, kindlie. 2. First so graciously pri-branches and sprigs, before us Gentiles, to beleeving Abraham, vileged. but we beleeving are made Abrahams by proportion, and are secondary and so wild branches. 2. Abraham is not the Physicall, but a Morall root. For the Covenant was made with Abraham, not as a beleeving Father, but as a beleeving Head of Children, of Servants, and strangers under him, as the Covenant is laid as an Heavenly depositum, upon Zacheus, in relation not to his children only, but to his house, Luke 19. For when he is made a sonne of Abraham, salvation, that is, the Covenant of Life comes to him and to his house: and so to Cornelius, Acts 10. and to the Jayler, Acts 16. and to their houses, and the same way I distinguish seeds.

Q. How can the Jews that are come in, be federaly holy for their fathers? Since now it is about fifteen hundred years since their fathers were broken off from Church and Covenant: May not all the world Jews and Gentiles be federally holy branches, by the same reason, because the Covenant was made with, and Preached unto Adam a beleeving root and father in Paradice? So it would appear once in the Covenant of Grace, and all the seed to the coming of CHRIST, are federally holy, as well as they. Answ. This is as great a difficultie to the Adversaries (and insuperable) as to us, for the Jews unborn by their way, are no more holy in their branches and off-spring then Turks and Indians, and their children, until they grow to age and actually beleeve, and so are the Infants of Americans, and such as worship the Sun, or Satan, that way holy. And so the branches of the Jews have no holiness from the root; nor are they beloved for the fathers, as vers. 28. 2. All the Jews leave not off to be members of the Invisible Church; For Paul saith Rom. 11. 25. blindness in part is happened to Israel and peoples to a part of Israel: For howbeit the visible masse and body of the Jews rejected Christ and wrath be come upon them

to the outmost, 1 Thes. 1. 16. yet that is not said universally of all the Jews, 14. καὶ τὸς γεννητὸν τῶν iudeῶν. Yea Paul wrote to the Jews the Epistle to the Hebrews. James to the twelve Tribes scattered abroad, Jam. 1. 1. and Peter, 1 Pet. 1. 1. and John to the Jews: I judge, not in a visible body, and these are not broken off the Olive, and do, though not in a Visible Church way, derive Covenant right to the branches that shall be ingrafted in. But many Nations descended of Adam have universally rejected Christ, and know not the Name of Christ the blessed seed.

Q. May we not say that the root is Christ as mysticall Head, from whom we partake of the sappe of grace and life and fatnesse.

Answ. The intent of Paul is to prove that the Jews cut off, because of their unbelief, shall be ingrafted in again, in the Lords own time, because of the holinesse of the Covenant, that was in the root, and in the first fruits Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. It is true, their Covenant-holinesse is not the adequate cause, why they shall be ingrafted in really into Christ, for so all the carnall children, who had this relative holinesse must be really ingrafted in Christ, but it is with the Lords free love, both the cause of their personall, and of their Church ingrafting, and the continued deriving of that relative holinesse being a continued free favour in its kind, is the Lords love in the same kind to root and branches, otherwise it should not bear truth, which, is said v. 28. which expones this, ver. 28. that they are beloved for the fathers, not as if they were predestinate to life, because Abraham was so chosen, but because of the Fathers Covenant-holinesse, which was holinesse from Christ not as root and head, through influence of saving grace, but as a politick head which yet is, what we say. For because Christ is holy as root, head and Redeemer, the Jews once his Church Visible and to be so again, the branches are not really holy by faith, because all of them were not in Christ: But if all Jews and Gentiles, and also Infants who are Jews and Gentiles and parts of the body be baptized into the visible body, so are Infants. See more of this in Mr. Cotton, Mr. Black, Mr. Gobbet, Mr. Rich. Baxter, who have closed the dispute learnedly.

CHAP. XV.

The differences of externall and internall Covenanting.

2. *No Universall Grace,* Rom. 10. 18. Psal. 19. 3. nor in Scripture. 3. *Nor power of beleeving to all given by Christ.*

Confide-
rable diffe-
rences be-
tween ex-
ternall and
internall
Covenan-
ters.

Hence, the clear differences betwixt the external visible and Nationall Covenanting of the people of old, when they were brought out of the Land of Egypt; And the internall and personall (though it may be visible also) Covenanting with God.

1. This under the New Testament is a new Covenant, and all the old shadows are abolished: The former is the old.

2. This is with the house of Israel and Judah chosen persons, and so personall with single men. You shall not give a Nation, Kingdom, or Land, with which the Covenant internally is so made, as if all and every one, without exceptions, must know the Lord savingly (what may be the converted Jews case, whether the whole body of them, all and every one shall be visible, real, and personall Covenanters, as the place, Rom. 11. 26. seems to say, I cannot determine) and all and every one be saved; for then must all the visible house of Israel be saved, and not the chosen only.

3. The visible externall Covenant was broken, Jer. 31. 32. The other personall and internall is never broken.

4. The promise of a new heart is really fulfilled, in all the persons and single branches of the house of Judah, so that all and every one are taught of God, none excepted, Jer. 31. 33. 34. Isa. 54. 13. Job. 6. 45. not so in the visible externall Covenant, if it be but externall: not any is taught of God, but all are taught of men.

5. The reall personall Covenant is everlasting, like that Covenant with the Moon and Stars; 2. The night and the day; 3. Of the motion of the Sea, Jer. 31. 35, 36, 37. There is perfeverance absolutely promised, Jer. 32. 40. *I will make an everlasting Covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good.* Its sure in Gods part, for he changeth not. Nay, but we change and turn away from God, he obviats that: *I will put my fear*

Part I. absolute and internall Covenanting.

far in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me. So Isai. Personal 54. 10. Isa. 59. 21. but all such as Nationally, visibly only, and in Covenanters cannot fall away:

6. *Jer. 31. 38. Behold the dayes come saith the Lord, that the City shall be built to the Lord, &c.* There is a promise of spiritual all-right in Christ made to the blessings of this life, to these that are personall Covenanters; As Jer. 32. 41. Ezek. 11. 17, 18, 19. Ezek. 36. 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 33. Ezek. 37. 24, 25, 26. Ezek. 34. 23, may.

24, 25, 26, 27. which promise, though not repeated in the New Testament, when the Prophesies of the Covenant are cited, Heb. 8. 8. Heb. 10. 16, 17. but of purpose omitted, because the promise of temporal blessings, is not so expresse now; Yet in other places of the New Testament; it is clear that we have bread by Covenant-promise, Matth. 19. 29. 1 Tim. 4. 8. Heb. 13. 5, 6. 1 Pet. 3. 10, 11, 12. which promise is made not to these only that are in Covenant externally, &c. These six differences are clear, Jer. 31. 33, &c. so that it is evident that all and every one of the Visible Church are not really and personally confederates, so that though the Lord say to both: *I will be their God, and they shall be my people, yet not one and the same way.*

Hence there is no ground at all, nor truth in what Arminians say, that the Covenant of Grace is made with all and every one of mankind, as was the Covenant of Works. For this must be true, that in Paradice, the Covenant of Grace was made with Adam, and all his seed: But a Covenant so universall ought to be proclaimed to all the Covenanters, but thus was not: For the Lord very one of published and made it to Abraham and his seed, and the Lord choised Israel above all the people on earth, Deut. 5. 1, 2, 3. Deut. Psal. 147. 7. 6. Deut. 10. 15. and shewed his judgements and statutes to them & not to other Nations: And therefore there can be no subjective revealing of Christ, by universall grace, given to Heathen and all others, and by an objective revealing of Christ in the works of Creation, the heaven and earth, night and day, as some teach; citing the Ps. 19. 1, 2.

For so 1. God choised Americans, Indians, and all the wild Savages to be his people, as well as he choised the Jews: and if the sound of the Gospel went out to the ends of the earth, that is, to all

There is all and every one, as they expound, *Psal. 19. 3, 4. Rom. 10. 18.* no univer- then it must be the purpose of *David* and *Paul*, that the Doctrine fall reve- of the Covenant of Grace, and of Christ crucified, by whose alone ling of name men are saved, and by whom only men come to the Father, CHRIST *Acts 4. 12. John 14. 6.* is written in the Firmament, which must to Amer- declare the glory of God manifested in the flesh, day unto day, and cans and to all mankind; which must preach Christ crucified to all Nations, who see the Sun rise and go down; For sure that found, *Psal. 19. 4.* goeth through is either subjective, all the earth. Sure *Paul* must give a dark interpretation, *Rom. 10.* by a power of that Psalm, as ever was imagined. 2. If the hearing, *Rom. 10.* or univer- 18. (but I say have they not heard?) be the hearing of God Cre- fall grace ator, his sounding glory in the Firmament, Night. Day and Sun, given to all, as it is *Psal. 19.* by all that see the Sunne, and also the hearing of or which is objective, by the joyfull sound of Christ Preached in the Gospel, written and the light of objectively declared in Sun and Moon, Night and Day, as Amyrald nature, in and his do expound it; Then may all that see the Sun call upon the works name of the Lord revealed in Christ, and believe in Christ (for of Creatio- of their beleef Moses speaks, *Deut. 30. 14.* and Paul, *Rom. 10.* pointing out Christ 9, 14.) and all have the benefite of the Preached Gospel, and sent as the place Prophets, whose feet are beautifull upon the mountains, publis- *Psal. 19. 4.* shing glad tidings of peace, verl. 15. as *Nah. 1. 15. Isai. 52. 7.* and all that see the Sunne are the same way saved by Jesus Christ, that Jewes and Gentiles are, who hear the Gospel. But Paul strangely crosseth this, How shall they call upon him (as God re- vealed in Christ) in whom they believe not? *πῶς δε οἱ πιστεῖν τὸν ἀνθρώπον τοῦ οὐρανοῦ;* How shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? And how shall they hear without a Preacher? And how shall they preach except they be sent? Now if the sound of the Preached Gospel be to be heard in the Firmament, Sun rising and going down (as Amyrald and some Libertines do say, whom I heard Preach the same thing at London) Paul might receive an easie and a short answer: The place, Gospel of Christ crucified written on the Firmament Sun and night, *Psal. 19. 4.* and day, is as lawfull an Ordinance, and a book upon which vindicated Americans, and all that see the same, may read the glad tydings of salvation, and so may call upon, and believe in God, and winde and earn, by their industrie, and hearing of the Gospel by sent Preachers, as the Preached Word of God, and therefore Paul cannot

cannot deny but faith comes by hearing of some other Preacher then a Gospel Preacher or one that is sent; for Paul, *Rom. 1. 16, 17, 18, 19.* and David, *Psal. 19. 1, 2, 3.* — v. 7, 8, 9. distinguish the two Books.

There is not such an Objection dreamed as Amyrald imagines of *Rom. 10. 18.* If God will have mercy on the Gentiles, how is it that they have not heard the Gospel? For the Lord hath not declared his minde to them. He answers: God did not so keep up his good will to the Gentiles in former times, but by the Ministry of the Heavens, ac veluti voce providentia, and as it were by the preaching of the Word of Providence he spake to them: which things should be spoken to no purpose by Paul, if they be understood of a revelation of God as Creator only, and not as Redeemer: for what bath that revelation to do with the Gospel? Therefore Calvine (saith he) speaketh of the revelation by the creatures preparatory to the Gospel. It is true there is an Objection in these words, v. 18. But I say have they not heard? A learned Countrey-man,

*Carol. Fer-
matus in A-
natyl ad Ro-
manos, c.
10. p. 205.*

Charles Fermin: But the Israelites (saith he) have not heard the Gospel? Then if faith be from hearing, and saving calling upon God be from faith, then believing Israelites shall be of the number of them that call upon the name of the Lord, and shall be saved.

He not only yeelds that the Israelites have heard, but he confirms it from *Psal. 19.* Yea their sound, &c. It is an argument à minore, from the lesse to the more, The whole world hath heard of God, either by the preaching of the creatures from the beginning, or by the Apostles in the revealed Gospel, far more then the Jewes to whom the Oracles of God were committed, and to whom first the Gospel must be preached, have heard: And therefore not all that hear do believe (though faith come by hearing) nor do all call upon God and are saved. So Pet. Martyr: so Calvin, *Hyper-
ius, Fains.* It's not strange that the Gospel is preached to the Gentiles: for God spake to them by the knowledge of the creature. Pareus observes that Paul cites not the place, *Psal. 19.* and saith voluit not- pot, As it is written, but alludes to it only.

*per creaturas celestes publicari in universum orbem: Ergo & Euangolium curavit identidem evolu-
tori. Quomodo igitur potestis dicere, vos Iudai, non audivisse? — Ratio à pari, vel à mi-
tate. Si, bac minus digna, an altera longe salubrior & utilior non publicatur?*

Spanhemius.

122 Christ is not revealed in the creatures to all & every one. P.R.

Spanheimius. If it be well said that the sound of the heavens is
in Secio. 35 gone to the end of the world, that may be said truly of the Preaching of the Gospel. *Junius* to that sense. But *the place saith Amyrald p.* not that God called with a will, to save the Gentiles: The Scripture faith, *he winked at them, and called them not*, Acts 14,16. *Junius par.* But now God commandeth all men every where to repent, Acts 17, 18.

30. and he revealed not his Testimonies to them. Now was not the same Gospel-book in the Pages of the works of Creation, as legible to the Gentiles before, as after the coming of Christ in the flesh? Nor can the Gospel which never came to the ears of many Indians and millions of people, it being to them a *non ens*, and an un-heard of Doctrine, explain the book of Creation; as the thing that shadows out Christ, as the New Testament clears the Types of the Old: Nor doth the Scripture any where tell us, what work of Creation or Providence, expresseth Christs dying for our sins, rising for our righteousness: Nor doth the Scripture tell us of an Embleme, in nature, of God Incarnate, of the Man Christ in glo-

I have merely pleading at the right hand of God for us; And no doubt, the *ey on whom* Lords natural desires of saving all, calling and inviting all to Repentance, *I will, Is a* tance, of Christs dying for all, his naturall willingnelle that all and every one should obey, do not ebbe and waxe and decrease, as the truth in the Old and New Test. Sea and Moon do, and therefore his taking such a course with all the Gentiles, that no word of the Covenant comes to their ears, of perpetuall verity. so that then at that time, they were without Christ, being aliens from the Common-Wealth of Israel, and strangers from the Cove-

Aga οὐν ναντ of promise, having no hope, and without God in the World, *you διλειποντες, οὐδὲ σέλεσθαι* Eph. 2,12. And in time past were no people (in Covenant) and had not obtained mercy, 1 Pet. 2,9,10. and were far off, Acts 2, 39. must evince, that the sense of the Gospel was not written in Sunne and Moon; and the book of Creation is not the Gospel; and therefore he hath been shewing that the Gentiles were not in Covenant

before the Incarnation, and since no word of the Gospel comes to millions now, they are yet not in Covenant. And this is a Gospel-

truth now, that stands after the Incarnation, as before, Rom. 9, 18. *He hath therefore mercy upon whom he will, and hardens whom he will.* And he said it in the Old Testament, Exod. 33,19. and repeated

PART. I. No objective revelation of Christ to all mankind. repeateth it to us, Rom. 9,15. I will have mercy upon whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion upon whom I will have compassion. And if any man say that he hath the like antecedent naturall good-will, to save eternally all these whom he calleth and moveth finally to obey, and the greatest part of mankind whom he so moveth and calleth as he knoweth they shall never obey, whereas he can move all finally to obey, without training their naturall liberty: He speaks things that cannot consist with both the wisdom and liberty of God.

And if amongst these to whom the word of the Covenant comes, If the some are externally only, and never saved, Matth. 22, 14. *Rom.* venant be made with 9,6,7. Others internally personally and really in Covenant and sa-ved; why but some may be neither wayes in Covenant, if they never heard the word of the Covenant, and if the Heathen and Americans were under the Covenant of Grace Preached to them in that found, that goes to the end of the world. Why, but of God as Moab, Ammon, and Assyrians, Philistines, Chaldeans, Persians, are the Israel of God, his chosen people, his Sion, and must not the principall promise of the Covenant be made to them? and are we not to beleieve that God will write his Law in the hearts of Cain, Pharaoh, Saul, Doeg, Ahab, Judas, Magus, and of Moabites, Ammonites, Egyptians, and of all and every one of mankinde, if they be in Covenant with him? Contrair to P/a. 147, 19,20. Hof. 8,12. Exo. 20,1.

Neither can it be said, that all mankind have received a subjective power to beleieve and receive Christ holden forth in the Gospel to us, Printed to be read and heard in the book of Creation, cal-led the objective Gospel, as Adam had power to fulfill the first Co-venant, for Adam had the Image of God concreted in his soul by which he was able to fulfill the Law, then must they give us a Scri-pture to prove that all Adams sons are converted, and restored to the Image of God, born over again, for by no other power but by a new heart, and the actings of God, can men beleieve the Gospel objective, or come to Christ, and do good works Evangelicall by which they are justified, and if it be a remote power that may grow, Job. 6, 44, it is not the like power which Adam had to keep the Law. 2. This power died in vain

No univerſall grace nor power of beleeving PART. I.
power is either naturall, or supernaturall: Naturall it cannot be, for then flesh and blood might beleeve, and the wifedom of the flesh might be ſubject to the Law of God, which the Scripture denies, *Mat. 16.16,17. Rom. 8.7.* 2. There ſhould be no need that Christ die, except only to ſatisfie for our breach of the Law, not to purchase new grace to us by his merits, and ſuch a power ſhould be no grace of Christ. If it be a supernaturall grace merited by Christ, then have Pagans, and all the Heathen that supernaturall inherent grace to beleeve in the Son of God, and yet the object thereof, the Gospel is not revealed to them, which is an incongruous dispensation not warranted by the Scripture, that the Lord ſhould give a supernaturall power, to beleeve they know not what. 2. A supernaturall power to beleeve is ſaving grace, and a power to love Christ, and can ſaving grace be in Pagans or in any, and they know not of it? 3. Yea ſins of Pagans, for which they are condemned, muſt be the Gospel-ſins, for they cannot be Law-ſins, for if all mankind be under the Covenant of grace, there can none at all be under the Law: For there can be none under the Covenant of Works, and also under the Covenant of Grace, for they are contrair dispensations, and contrair wayes of ſalvation. He who is under the Law is not under Grace, and he who is under Grace, is married to Christ, as to another Husband, *Rom. 7.4.* and not under the Law.

3. Grace ſaving must be inefſe-
tuall & in vain. 3. Saving grace is not in vain, but effectuall, *1Corinth. 15.10. 1Tim. 1.14.* And wee are ſaved by the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, *Acts 15.11.* and no greater mercy can be wished to any, then the grace of our Lord Jesus, *Rom. 16.20. 2Cor. 13.14. Rev. 22.21.* by which we are called, justiſied and glorified. If it be ſaid that this grace is not that effectuall ſaving grace, beſtowed upon the Elect, but a generall remote gracious power, by which we may acquire the ſaving grace proper to the Elect. But ſo 1. that grace ſaving proper to the Elect by this means is in the power of all Pagans, and all muſt be gifted with a power to purchase that grace proper to the Elect: That muſt be ſtrange conquiſhing, we muſt all be made our own efficacious Redeemers, and Christ is a Saviour by merit, not by efficacy; For if this ſaving grace be infuſed, it is either

PART. I. the Gospel, given to all mankind.

either infuſed, we doing nothing to which they cannot stand: Or 4. The na-
then it is acquired, and fo we make the generall grace ſaving and proper to the Elect, which everteth the nature of ſaving grace, and makes it the purchase of works. And they muſt ſay that Christ hath merited a generall ineffectuall power to lome, and that he dyed to merit a ſpeciall ſaving grace to others. Let us have a warrant for this, that Christ both died equally to ſave all, and yet with two contrary intentions, to purchase a power of believing which ſhould be effectuall to ſome to ſave them, and ineffectuall to others. If it be ſaid that Christ dyed to merite the ſame generall power to all, but ſome make it ineffectuall, ſome not; This ſaith thus. 1. That Christs death might have its fruit and effect, though all perish. 2. That Christ dyed to merite a far off, lubrick and poſſible venture of heaven, ſuch as was the caſe of the firſt Adam. 3. Christ dyed not to purchase a new heart more to one then to another, whereas *1Pet. 1.18,19.* the blood the Lord ſhed is to *Redeem us from our vain conuerſation,* in a natuſall ſtate as well as to ſave us from the wrath to come; Then muſt Christ have died to buy Pagans from Paganism and Idolatry: and that either abſolutely, and then why ſhould multitudes ſo die in their ſins? If conditionally, what can be the condition going before conuerſation, to wit, that we ſhould be delivered from our vain conuerſation, ſo we be willing, before our conuerſion, to be delivered from our vain conuerſation. And ſhall not the Question recur concerning that condition? In a word with Pagans they will have Christs death to buy Heaven, but not to buy faith, without which Heaven is imposſible. Yea he no more bought to men a grace sweetly and ſtrongly inclining the will to believe, then he bought ſuch a grace to the damned devils. He purpoſed to give Remonſtrance to all Pagans a power by which they ſhould be made fit to perform in *Decla. c. 17. theſ. 1.* all that the Gospel requires, and be fit to be made partakers of the inheritance of the Saints, *Col. 1.* And yet Paul gives thanks to God for that beſtowed on the *Coloſſians,* and God muſt by this call all men to Christ, either mediately or immediately. And ſay that God is prepared ever to give more and more as we uſe the former *idoneus & aptus redderetur ad id omne praſandum quod ab eo in Euanglio poſtulatur.* Remonſtr. in Synod. Dordrac. Art. 2. p. 327. Mediate vel immediate DE UBI omnes mere.

Corvinus me well, and that all by sufficient grace (saith Corvinus) are
contra Me- disposed to conversion, but that sufficiency is not habituall grace,
H. cap. 31. but actuall assistance conveying the Preached Word, which is to
sept. 15. bring all to free-wills power, rejecting all infused power, and to
Deum sec- make an influence of grace, which is in the power of free will to
per secundum use or not to use, and to stand in two. 1. In a measure of heaven-
esse ad eam. ly Doctrine. 2. In the stirring upon the heart; Whence 1.
dom uberior- Grace habituall so is denied; then the will needeth no healing. 2.
rem gratiam Grace universall is limited to the Word Preached, then it is not
promover- dan in its universall; For Pagans hear not the Word Preached. 3. There
qui parciore is no other help given to free-will in every act, but 1. Informatio-
re de utra- on by the Word, that was the grace of Pelagius. 2. Some influ-
tutur. ence of God in every act: But that addes not new strength to the
Free-will will. Shortly they say, Any man may know, understand and bu-
doth all. lieve the Gospel, if the object be sufficiently proposed and revealed.
Corv. cont. And so the naturall man can no more know and receive the things
Moli. cap. of the Gospel, then he can understand the Metaphysicks, the A-
31. sept. 2. cromatics of Aristotle: for these he cannot receive, but judgeth
Quicquid de them folly; And so we are the same way blind, dead, stony-hear-
sufficiencia- ted to believe the Gospel, as we are to know and believe the my-
(gratia)di- steries of Aristotle's Philosophy.
cimus, mon-
mus assisten-
tie spiritus nobis tribui: minimo vero habitualem gratiam que omnibus communis sit a nobis statui.
Sect. 29. Non est potestis in infusa.
Cap. 32. Secundum Concilia & Patres intelligimus tale gracie adjutorium, quod ad singulos
actus datur, cuius auxilio nuntiatur, & ad singula adjuvetur liberum arbitrium.

Lastly, this power of believing and coming to Christ cannot be
in all men, since the Scripture saith of all men (even these within
the Visible Church not excepted) that untill the light of the Go-
spel savingly enlight' them, they sit in darkness and in the shade
of death, Isa. 9. 1. Math. 4. 15, 16. And uide Smalcian No
man can come to Christ without the Fathers drawing, and God
teaching the heart, Joh. 6. 44, 45. The naturall man, & uide
yvora, cannot understand the things of God, but judges them fos-
tishness, 1Cor. 2. 14. His wisedome cannot be subject to the Law
of God. Rom. 8. 7. He cannot (uivora) call the Lord, Jesus,
except by the Spirit of Jesus, 1Cor. 12. 3. He is a withered branch
being

being out of Christ, and can do nothing, Job. 15. 3. 4. It shall be clear
to any, that the Holy Ghost denyeth any such power, as they af-
firm. It reckons not much to tell that Jesuites, as Martmez de Ripul. Martmez.
Swarez, Alphonsus Curiel, Duvalius, Lod. Molma, Did. Ruiz, de Ripul. de
Vasquez, Bellarmine, Phili. Samachaus, Sorbonicus, Gulic. E- Ente super-
stiss, Dominica, Toletus Cardinalis, Pirerius, Salmeron, teach Dis. 20. N.
that, without saving grace, men may, and can first know morall 57.
truths, shining vertues, as heathens, be free of sin, as touching Suarez, lib.
these vertues in their due circumstances. 2. Keep the Comman- 1. de necessit.
dements and Law of Nature. 3. Dispose themselves for, and ob- gratia c. 4.
tain the grace of Conversion by their own industrie. 4. Be victo per totum:
rious over this or that weighty temptation singly taken. 5. That Curiel in
there is no intrinsecall hurt of free-will, that it is wounded a little, Art. 2. N.
because of the darknesse of the mind, and langour of nature, but 1.
not dead to actions supernaturall. 6. That we may love God as Duvalius,
the Author of nature, and Creator sincerelie; And Arminians ass. gratiae, tral. de-
teach that we may without the Spirit of God know all truth, quan. Q. 1. Art. 2.
tum sufficit ad salutem, sufficiently to salvation, and so may will, Biolina de
love, and beleieve without the infused supernaturall habit or grace, concr. Q. 14. Art. 13.
so their Apologie. D. sp. 9. per
totum.

Did. Ruiz. Tom. de volinider. Tom. de Predicari. Vasquez 12. Disp. 138. Bellar. De
grat. & libe. arbit. Lib. 6. c. 13. & per totum. Gamachaeus in 12. Q. 8. 5. Cap. 1. & seq.
Etius Lib. 2. Dist. 41. Sect. 1. Sect. 2. & seq. Tolet. Com. in Ioh. 6. in Rom. 14.
Pirer. in Rom. 8. & Rom. 14. Remonst. in Scriptis Synod. Art. 4. p. 158, 159.

And the Socinian Catechism, c. 6. pag. 212. and Socinus him-
self, Praelect. Theol. Cap. 4. Fol. 15, 16. Et de officio hominis
Christi: Cap. 5. Smalcian on Joh. 1. Hom. 3. Give to us man-
whole, sound, sinlesse, as he came from the first Adam. 2. That
man can do all that God commands him with little help of God.

3. Its an errore (saith Smalcian) that a man hath no strength in con Franc. 2.
spirituall things, there is no need of the inward gift of the Spirit Disp. 8.
of God to beleieve (saith the Raccovian Catechism) for we read Gravitor
not that such a gift in Scripture is bestowed upon any but upon be- hilicinatur
dum ait, Hominem non renatum nihil posse in spirituallibus, nempe in sensu interno, in verbum dic-
num, in conversione ad Deum, in fide in illum. Catech. Riccov. c. 6. Nonne at credendum
Euangelio Sp. sancti interior dono opus est? Nullo modo: Neque in Scripturis legitimus cuiquam id
deum conferri inscrederent.

livers:

Soci. Præl. leavers : such as are born of Adam (saith Socinus), are all born Theol. c. 4. in the same condition, and nothing is taken from such a man, which fol. 14. he naturally hath or was to have. Ostorodius *Justi Relig. Christ.*
Qui ex A. damo naſ- cap. 21. Prædicatio ſola Euangeli potest hominem abſq; interna- cun- tur, ea- dem condi- one omnes uacumur, nibilque ei ademptum, quod natura- liber habetur vel habet- ria eſter.

To this Objection against universall grace (as I judge unanswe- rable) Corvinus Answers, that all the places of Scripture brought to prove mans inability to beleieve in Christ, and to worship him, conclude well that a man hath not strength of himself without

Christ and his grace ; but this is but to cloud the truth, and to mock the reader, for if all and every man (even the Infants of Pagans) be in Covenant through Christ, and be made able by a gifted grace common to all, within, and without the Church, by which they are able by degrees to do all that the Gospel requires, what avails it to discourage them, and to tell , they are not masters of a good thought, without grace ; for they are no leſſe masters of good thoughts and good words, and of good actions then Adam was ; for they are not hearers of the Gospel by nature, but as gifted with universall grace, they are hearers, and before their conversion, and before they receive the Spirit of Regeneration, can please God, and prepare themselves for Regeneration : Yea there is no animal and naturall Pagan *de facto* existing in the world (by their way) who cannot receive the things of God, and cannot come to Christ, except he be drawn, for all Pagans and others are drawn, and by this it might have been said, Adam as wanting supernaturall grace, and as a naturall man (for the Image of God was supernaturall grace to Adam, as Arminius and Corvinus teach) so, was not able to think a good thought, as 2 Cor. 3.5. nor able to receive the things of God, as the naturall man, 1 Cor. 2.14. and Adam so was also dead in trespasses and sins, and must come to Christ the same way to wit, drawn by the grace super-added to nature, as we fallen sinners do.

Corvinus . contra Mo- lin. cap. 34. Sect. 3. pag. 619.

CHAP. XVI.

Cases from the former Doctrine.

1. The differences betwixt such as are externally, visibly, and conditionally, and such as are internally and personally in Covenant with God. 2. Gods esteem, not mens, make Nations Visible Churches. 3 The first and prime subject of ſpeciall Church-priviledge. 4. Gods command to receive ſeals, no warrant to all members to challenge ſurvey, of Discipline, Part. 1. Cap.

Q.1. IF multitudes and people externally Covenanted with 3. Pag 36. God, though not internally, whom the Lord calls his 37.38. people and chosen by him, Deut. 7.6. Deut. 10.15. be the rightly There is no constitute and Vifible Church, as Mr. Thomas Hooker granteth, place of then Kingdomeſ must be his Vifible Church. Anſw. No doubt, Scripture Egypt, Aſſyria, all Nations, all the ends of the world, all the in the word Kingdomeſ of this world, are Prophetyed to be the Kingdomeſ and that Nati- Covenanted people of God, and the Lord challengeth them as his, ons and ſocieties that (Iſa. 19.25. bleſſed be Egypt my people) Iſa. 2. 1,2,3. Psal. 22. 27. Rev. 11.15. Psal. 96. Psal. 97. Psal. 98. Iſa. 42.10. Iſai. 49. 7, 8. 20,21. Cant. 8.8. — Act. 13.46,47. Rom. 15. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12. must be the viſible Covenanted Churcheſ of God, to whom of God & the ſeals of the Covenant are due ; But that none in Egypt, Aſſyria, of all the called Gentiles, though viſibly and profeffedly in Covenant, and affirmed by the mouth of the Lord to be his peo- ſo esteem- ple, the Sister of the Jewish Churche, and his Kingdomeſ, are etch them members of the Viſible Churche, or hath right to membership and in multi- ſeals, except men judge them to be reall converts, ſound belie- vers, and ſo internally called and chosen, is to preferre the judge- ment of men, to the Word of God. And ſince he ſaith that King- domeſ, fathers, children, are his in Covenant, and chosen to be cept men his people, in regard the Lord calleth them by his Word, as he judge them did Israel, Deut. 7.6. Deut. 10.15. Psal. 147.19,20. they must be first invi- all Viſible Churcheſ in Gods esteem ; except he ſay they are not ſaints ſible and Viſible or converts

The first and proper subject of the promises and PART. I.
Visible Churches, except men also esteem and judge them not only externally, but really and internally justified and effectually called. 2. These we are to judge in Covenant visibly, whom the Lord so calls, and to these the seals do belong Ecclesiastically, though we see not signes of their inward conversion; Except we say that our judgement is surer then the Lords; But the Lord calls *Nations*, the *Gentiles* so, and so must *Paul* and Church-members judge all the Kingdome, and all the Gentiles reall converts; Else the seals are not due to them. 3. If we must judge them all really redee-

*Sure. Part. med and sanctified, who are fed by Pastours, as Mr. Hooker teacheth from *Act*s 20.28. feed the flock, then are we to esteem all the fathers who were baptized unto Moses in the Cloud, and in the Sea, and did eat the same spirituall meat, and did all drink of the same spirituall Rock Christ, *1 Cor.* 10. 1, 2, 3, 4. to be really redeemed, reall beleevers, and the whole world to be really re-*

*deemed, and yet the world is not the Church, yet they were Idolaters, murriners, visibly known to be such; And *John Baptist* was obliged to esteem the multitudes, all *Juda*a who were baptized of him, *Mark* 1. 5. *Luk* 3. 7. *Matth*. 3. 2, 3, 4. really sanctified and redeemed, yea and since there be Prophesies under the Messias, that all the Kingdome of the world, *Rev*. 11. 15. *Egypt*, *Assyria*, *Isa*. 19. 25. all Nations, *Isa*. 2. 2. all the Gentiles,*

Tho. Hooker argues that all these Kingdomes are visible Saints, chosen to life as the *Corinthians* and *Ephesians* were, *1 Cor.* 1. 1. *Eph.* 1. 4. So argues Mr. Thomas Hooker from confederacie. 4. Let one word in Old or New Testament be given of a Judicature giving judicially sentence on earth of a number that professedly are hearers, that to visible pro. many are to be admitted as due members of the Church, because *Church-members* conceived of men to be regenerated, and so many rejected, because be justified internally doth regulate the judicall sentence, as touching the time how long they are no the Church-member hath been so. 2. What motives or inducements led *Simon Magus*, and the generation of vipers, the multitude and all the people baptized, *Luke* 3. 7. compared with *Luk* 3. 2. *Matth*. 3. 5, 6. *Mark* 1. 5. (for as many as went out to be baptized were baptized, but all *Jerusalem*, and all *Juda*a went out, except they be so in our esteem,

PART. I. priviledges of speciaall note, &c.

*Mat. 3. 5, 6. and were baptized, (faith *Mark* 1. 5.) what motives I say, led and induced them to join? For they joined but for a season, *Job*. 5. 35. *Matth*. 21. 32. and what rule of the word there is to regulate us in judging of these motives? 3. What outward marks the word gives of outward regeneration, and consequently of predestination to glory, justification, Effectuall Calling, made visible, which we must see in others, before Pastours can feed them as Pastours, for the word is in all the like a perfect rule.*

Quest. 1. What is the first principall and only proper subject of sible and the promises of speciaall note, in the *Mediator*, of the promise of mysticall a new heart, of the styles, properties and priviledges of special body of note; That is, to be called the body of **CHRIST**, the Anointed **Christ and Church**, is ones, and such as shall never fall away, *Jer*. 32. 39. 40. *Jer*. 31. 35, the only 36. *Answr.* Only the Invisible and Mysticall body of Christ, for first principia promise of a new heart, of the Law engraven in the inward cipall and parts, of the anointing, *Jer*. 31. 33. *Isa*. 54. 13. *Heb*. 8. 10. of proper sub- severance, *Jer*. 31. 35, 36. *Isa*. 54. 10. *Isa*. 59. 20. 21. *Jer*. 32. 39. promises, 40. *Job*. 10. 27, 28, 29. are promises of speciaall note in the *Media-* and privi- tor; And if any say that the Visible Church as such, as visible, ledges of whereof *Simon Magus* is a member, is the first principall subject of special note these promises or of priviledges of speciaall note in the *Mediator*, given in the *Mediator* they must join (it may be miltakenly) with *Arminians*. Mr. Christ.

Thomas Hooker did not so ingenuously as need were, refute this Thesis of mine, as he ought to have done, but framed an other of his own, and refuted it, to wit, which is not owned by me. *The summe of Invisiblie Church is not the prime and only subjeſt of the ſeals*, that *Church* is, of the extermalle ſeals. I grant all the extermalle ſeals is not a pri- viledge of speciaall note in the *Mediator*, for it is a priviledge of *Iſhmael*, *Magus*, and of all prophane Hypocrites. And it is not to be ſaid that Hypocrites and graceleſſe men, *Iſhmael*, and *Elau*, have a command of God to receive the ſeals, and a warrant from *Mr. Ruther- his Word to require them*, as that pious and grave man *Mr. Thom*. right of *Hooker* faſh in his *Survey*, *Part. I. Cap. 3. pag. 41, 42.* For (faſh Presbyteries he) there can be no better right then Gods command to injoin, and *P. I. C. 9. his Word to warrant us to challenge any priviledge*. The command *Self. 9. pag. 35, 36, 37*

The command of God is not the best, nor any warrant at all, as grave *Mr. Hooker* faſh, why graceleſſe men should challenge the ſeals.

Hypocrites not true Covenanters.

PART. I.

of God is a good warrant to the Church and Ministers to conferre the seals to *Ishmael, Simon Magus, Judas*, though no Word of God warrant us judicially to sentence them to be regenerate, before the Ministers can confer the seals, as Mr. Hooker and his teach, but that the command of God is a good right and warrant to *E-sar, and Simon Magus, to require and to challenge the seals* is not written in the Scripture, with the good leave of that pious man, no more nor usurpers have warrant to challenge that to which they have no right, or a robber hath warrant to require the purse of an innocent traveller. Can the sorcerer *Magus* say, *there can be no better right then I have to challenge Baptism and the Lords Supper?* Why? *I have the command of God.* Nay but an answer is soon returned to the witch: The Church of *Samaria* hath Gods warrant to confer the seals, so long as the witches skill fails him not to act fairly the part of the painted professour, but the conditionall command of an externally Preached Covenant, is not the best right, nay, no right at all for him to challenge the seals, except he come beleeving and discerning the Lords Body, and mourning for sin, and fulfill the condition: Indeed if the Lord had commanded *Magus* and all the visible members, with an absolute command, *Come and receive the seals whether ye professe, know Christ, or beleieve and repent, or not;* that command should warrant all to challenge, but I trust Mr. Hooker will not stand to such a command. And therefore distinguish betwixt *jus activum*, an active right in the Church to confer the seals, and *jus passivum*, a passive right in the Church to challenge the seals: The latter requires that *Magus* confer the have right as a beleever, and *in foro Dei*, both to the seal and in-seals, when terest in Christ, by the grant of Adversaries; Else he hath no right, there is no command of God to challenge the seals. And therefore we must distinguish betwixt the Covenant of Grace, *qua factum & initium, & qua annunciatum*, the Covenant, I say, as made with many visible members, some, and yet Preached to all. And whereas Mr. Hooker saith, *38,39. pag. that he cannot see how the will of purpose, and the will to receive revealed command, do not contain apparent contradictions.* This Godly man hated Arminians, when he saw them in daylight. I cannot now insist to answer him and Papists and Arminians who object the very same thing. It is clear they differ much,

PART. I. *Hypocrites no true Covenanters.*

but they are not contradicent, more then the decree of God, and the morall obligation of men are contrair. Hypocrites and such, are only visible members and no more, and have no true and internal right and interest in the seals according to the inward grace signified or the promises of a new heart, which are absolute and made to the Elect and beleevers, who are the only principall prime and proper subject of such promises of speciall note in the Mediator.

Ques. 3. What be these principall reall Covenanters to whom only, the new heart is absolutely promised, and how are they known.

CHAP. XVI.

1. *Of the hypocrise, of formall Covenanters.*
2. *Self-deceit.*
3. *The new Spirit.*
4. *Revelations and Prophecies.*
5. *Markes of a Spirituall disposition.*

Answ. **T**HIS toucheth the differences of the old and stony heart in such as are externally only in Covenant with God, and are Hypocrites: And the new and soft heart of such as are internally, reall, and absolute Covenanters: Hence these propositions.

1. An Hypocrite is he who in the stage represents a King, when he is none, a begger, an old man, a husband, when he is really ^{is} Hypocrite, no such thing, *Luke 20. 20. They sent out spies, faining themselves to be just men:* To the Hebrews they are ^{רֹאשׁ} faciales, facemen, men of the face and vizard and ^{מִלְחָמָה} colorati, dyed men, rid men, dipped, baptiz'd, from the root ^{מַלְחֵם} to dye, dip, wash, baptize, *Jer. 12. 9. mine heritage is to me as an speckled bird, or a pyed bird,* and hath casten off my simple liverie, and so is a bird of many sundrie colours: The Hypocrite is dyed and watered with a hew and colour of godlinesse. *Coneph noteth hypocrise, Isa. 32. 6. from ^{רֹאשׁ} simulavit, fraudulent egit.* The noyne ^{רֹאשׁ} Chald. ^{רֹאשׁ} a dissembler, an Hypocrite, who is sometimes just, sometimes wicked, the root by a Metaphore is to pollute,

Hypocrites no true Covenanter.

PART. I.

lute, and defile, *Psal. 106.* the land was defiled with bloods: Hence the Hypocrite is all things, and all men, and nothing, and no man but himself.

Hypocrisie is considered in it self, and so it is opposed to sincerity. Or in relation to these graces and duties which it feignes, and so it is opposed to all the true vertues which it lyingly and feinzedly represents, as painting is opposed to realitie in nature, being a counterfeiting of nature, and it is opposed to things that are painted, so a living man, and a growing rose, things obvious to the eyes of sense are most easily painted as colours lineaments, as a mans body, but things that fall under the understanding only, as the soul, and under the sense of smelling and touching, are hardly pictured. Ye may paint the man, the roses, the colour, figure, and the fires red flaming, but he cannot paint the soul, the smell of

It is hard to ^{counterfeite} *the rose, or the heat of the fire:* It is hard to counterfeit spirituall graces and graces, as love of Christ, sincere believing intending of the Glory things nor of God, Its hard to get a coat, or put painture on spirituall graces, obvious to ^{and the more ye counterfeit the Spirit,} the more Divell-like is the ^{the sense of} *seeing.* forgerie, for he changeth himself into an Angel of light. There is some use for painted men, for they serve for ornament, but there is no use for faith but resting upon Christ, nor for love, but to cleave to God, and please him and our neighbour: In all dutie we counterfeit but the outward bulk of graces and actions, and would seeme to do what we do not: If the colour of graces and godlinesse be desireable, it self is more desireable, but to imitate only the externalls of the Covenant of Grace to keep a roome in the Church, is to put a lie and mock upon the Lord, and to reproach him with dimnesse of sight: And such as hate Christ and the Godly in their heart, and first cloath them with the coat of hypocrites, liers, Samaritanes, seditious men, they much more ^{ing are by} hate Godlinesse, he that would have the picture of the man stobbed or hanged, would much more have the living man in person themselves stobbed or hanged.

What is not Hypocrisie is a resembling of a morall good for vaine glory: In hypocrisy, not by hypocrisie to supprese tears in Prayer, least the man seeme to seek himself, nor for a father to seeme to be angry at his childe or servyant when he is not angry, nor to put on deafnesse at reproache,

PART. I.

Hypocrites no true Covenanter.

135

Psal. 38. 12. They speak mischievous things, 13. But I as a deaf man heard not: It was prudencie, not hypocrisie in Saul to hold his peace and misken when the sons of Belial despised him, it being the beginning of his reigne, *1 Sam. 10. 27.* Nor is it hypocrisie in a Magistrate or Joseph to put on another person to his brethren, though if the ground be unbelief, it is not lawfull for David to feinzie himself mad: Nor for Ammon to counterfeit sicknesse, or to put a lie upon providence: And yet it is not hypocrisie for Solomon to seeme to divide in two the living childe with a sword, or for the men of Israel to flie before the men of Ai. A lawfull end and a right end and motive, contributes goodnessse to actions that are not intrinsically evill.

There is a naturall hypocrisie in all, every man in both sides of the Sun is a lyar, he that said he would wish that he might dwell in the land beyond the dawning of the morning, where they are all sincere, wished to dwell where there are no men; for where ever men are, there are hypocrites and hypocrisie. There is an acquired hypocrisie in all, lesse or more, and an habit thereof in not a few.

According to mens wayes so are men white and painted Hypocrites; Herod profelleth to worship Christ and mindes to kill him, *Math. 2.* And Abi'olom covers treason and rebellion against his father and prince, with the whitenesse of a vow at Hebron, what better is the whoore and what more devote to say, *Prov. 7. 14.* *I have peace offerings with me, to day have I payed my vores?* under the vail of zeal (they think it) service to God to kill the Apostles, *Job. 16.*

But the worst of Hypocrites is he who makes himself a Hypocrite, not before God only, and before men, but whitens and paints himself before himself, and deceives himself, *1 Job. 1. 8.* It is strange a man hath such a power over himself, as to perswade himself that he hath no sin, not only in point of faith, as such as deny any originall sinne in themselves or others; as many seducers now do, *Socintians, Arminians, diverse Anabaptists,* and such as say, the Law may be fulfilled by Grace, we are justified by Works: It is possible to be free of sin in this life and to be perfite, ^{power of} so as they cannot sin: But also practically a mans heart may deceive self-deceit, his

Of self-deceiving.

PART. I.

his heart, and may perswade himself that he is Godly and Religious, *Jam. 1. 26.* and that his wayes are right, *Prov. 14. 12.* and may say within his heart, and so think not only, *I am holier than thou,* and yet not be so much as ceremonially holy, *but remaine in the graves and eat swines flesh, Isa. 65. 45.* but I say I am rich (and which is above admiration) *I have need of nothing, Rev. 3. 17.* that I have no need of forgivenesse, of saving Grace, of the Redeemer Christ, of Salvation. And this is so much the more dangerous, that the prejudice and blindnesse of self-love, doth more strongly perswade self-godlinesse then any godlinesse of the world, and begets a more strongly radicated and fixed habite of believing self-godlinesse, then Ministers the godliest of them, and Professors, and Angels, and the Lord immediatly speaking (so long as the revelation is literal) *Numb. 22. 12, 24, 28.* and Christ Preaching in his Person, *Math. 8. 9, 14. Math. 21. 43, 44, 45. Luke 16. 13, 14. Ioh. 10. 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31.* and the Apostles, *Acts 24. 25, 26. Acts 26. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, &c. 24.* can be able to root out, for they can fence and ward off, and can let out blowes at all that ye can say, and carry this habite of a falle opinion of self-holiness to Eternitie with them, and stand to what conceited lamps they hear on earth, did glister withall; and plead aginst the Lord in his face, that the sentence of condemnation is unjust, *Math. 25. 44.* and that they deserve for their profession to be admitted in to the Bride-groomes chamber, *Math. 7. 22. Math. 25. 11. Luke 13. 21.* and all such farded Professors, are externally only in Covenant with God. And therefore these are sad marks, when first ye hid your lusts and nourish them, and feed upon the East wind of some created last end, and have not God for your last end, *Luke 12. 19. Psal. 49. 11. Psal. 4. 6. Ier. 22. 17.* 2. When ye know not that ye are poor, miserable, blind, naked, *Rev. 3. 17. Math. 9. 11, 12, 13. Luke 15. 2. Luke 19. 7.* and ye were never in Christ's hospital, and are whole and need no Physick. 3. Ye loath Christ but knows it not, *Luke 7. 44. 45.* ye love Christ as a supposed Prophet, and loath him as a Redeemer. One may deadly hate Christ, and not know it. 4. Ye cannot compare the two states together, the state of nature and the state of Grace, as *1 Tim. 1. 13.* ye idolize your own choise, to bear down *Achabs Idolatrie,* but

PART. I. Who are the parties of the Covenant of Grace. but choose not the will of God to oppose. *Ieroboams Idolatrie.* 5. Ye want Christ, and ye were not born with Christ in the heart. 2. Yea ye are eternally lost without him, and know neither the one nor the other.

Quest. 4. Whether or not are beleevers the parties of the Covenant of Grace. *Anf.* These are parties to whom the Covenant-promise is made, not these who already have the benefit promised in the Covenant, but beleevers must have a new heart, and consequently faith already, therefore they cannot be parties with whom the Covenant is made. As because the Image of God is not promised to *Adam* in the Covenant of Works, but presupposed to be in him by order of nature, before God make with him the Covenant of Works, else he could not be able to keep that Covenant, which we cannot say, for God created him right and holy, *Gen. 1. 26, 27. Eccles. 7. 29. Eph. 4. 24. Col. 3. 10.* Therefore *Adam* beleevers, in his pure naturalls, as not yet indued with the Image of God, cannot be the partie with whom the Covenant of Works is made, for then the Image of God must either be a reward, which *Adam* by his pure naturalls and strength thereof must purchase by working, which the Scripture and nature of the Covenant cannot admit, or then the Image of God must be promised to *Adam* in the Covenant of Works, which is no lesse absurd. And if faith be promised in the Gospel, the Covenant of Grace must be made with some Israel and Judah as predestinated to life eternall and yet wanting a new heart: For God cannot Covenant-ways promise a new heart to such as have it, but to such as have a stony heart and beleieve not, *Ezek. 36. 26. Deut. 30. 6. Ezek. 11. 19.* nor can he promise faith to such as have faith this way.

Quest. 5. Who are these that have the new heart, and so are personally and really within the Covenant of grace. *Anf.* Because the new spirit is given, when the new heart is given, *Ezek. 36. 27. Ezek. 18. 31.* Make you a new heart and a new spirit, and many in our times boast of the spirit, it shall be fit to speak of the new spirit, and who are spirituall.

Hence these Questions of the new spirit.

Quest. 1. What is the seed of the new spirit?

Anf. The word of the Gospel, therefore before *Adam* could have

The Word have the Gospel-spirit, the Lord must reveal the Doctrine of the Gospel, *the seed of the woman must tread down the head of the serpent*, Gen. 3. So the word and the spirit are promised together, Isa. 59.21. Isa. 30.21. *Thy teachers shall not be removed, and thine ears shall hear* (this is the inward teaching) *a voice behind thee, saying, this is the way, walk ye in it.* Isa. 51.16,17. Mat. 28. 20. *Go teach, that is the word: Lo! I am with you to the end of the world, that is the Spirit to make it effectuall, by my Spirit,* Job.14.16,17.

The first revelation of the Gospel and the Spirit. *Object. But Adam when he heard first the Doctrine of the blessed seed, could not try the Doctrine or speaker, by any new Doctrine and the first*

Ans. The first Doctrine can be tryed by no other rule, because principles, it was the first rule it self, nor can these principalls written in the heart naturally (*That God is*) (God is just, holy) &c. be tryed by any former doctrine of seeing cannot try whether the Sun be the Sun by the light of some other Sun, that is before this Sun, which is more lightsome. For there is not another Sun before this, the Gospel it self hath God shining in it, to these who are enlightened, as Adam was, a Rubbie doth speak that is a Rubbie.

Obj. How then should Adam know what God spake to him and not to another, are we not to try all spirits that speak?

The immediate word, and fountain-word, at both. *Ans.* There is a word immediatly spoken by the Prophets, and Apostles, that is to be tryed, partly by the first Preaching the Lord made in Paradise, partly by the effects, that it converteth the soul, Psal.19.7. and smell of that same Majesty, and the divine power of another life, which is in the first Sermon, Gen. 3.15. word, and this is *Verbum Dei immediatum*. But when God himself speaks the trying in his own person to Adam, to Abraham, Gen. 22. to Moses,

Ifaiyah, the Apostles, that is *Verbum Dei immediatum*, the fountain-word; neither word nor speaker is to be tryed. The Patriarchs and Prophets are never bidden try the *visions of God*, for when God speaks them himself, he makes it evident that it is he, and only he who speaks, and we read not of any in this deceived, Angels or men cannot counterfeit God.

Obj. There have, after the Canon of the Scripture is closed, been

been some men, who have Prophesied facts to come, that fell out as they foretold, just as *Ifaiyah, Elias*, and other Prophets, then something is to be beleaved, that is not written, and such may have the Spirit, and yet no word of Scripture goes along with it.

Ans. 1. Such men may have (I confess) a Propheticall spirit, but first, they were eminently holy and sound in the faith, and taught that the Catholick Church should beleeve nothing, nor twixt the practise nothing, but what is warranted by the Word. Such as Prophesies boast of Spirit or Proprietie, and reject the word, are therefore not to be beleaved.

2. What these men of God foretold, is a particular fact concerning a man, what death he should die, or a Nation, or a particular, such a man shall be eternally saved, but no *dogma fidei*, nor any truth that lays bands on the Catholick Church to believe that to the end of the world, as all Scripturall truths do, and a doubt it is, if we are to beleeve these, in the individuall circumstances of fact, *sub periculo peccati*, upon hazard of sinning against God, we may, I judge, without sin suspend belief, and yeeld charity to the speaker.

3. If any object, the Prophets did foretell particular facts concerning the death of *Ahab*, the birth of *Josiah*, which concerned particular persons: I, but they so were the maters of fact (as the crucifying of *Christ* was a mater of fact) as also they did by the intent of the Holy Ghost contain Historicall, Morall and dogmatically divine Instructions, so that the whole Catholick Church must believe them, with certainty of divine faith, they being written and spoken for our Instruction, and they sin who believe not.

Ques. 2. What are we to judge of these truths revealed to Professors, when they are in much nearnesse to God, and the Lord is what is pleased to shine upon them in some fulness of manifestation of himself to their souls, especially in particular facts? *Answe.* There is a wide difference betwixt revelations, which speak what is lawfull or unlawfull, agreeable unto or repugnant to the Word; And what is good in jure, and what in facto, shall come to passe or not of facts, come to passe, what ever is given to revelations of the former sort, what shall be taken from the Scripture, whose peculiar perfection it is to show come to passe, and what not.

Of Revelations and Prophecies that now are. PART. I.
what is good and just, what not ; Therefore to say that revelations now do guide us in disobeying higher Powers or killing men, &c. is a wronging of the Word, especially of the first, second and sixth Commands. As to the other, God may and doth lead his owne, especially when they are near glory, under fewest prejudices touching time and eternity, to speak what shall be, but it is not our rule. It's an Argument of nougat, *Such a thing was mightily born in upon my spirit as lawfull and as certainly to come to passe, when I was most near to GOD in a full manifestation of himself :*

Nearnesse therefore such a way is right, or such a way shall come to passe; to God in For not to say 1. that this is a wronging of the perfection of fulnesse of Scripture, and 2. That there is a bastard Logick in the affections manifestatio of him- where God and nature hath seated discursive power ; And we often prophesie, because we love, not because we see the visions of surely con- God. 3. Peter might, the same way, reason, *I saw the glory of cludent heaven at the transfiguration, and the Peers of the higher house, rule that Moses and Elias, and this was then mightily born in upon my spiri- suchabing rit, It is good for us to be here, let us build three Tabernacles : is truth or lawfull. therefore this is true, It is good for us to be here : But the Conclusion is a dream ; who should preach the Gospel as witnesses and suffer for it, and write Canonick Scripture, if these Disciples should*

Peter, at the transfiguration, and be for ever there ? And if they should be separated from the whole John, Reve. glorified body, and make up a Church eternally glorified in that 19. cap. 22. Mount, of only six persons : And the word faith, Peter being when they drunk with glory, *Mark 9. 6. οὐκ οἶδεν καὶ οὐκ οἶδεν τις αὐτοῖς* knew not what he said, neer to God and the Disciples were sleeping, not prophecying, *Luke 9. 32.* did reel and which faith they were in heaven, but cloathed with bodies of sin, stumble & and not led by Scripture-light (as that good Prophecie of Peter etc.

was contrair to the Gospel of suffering and dying, that Christ prophesied was abiding himself, and all his, *Math. 16. 21, 22.*) we should reel and sin : for there may be no connexion between the present nearnesse to God and the thing suggested in the spirit ; and they cohere by accident. So one in prayer is near God in respect The deceit of sweetnesse of accesse, and yet the individuall favour which ye in liberty of pray for conditionally, never granted ; Ye may be saved, and God praying more glorified in the sufficiency of his grace, without granting it to you, as is cleat *2 Cor. 12. 9.* Sorrow and desire can suggest such an answer.

PART. I. Marks of a spirituall Covenanter with God.

answer to the fasting of Israel, as they may say and think, they shall be victorious now over the children of Benjamin, and yet they are deceived. The heart would be silent and let God speak its good to here. The sight may be dazzled in nearnesse to God, and we take keep the our marks by the Moon ; And the liberty of praying is terminated eye single, upon the fiducial acts, and we think it is fastened upon the particu- for rotten- ness in the lar thing we seek : And here the Antecedent is true, as heaven, mind pu- and the Consequnce folly and darknesse. So John, Rev. 19. and triuies the cap. 22. seeth Heaven opened, and behold a white horse and him soul,

who sate on him, and he heard the voice of many, saying, Hallelujah, and saw the pure river of water of life, the tree of life, the Throne, and Him that sate thereupon, &c. But he did not rightly infer that he might therefore fall down and worship a created Angel. All which saith they vainly boast of the Spirit who reject the light of Scripture, which is a surer day-star then the light of glory, for our direction. The light of glory is for our perfection of hap- pinesse, in seeing and enjoying the last end, but not for our instruc- tion in leading to the end, and the means. The Candle-light, and Sun-light in the City comes not without the City to direct us in the way, the lights and torches in Jerusalem and the new City serve not to guide the way to these Cities.

2. The spirituall man judgeth all things, but by the word. In one particular, Samuel, in another, Tertullian, dotes upon Montanus, some of the prime fathers, otherwise Godly, are blac- ked with Platos purgatory, and some of them with invocation of Saints, yet speaking to them doubtingly εἰ τις αἰτῶς, say ; the εἰ τις διδού- spirit may be, where some particular errors are, but if the judge- ment be rotten and unsound in the matters of God, rottenesse in the one side of the Apple creeps through the whole, and so doth corruption from the minde sink down to the heart. A godly here- tick I cannot know.

3. Any bone or hurt member in walking, actually pains and bree- deth aikings, if there be a piercing and a graving conviction, in a Christian motion, that untowardnesse and opposition from the flesh, pains the spirit and new man, and hinders the stirrings of the Spirit, it saith the Spirit is there, as water cast upon fire speaketh there is fire, Rom. 7. 15, 16, 23, 24. It were good to try the unto- wardnesse

Pain, grefe,
& aikings
in spirituall
motions
speaketh
that the
Spirit is
therewhere
such are.

*Marks of a spirituall disposition**PART. I.*

wardnesse to spirituall duties, and severall kinds of delight, whether it be borrowed delight from the literall facilitie of the gift, from glorie and glory, adhering to the office and calling, or from the inbred sweetnesse in honouring God, crooking and pain in walking is a token of life-walking.

4. Its a spirituall disposition in the Church, *Cant. 2.* in a particular soul, to know and be able to give an exact account of all the motions, goings and comings of Christ, where he lyeth as a bundle the soule, as of myrrhe all the night, even betwixt the breasts, *Cant. 1.13.* when ye may be the King brings you into his house of new wine, *Cant. 1.4.* *Cant. 2.4.* when he speaks, *Cant. 2.8,10.* — *My beloved spake and said to me, arise, my love, my fair one, and come away;* when of al Christ's he knocks, know ye his knock, to tell over again his words, open motions, *to me my sister, &c.* where he is. *Cant. 2.8.* Behold he cometh his going, leaping upon the mountains, skipping upon the hills, where he is in his coming, in his dispensation to his Ancient Church? *Cant. 2.9.* Behold he standeth behind our wall, he looketh forth at the windows. 16. He feedeth among the Lillies: when, and how he imbraceth, *Cant. 2.6.* His left hand is under my head, his right hand doth imbrace me: when he withdrawes, *Cant. 5.6.* and is not to be found, I sought him, but I found him not, I called him, but he answered me not. *Cant. 5.6.* *Cant. 3.1,2.* how hard he is to be found, and how easie he is to be found, *Cant. 3.1,2,3,4.* what spirituall stirrings he makes in the heart, *Cant. 5.4.* *My beloved put in his hand by the key-hole.* For (1.) this speaks much soul-love to be where he is. *Cant. 1.7.* (2.) To be able to write a spirituall Chronicle and History of all Christ's stirrings towards your soul, saith ye have letters daily, and good intelligence of the affairs of the Spirit, and of the Kings Court, and that he writes to you, as *Cant. 5.1.* *I am come into my garden, my sister, my spouse; I have gathered my myrrhe with my spice, I have eaten my honey-comb with my honey, I have drunk my wine with my milk.*: Then will Christ write a letter to spirituall ones, and (as it were, with reverence to his Holinesse) give a sort of account where he is, what he does, what thoughts he hath to us: O! how few know this?

5. Godly missing of Christ must be a gracious disposition, *Cant. 5.6.* *I opened to my beloved, but my beloved had withdrawn himself,*

PART. I. in a personall Covenanter with God.

143

self, Cant. 3.1. I sought him but I found him not, vers. 2. I sought him but I found him not. Such as are pleased with a bare literall missing and are not also in a holy manner anxious and are not

6. Restlesse in rising and going through the City, in the streets and the broad wayes, seeking and asking, *saw ye him whom my soul loveth?* *Cant. 3.1,2,3.* are not so spirituall, as is required. *Cant. 5.6.* *My beloved had withdrawn himself, and was gone,* my soul failed when he spake, remembraunce his speeches, when he knocked. v. 2. There may be some too longlome securitie under sad falls, when he is not soon missed, *2 Sam. 11. 1,2,3.* *Psal. 26.15.* Yea a spirituall soul having regard to all the Commandements misseth the spirits acting in all the wayes in eating, *Pro. 3.6.* *14.27.35.1 Cor. 10.31. Job 1.5.*

7. Frequent convictions (which are the connaturall actings of the Spirit) *Joh. 16.9.* and of the most spirituall sins, as of unbelief, and Gospel-ignorance, *Joh. 16.9.* prove a spirituall state: most spirituall sins flaming prove fire to be fire. Unbelief is more contrair to the true Spirit, then carnall sins being most contrary to the flower and blosomings of the Spirit in his sweetest operations, and most against the spirituallnesse of the Mediator-love of Christ. For as by the fall, Christ hath a new Convictions for Office to redeem us, *Matth. 1.21.* *1 Tim. 1.15.* *Luke 19.10.* *Isa. Min hab. 6.1,2.* *Isa. 44.6,9.* So the Spirit hath a new Office, which he new office should not have had, if man had not sinned, to apply the blood of Christ to redēm,rinkling as a sort of Mediatory intercession, to dippe us in the fountain of his blood. *John 16.14.* *He shall receive of mine, and give it unto you.* *Job. 14.16.* to be the Comforter, *Job. 14.16.* comfort, the Leader, *Job. 16.13.* the Witness, *Job. 15.26.* *Rom. 8.15,16.* neither of the Spirit in his Office cannot step one foot with the unbeliever. which hence much tendernes and smiting of heart where the Spirit, should *Sam. 24.5.* is. Yea conscience to weep as one over his mothers grave, for his enemies, *Psf. 35.13,14.* and strict doubling of faith in man's greatest depps: In which Christ proves himself to be more then a believing man, *Mat. 26.39.* *Luk. 22.42,44.* for no man that is only man can both drink hell & believe heaven at once. 8. In duties there be three. 1. The end. 2. The delight in them. 3. The successe. As to the end, the lesse of the creature and self, and the more of God in the end, so much the more denied and spirituall is the doer, when purely

Marks of a spirituall disposition,

The Spirituall for God as we do, 1 Cor. 10. 13. Col. 3. 23. we are sick as the Spirit for God, and in health for God, and wake to him, Psal. 119. to doe all 62, 147, 148. and sleep to him, Psal. 16. 7. Psal. 139. 18. live for God as to him, 1 Pet. 2. 23. live and die to him and to Christ, Rom. 14. God. 7. 8. and pray to him, even when we speak to God, Eccles. 5. 4. 2. and preach to prepare a Bride to him, 2 Cor. 1. 14. 2 Cor. 4. 25. we may be not speaking to God, or for God and his honour, 1 Cor. 11. 2. 1 Thess. 2. 19, 20. How miserable and carnall to doe all for the creature, the flesh, Rom. 13. 14. Jer. 22. 15. Isa. 5. 8. for self, Dan. 4. 30. Heb. 2. 5, 6. and this speaks much of the Spirit when the man is sick and hungry, for the exalting of God, and the will is so capaciously wide in this, that he would his eternal glory were a foot-stool for the highting of his glory, Exod. 32. 37. Rom. 9. 3. the will is a most spirituall and capacious facultie, and O ! what acceptable service when the mans will looks right toward an infinite Majestie, as thirsting for and panting after this : O ! all beings, millions of Worlds, Angels and men, and all created beings, Heaven, Earth, Sun, Moone, Stars, Clouds, Air, Seas, Floods, Beasts, Birds, Fishes, and all the drops of Raine and Hail, Snow, Dew, so many Worlds of Angels would sing his praises ? What wonder then, he accept the will for the deed ? And what is to be thought of the will averse from God, and which hates him, and wishes that God were not ? How contrair to a Spirituall disposition is this ?

Its spiritu-
alnesse of when abstractedly from private consolation we go about the duty as duty, *ut bonum honestum*, and not upon this formall account because it delighteth us ; Except the delight be in the Law of the Lord, night and day, as it glorifieth him. 2. It's spiritualnesse disposition for God, and can rest upon suffering and burning quick as it is due to doe our ty, though the sufferer should be deserted all the while ; We often feed our selves with the *bonum secundum*, the pleasantnesse of the duty, not the duty, which is our sin, except the sweetnesse of the holiness of the duty be our delight, and the beauty of pleasing God allure us, but feeling being away, we find how hard it is, to delight ourselves in the Lord. 3. We do duties too often, for the success, not for the duty : We pray, the Lord hears not, we wearie

" a covenanter. in a personall Covenanter with God."

we rebuke men, they care not, and we wearie ; Successe and not duty, self-delight and not the honouring of God, which should be alnes to do all our delight, take us up. I pray and weep for my enemies (Ah ! if it could be done) saith David, they are worse, Psal. 35. 13. duty, not but my prayer returned to my bosome, that is, the sweet peace of God, which is the fruit of the duty of praying came to my soul, and cheered me.

We consider not that the promise of peace, and consolation is made to the duty it self, Psal. 119. 165. Psal. 19.

Prov. 3. 21, 22, 23, 24, 25. not to successe of the duty, and wee consider not that we are to be quieted in the duty, and to be armed with patience, against the temptation of the duty. Often it incages Pharisees against CHRIST and the Apostles, yet the Spirit bids them Preach. Therefore whether successe in praying, and the suggar of delight in duties hire us, or not ; We are to know that though Abrahams offering of Isaac to God had neither in it the one nor the other, nor our Saviours offering himself to God, for the sinnes of the world ; If reason weigh the one and the other, yet because both were performed upon the motive of the love of God commanding, both was most spirituall obedience, especially, because the duty is both work and wage, and the more of the Word of God is in the obedience ; I mean not the letter only, but the word including the love. 2. The authority of the Commander. 3. The beauty apprehended to be, and the peace in obedience ; the more spirituall is the obedience : The letter only may show you duty, your obligation, and the penaltie of disobeying, and all these three in a literall way, and yet upon that account, the obedience is not spirituall, but Gospel-love added to the Laws-letter makes spirituall obedience.

Gospel-
love inclu-
sed in the
letter of the
command.
renders the
obedience
spirituall.

C H A P. XVIII.

*The new heart of Covenanters, the Nature, Characters,
Properties thereof, hitherto of the new Spirit.*

Ques. 6. **W**hen are we to judge, that we have a new heart ? And when do we know that it is not the old heart ?

The heart
is the man.

"...of a spiritu." The heart of the

PART.I.
Ans. 1 Propos. As Physically, so also Morally, the heart is the man, the good heart, the good man, the evill heart, the evill man, and God weights men by the weight, not of the tongue, of the hands, of the outward man, but by the weight of the heart: *Asa his heart was perfect, 2 Chron. 15.17. the heart of Jehoshaphat, 2 Chron. 17.3.* was perefct. And *Psal. 78. 37.* their heart was not right: the froward heart is the froward man, *Pro. 3.32.* For there is a man speaking within a man, and a heart with in a heart, as if it were a man made up of soul and body. *Thou hast said in thy heart, I will ascend up to Heaven, so the King of Babylon, Isa. 14.13.* So the heart acts Heaven or Hell within a man speak. *Luk. 12.19. they have a heart reyyvavas- ing and a- penuv busied in the Colledge, studying and reading covetousnesse,*

2 Pet. 2.14.

2. Propos. When the Lord tryes the man, he tryes the heart and the reins, *Prov. 15.11. Hell and the heart both are naked before him.* *Prov. 17.3. Theodoret.* God acteth the noon-day-Sun meridionaliter in every heart: The man himself is without, and God within, *Jer. 17.9.* Man searcheth not his own heart and reins, *Confess. 10. cap. 27. in-* for there be plottings and inclinations to evill in the heart, which *in se- tu eris,* the heart knows not, *2 King. 8.12,13.* Peter hath a better heart *Ego sors* then all men in the books of his own heart, *Matth. 26.33.* but its not so indeed.

3. Propos. The washen heart that lodges not vain thoughts *Jer. 4.14. purged from dead works, by the blood of Christ* (above all the blood of bullocks and goats) *Heb. 9.14. purified by faith,*

What the *Act. 15.14.* is the good heart. It is a better heart according to good heart the heart of God, *1 King. 15.5.* that turneth not aside, *1 Sam. 13.14.* of Gods seeking out and finding, then the first heart created of God, *Eph. 4.24. Col. 3.10.* And ah! we seek a good Ru-

ller, a good Physician, when we are sick, a good house to dwell in, and (which is strange) a good horse, but not to have a good heart then

1. Creatio in, and (which is strange) a good horse, but not to have a good heart then
the first, is 4. Propos. The excellent acts of God, in a manner (with glory a peice of to his Highnesse) to mind his first work, to create a better heart therarest of then the first which he created, faith, that there is great need of the Lords good heart, *Psal. 51.10.* of a new heart, *Ezek. 36.26.* Its beyond all

alladmiration, to create so rare a peece as the Sun out of nothing, and a beautifull Lillie out of mire and dirt, out of common clay to bring forth Saphirs, Carbuncles, and in lieu of a stony heart (for grace is not educed out of the potencie of any created thing) to create a new heart, which God loveth to dwell in, rather then in heaven, the high and holy place, *Isai. 57.15.* which so ravisheth the heart of Christ, *Cant. 4.7,9.* and is of more price with God, then gold, or any corruptible thing, even a meek and quiet spirit, *1 Ptt. 3. 3, 4.* is the rarest peece of the works of God.

Its an excellent act of God to keep the vessell in a spirituall season, as *David prayes, 1 Chron. 29.18.* To make roome for Christ dweling by faith, and for love to comprehend love, *Eph. 3.17,18.* and who puts such a thing in the heart, *Ezra 7.27.* when a sparkle of fire from flint falls on water or green timber, there is no fireing from thence. But when actuall influences fall upon an heavenly habit, as the Lord can cast in a coal, or a lump and flood of love, *Cant. 2.5,6. Luk. 24.32. Cant. 6.12.* there are most heavenly afflings of the soul.

3. He bows and inclines the heart to the Lords testimonies, and to cleave to him without declining, *Jer. 32.39,40. Psal. 119.39. Cant. 1.4. Psal. 141.4.*

4. We are to beware of 1. the reigning evils of the heart, of a rotten and unsound heart, *1 Tim. 6.5. Psal. 119.82.* 2. Of an unsavoury stinking heart, that smells of hell and the second death, *The divers sorts of evil Psal. 5.9.* 3. Of an uncured heart, that never came through the hands of the Physician (*Prov. 14.13. A sound heart is the life of the flesh.*) Of an unsound, unsavoury and a rotten heart, *Eph. 4.29.* compared with *vers. 23.* from whence issue rotten words, borrowed from rotten and worm-eaten trees which speak an uncurred heart. *N^o 7. Medici, cu- rare, mitiga. re dolorum.*

5. We are to look to deadnesse of heart in all the branches of it. As (1.) sullennesse and dumpish sadnessse, in refusing comforts, *Hob. 11.5. I'll heal* and being full of unbelieving heavinessse, in *David, Psal. 69. 20. him. Psal. 42.11.* whereas we are alwayes to rejoice, *Psal. 119.52. Phil. 4. (2.) Fainting at the greatnessse of the affliction, Isa. 20. 3. Psal. 14.1.* whence comes withering of heart, *Psal. 102. 4. Psal. T 2 27.13.*

*The heart of the**PART. I.*

27. 13. (3.) An overwhelmed and unbelyeving sowning heart, *Psal. 61.2. Psal. 142.3. Psal. 143.3. 4.* (4.) Deadnesse in going about the service of God, *Psal. 119.37. Quicken me in thy way, of this else where.* (5.) Narrowesse to take in God, opposed to an enlarged and wide heart, *Psal. 119.32. Psal. 81.10.* and straitening of heart, when the soul is so hampered, that he cannot speak, *Psal. 77.4.* unbelyef clippes the wings of the Spirit, and layes on fetters, which may come from the wicked company, and may be laid on by our selves, *Psal. 39.1. 2.* (6.) There is an Atheist heart to hate the existence of God, of Christ, of a Gospel, *Jam. 2.19. Matth. 8.29.* Compared with *Psal. 14.1. Eph. 2.12.* Some beleevers are near to say, I take my leave of Christ, I'll pray no more, for it is in vain. *Jer. 20.9. Ps. 73.13. 14.* but it is not a fixed resolution: of this else where.

7. There is an evill heart of unbelyef to depart from the Living God, *Heb. 3.12.*

Prov. 6.18. 8. A heart that dev'seth, ploweth, or delveth wicked imaginations to nations, *Prov. 6.18.* As *Prov. 3.29. Plow not evil against thy selfe, to neighbour.* *Hos. 10.13. You have plowed iniquity,* such plots are forged against the people of God, *Matth. 27.1. Nah. 1.11.* 9. A proud heart (1.) resisted of God. (2.) Farrest from that work, the lowly and meek heart of Christ, *Matth. 11.29. Phil. 2.5. 6. 7.* eth either on iron or (3.) Most near to Satans heart, *1 Tim. 3.6.*

Q. Why are we more ashamed of an unclean lustfull heart, then of a proud heart? Ans. A proud heart is deeper guiltiness, and are more nearer to Satans nature; And pride and unbelyef are sins more ashamed of proachfull to God, and incroach more upon his Throne, but there uncleanness is more flesh in us then Spirit, and we think that there is more of a beast in uncleanness.

Q. But we are more ashamed of lying, falsehood, and flesching, then of pride? Ans. There's more of being ashamed before men, it being a carnall sort of passion, then of being ashamed before God, and falsehood and lying to men are fleshly evils against common honesty, but pride is a more Angel-sin, or a more God-like sin, a spirituall sin, and pride is a sort of heart-heresie, by which we judge but blindly, we have reason to ascend and climb aloft to God.

*PART. I.**personall Covenanter.*

Gods roome, *Gen. 3.5. 6. 14. 13.* because of knowledge, parts, power.

10. There is deceitfulness and self-deceiving in the heart, *Isa. 44.20. the idolater feeds on ashes, a deceived heart hath turned him aside, that he cannot deliver his soul, nor say, is there not a lie in my right hand,* Obadiah 3. The heart is the greatest sin on earth, to lay and gain-say.

11. There is a wicked fearfulness in the heart to do evill, *Jude 12. finding themselves without fear,* 3 Sam. 1.14. Wilt thou not afraid (with David to the Amalekite) to put out thine hand to destroy the Lords Anointed? Its a godly fear to tremble alwayes, at feasting, speaking, hearing, sleeping, company, *Prov. 28.14. 1 Pet. 1.17. Phil. 2.13. Job 1.5.* And in all there ly snares within, and without the house.

12. There is a wicked flintiness of heart, *we shall have peace,* Characters though we both hear cursing and walk loosly, *Dent. 29.19.* we are of sinfull stoutnesse of heart a-against God. fallen, but *Ephraims stout heart* (2.) will rise whether God will, or not, *Isa. 9.9.* And (3.) the King of Assyria's stout heart will be as strong as God, *Isa. 10.12. 13.* And (4.) its wicked stoutnesse to lay godly mourning before the Lord is in vain, *Azel. 3. 13. 14.* (5.) Its wicked stoutnesse to rest upon your own righteousness and refuse to treat with God, *Isa. 46.12. 13.* (6.) And vain stoutnesse to darre God in his own quarters and fight him, *Exod. 14.8. 23. Exod. 23.8. 13. Isa. 36.10. 11. 36. 37.* if it were in his own seas as Pharaoh and the Egyptians would do.

13. There is a wicked hardening of the heart, when men make the Lord his word and mighty works the contrast party, *Exod. 5. 1. 2. 3. Exod. 7. 10. 13. 16. 20. 23. Exod. 8. 5. 6. 7. 15. 17. 18. 19. Isa. 6. 9. 10. Zech. 7. 8. 9. 11. 12. Ezek. 2. 3. 4. Ezek. 3. 7. 8. Mat. 13. 13. 14. 15. Act. 13. 44. 45. 46.* and oppose God in his word and works.

14. There is a sinfull dulnesse upon the heart, by which men are as weaned children, *line upon line, line upon line,* can do them no good, *Isai. 29.9. 10. 11.* Here it is to be observed that we cannot Preach Omnipotency, nor perswade a world to be created, nor the word to a new heart to be infused, nor can we Preach to a Wolf to become a meek Lamb, nor threaten the Sun to rise at midnight, we but speak infusion of a new heart

Job 9. 20. speak words about the new birth, the husband-man but breaks the earth with his plough, but God makes the corn to grow, and he only, not that the word is not the instrument of conversion of souls, Pro 28.18 Rom. 1.16. Rom. 10.14. but how to the act of infusion of a new heart the word concurses as a morall and fusaory instrument, is above my capacity.

To be 15. There is a froward heart, *Pro.17.20.* that perverteth and is made narrow, to be crafty *ΨΨ* to pervert. 16. A wicked heart, *Pro. 26.23.* set on evil, *Eccl. 8. 11.17.* foolish-body or *nesse* is bound to the heart, *Pro. 22.15.* a dissembling heart, when seminde, to venabominations are init, *Pro. 26.25.* (1.) We take not heed to afflict, to the imaginations, and are not grieved for the constitution of the vex, *Gen.* heart, for actuall sins make originall sin to swell, as two floods running into one maketh a hudge River. (2.) We take not heed to on *Iacob* by the young births of the heart, with the concurrence of the mind, a Metale- fancie and imagination, there are multitudes of forgeries, clay- phis it is to pots, and imaginations framed, as a potter devileth vessels of earth frame by of many quantities, figures, shapes, great, small, narrow, wide, pressing or round, cornered, for the word is a potters word, *Gen.6.5.* 1 Chr. straight as 28.9. With all keeping keep thy heart, *Prov.4.23.* the word is to Potters keep as the keepers of the walls, *Cant.3.5.* as sheepheards, for its frame a ves- sel. Hence in danger to be stollen away, *Hof.4.11.* 2 *Sam.17.6.* *Hof. 7. 11.* *ΨΨ* joisir *Ephraim is like a silly dove without heart,* but we take no heed to the entry, to see what goes in, what comes out. (1.) What if there be no God? *Psal.14.1.* (2.) What if God see not? *Eze.11.13.* Ezik.9.9. (3.) What if man perish as the beasts? *Eccl. 3.19.*

The vain It may be there is no heaven, nor hell. (4.) What if there be
and unreas-
sonable i- no Christ, nor Gospel, but only questions of words? Such clay-
magnifi- pots were framed by *Gallio*, and *Festus*, Act. 18.14, 15. Act. 25,
ons of the 11,19. Hence come imaginations of things impossible, Isa. 14.13,
heart and *I'll ascend to heaven*, saith Babylon, *I will set my nest among the*
the atheism *stars*. Oba. 4. *Tyrus* saith, *I am god, I sit in the seat of God.*

A heart And new-wild-fire flights which are indeed old heresies , are of this kind ; such are dreamers, who see seven lean kine eat seven fat kine, with God in re, its a lie. (5.) A new heart is the Office-house of the work-Christ, and a heart delighting in Gods wayes is a new heart, where house of the Law is imprinted and engraven in the heart, *Isa.51.7. Hearken CHRIST.*

PART I. *performed by the author*
Ye people in whose heart is my Law. Psal.40.8. I delight to do thy will, O God, thy Law is within my heart. Its true there is a new delight in the heart, but not a delight of the new heart, Isa.58.2. Job.5.35. for a delight in the Gospel as a good thing, not as a good Gospel, a delighting in Christ as a Prophet that feeds them, not in Christ as a Redeemer, Job.6.26. that saves them is not a new heart.

Christ as a Redeemer, for. 6. 2c. that saves them, is not a new heart.
2. The new heart is a heart universall, wholly for God as God, A whole
there is an internelle in it, when the whole spirit and soul and and entee
body is kept blamelisse, 1 Thess. 5. 23. 1 Pet. 1. 18. εν πνευματισμοι
in holy conversations and godlinesses, 2 Pet. 3. 11. Half a globe, Half a sin-
though exquisitely plained, or half a cart wheell, is not a globe nor cere faith
a cart wheell. Externall things may be devided, one may be an is no faith
bearing Professor, and a drunken Professor, and a praising, a
singing Professor in publick, and not a praying nor a believing Pro-
fessor in private, spirituall duties, cannot be devided: half a faith,
half a love, is no faith, no love, saving grace is an essence that con-
fists in indivisibili, and cannot be parted.

3. A new heart is a fixed and established heart by Grace, it's a fixed new state, not a new transient flash, a new heart, *Deut. 5. 27.* heart. All that the Lord our God will speak unto thee, we will hear, but the Lord saith, *verse 19.* O ! that there were such a heart in D. Prism them, but it is not in them.

4. *1 Sam. 10. 9.* God gave Saul another heart , then a changed heart is not a new heart , a new spirit or a new gift in Jesus is not a new heart ; It's not newness that makes the heart new , but Gods new engraving . *Jer. 31. 33.* Some new heart or new spirit is an old heart.

5. A heart kept with all keeping is a new heart, *Prov.* 4. 23. both the words note exact diligence in keeping as watchmen and shepherds with all keeping, at all times, *Psal.* 119. 119. some pull their hearts to pray and hear, but not while the sabbath, or under a storme of conscience: and the heart is a word in some company, not at other times and in other company.

6. The heart is new, where the affections are all faith (as it were) and all sanctified, reason and zeal is a lump of angry reason, and fear a masse of shining reverence; and love only soul sickness and pure adherence to God, the instinct of faith wholly on God, as the last and only end. (2.) The heart is new when the New affections which they are.

Our carnall thoughts of Grace, the word PART. I.

affections are equivocally, or at least, at the second hand set upon the creature, but as nothing can be seen, but what either is colour, or affected with colour, so nothing is fixedly sought after, but God, he onely feared and served, *Mat. 4. 10. Deut. 10. 20.* only desired, *Psal. 73. 25.* only loved, *Deut. 10. 12. Cant. 3. 2, 3.* the soul sick of love for only only Christ, *Cant. 2. 5. Cant. 5. 8.* he only trusted in, *Jer. 17. 5, 7. Psal. 62. 5.* (1.) Nothing is all good and all desirable but God, and God in Christ, *Mat. 19. 17. Cant. 5. 16.* the shadow of the Sun in the fountain is not the reall Sun: the stirrings of the pulse of the affections towards the shadowed god of the creature, should be lent, and like the beating of the pulse of a dying man, with a godly contradiction, loving and not loving, joying and not joying, *1 Cor. 7. 29, 30.* mourning and not mourning.

CHAP. XIX.

1. *The place of Evangelick works in the New Covenant.*
2. *Possession of glory and right to glory considerably different.*
3. *A twofold right to life.*
4. *We are not justified by Works.*
5. *The place of declarative justification by Works, Jam. 2. discussed.*
6. *Faith and Works different.*
7. *Possession of life and right to life cleared.*
8. *Faith and finall believing both commanded in the Law, finall unbelief not the sin forbidden in the Gospel only.*
9. *How life is promised to works Evangelick.*

IT's a grave and weighty Question to rid marches between the two Covenants in their conditions, the one requiring the obedience of Works, the other Faith: It's not to be said that for fifteen hundred years no man did doubt of the necessitie of good Works by Works, Paul propone the objections of the *Antinomians*, Shall the Law of we sin and continue in sin, that Grace may abound? Rom. 6. 1. faith, an old questiⁿ in this they spake through the occasion of what he taught, chap. 5. some have said they are hurtfull, because we abuse them, som^e Church. arbitrary and indifferent, because they are not necessary to justification

PART. I. and dispensations of God.

stification. O! what pronnete in us to suck out of the doctrine of free Grace poyson, how kindly to desire there were no Law against treason, because the Prince pardons; All sin is virtually Atheisme, to wish the existence of a Law, and so of a just holy and unchangeable God were not, and we can hardly believe this. And 2. what rising of heart and carnall reason is there against the first acts of Providence, why, and what necessity was there to make a Law to forbid the eating of an Aple, God foreseeing that thence should come the ruine and endlesse damnation of all. It had been good God had never created such a Tree. 3. That the eating thereof had never been forbidden. 4. That it had never had such a name, as *the tree of knowledge*, for it deceived *Eve*. 5. That God had not given free-will to *Adam*. 6. That he had given him confirming grace in the first moment of Creation. But,

Observe 1. Satan started first the dispute concerning the equity of the Law, and that we are Disciples of and apprentices to *Satan*, when we tosse and racket arguments in our carnall heart-Logick against the holy Law of God, *Gen. 3. 2.* and make the heart a ferrie boat to cary messengers and divellish thoughts hither and yonder, in questioning the goodnessse of the Law, and the acts of providence, and therefore it is speaking Grace to close with the sweetnesse not only of the Law written in the heart, and these inbred close with principles of honesty and truth, to hart none, to obey God, (for all sorts of Satan raised not the first dispute about these) but with all the judgements and testimonies of God, as *David*, *Psal. 119. 127. 128. vers. 86.* All thy commandements are faithfull, *1 Sam. 12. 7.* Stand still that I may reason with you of all the righteous acts of the Lord. Its a mind like Christs that hath an heart-prejudice at no one command, by an other, and is sweetly friended with all that God commands, *Math. 3. 15.* It becomes us to fulfill all righteousness, and O! how sweet to have no heart quarrell, but a sweet stouping of soul unto, and an adoring of God in all providences, and acts or decrees he hath concluded or done in time or from Eternitie. These draw deep in the decree of Reprobation, God had an hatefull designe against me. 2. The Gospel is an untrue and fabulous dispensation. What a spirit is *Galenus* who reproacheth Moses because he teacheth not that God works ever and by necessity *Galenus de Moses because he teacheth not that God works ever and by necessity isuparium.*

Alphonſus of nature, what is most good for the creature. And that Prince decaimus rex who ſaid, that if he had been Counſellour to God in the time of C.ſtelle. the Creation, many things ſhould have been created ordinariis & ratiuſque melius, in a better order and ſtate, then they were. Let the man ſingula con- be remembred who called the Gofpel a fable, and the ſpirits who dcrenur. reproach the Scripture as inkie wiſdom. 1. A bare dead forme bare Pamphlet flesh, &c. and weak ones under diſerion, who feed upon reports prioted an- and lying news from Sitan, God hated me before time, and car- 1647 p. 3. ries on a diſign of eternall ruine to me, therefore I haue no right to hear, to pray, to eat, to ſleep. 2. Yet the neceſſity of good

Luther, works is asserted by Luther, the *Augustine Confiff.* and *Apol.* Gal. 5. Arti. 20. docent noſtri, &c. Evangelick works are neceſſarie, not In libello de to merite, but by the will and commandement of God: Cal- votis Mon- vin calleth them inferiour cauſes of the poſfeſſion of our ſalvation: ſti. Chemn. Loc. Com. The diſpute began upon occation of the book called *Interim Anno de boni operi*. — M. 1568. and in *Colloquie at Altenberge*, Melanthone cap. 1. qu 3. and the Divines of Wittenberge aſſented to the neceſſtie of good p. 21, 22. works, but the followers of Flaccius Illyricus diſſented: The Confiff. Au. Authořs of the book of Concord condenme theſe of Flaccius their gulf. & A. pol. art. 10. way, and deny a neceſſity of efficiency in works to deſerve ſilvati- Docent no- on, but yeeld a neceſſity of their preſence, that the work of fal- ſtri quod ſtiation be not hindered.

neceſſie bona opere facere, non ut confidit. 3. Theſe diſtinctions are neceſſarie. 1. There is a jus and right to Gofpel life eternall. And 2. there is a eternall poſfeſſion of life ut confidit.

mus per ea gratiam me- iſcriſed pro- pter volun- tam Dicitur lib. 6. Con- cor. p. 666. 2. There is a twofold jus, One by the purchase of merit, and the payed ransome of blood; There is a right ſecundary by promise, every promise giveth a right in a manner: but its unproper.

3. There is promise of life formally federall. 2. There is a promise of life conſequenter federall.

4. There is an order of things, one going before the other as the Antecedent and the Consequent, and in order of cauſe and effect: 5. Law-obedience doth much diſfer from Gofpel-obedience, as Law- touching commands from Gofpel-commands.

6. GOD ſent his Sonne to juſtifie persons, but not to juſtifie works, not to make inherent obedience perfect or our righteouſneſſe before God.

Aſſer. I.

Aſſer. 1. If the new Covenant be conſidered ſtrictly and formal- ly in its eſſence, he that beleeveth whether his faith be weake or though weak strong is juſtified and ſaved, Job. 3.18,36. Job. 5.24. All. 15.9, 10,11. Rom. 3.16. Rom. 4.1,2,3,4,5. Rom. 5.1. for faith juſtifieth as lively faith, and not as great or ſmall: Otherwife none ſhould be juſtified and ſaved but the ſtrong beleever, whereas Christ died for the weak in the faith, Rom. 14.

Hence Mr. Sibz excellently. Know that in the Covenant of Bruiſed Grace God requires the truthe of Grace, not any certaiin meaſure, Reed, pag. 167, 168. and a ſpark of fire is as well fire as the whole element thereof, we must look to Grace in the ſparkle as well as the whole flame, all have not the like ſtrong, yet the like precious faith, wherby they lay hold and put on the perfect righteouſneſſe of Christ, a weak hand may receive a rich Jewell, a ſew grapes will ſhow that the plant is a vine not a thorne: There is a roome in heaven for thee who judges thy ſelf; for the number of lambes, and babes weak in the faith in this Kingdome, do far exceed the number of the ſtrong and aged in Christ; for the Scripture names the whole flock, little ones, babes, his ſheep, they are not a flock of fatheſ and ſtrong ones.

Aſſer. 2. There is a right to life by promife, he that beleeveth The right ſhall be ſaved. Promiffio facit jus, & creat debitum: Godli- to life, it ju- naſſe hath the promife of this life, and of that which is to come; ituſt not And because a promife as a promife cannot create an equality be- as Law- twixt the work and the wages, as is proven, this is an unproper obedience. right, and not proper debt, and takes not away the nature of a free The ful- gift: This is no conſequence at all, the performing of the condi- ful- tion of the Covenant of Works doth juſtifie Adam by Law-works, condition of the Co- ſo as he is no ſinner, hath fulfilled the Law, hath right to life e- ternall; Ergo, to beleeve to the end, and fulfill to the end, and venant of fulfill the condition of the Covenant of Grace doth juſtifie the be- grace, can- no juſtifie, leever, by Evangelick works, make him no ſinner, but a perfect as the ful- fulfiller of the Covenant of Grace, and one who hath due right by filling of working to life eternall. Certainly then, 1. doing Evangelick the condi- tion of the gives us as good right to eternall life, without the price and ran- Covenant ſome of blood, as doing legall gives to the ſame life. 2. When of Works we ſin and fall in atrocious offences, Adulteries, Particide, Rob- ſtulſt have bing, juſtified.

An other right of Redemption by Christ dying. PART. I.
bing, we have as good right to justification by works, and life eternall by Evangelick works, suppose he be a robber all his life, as was the repenting theef, as Adam, suppose he had perfectly fulfilled the Law. Now though believing be the condition of the Covenant of Grace, it is of a farre other nature then perfect doing, to the end, and constant fulfilling of the whole Law, in thought, word, and deed with all the heart, and the soul and mind, and all the strength. For there is no sin here, and so no place for punishing justice, or wrath, none can so believe, but he sins and so deserves everlasting wrath. If it be said, that by the Covenant of Works he doeth deserve it, but not by the Covenant of Grace, for Christ hath merited to him life eternall. *Ars. 1.* We speak now of the right that a Believer hath by Evangelick works to justification and life, as contradistinguished from the merits of Christ, this opinion saith that a man is justified by Evangelick doing, because God hath made the like promise, and the like *jus* and right by promise, to doing Evangelick, that he made to Law-doing, if Christs merits be added to qualifie Evangelick works, to adde to them the worth that they have, then Christs merits must give life eternall by way of merit, or a vertue of meriting condignly to our Evangelick doing, as Papists say, and so Christ hath made us saviours and redeemers of our selves, and this is a right to life ex condigno more then Adams most perfite Law-obedience had. *2.* The Covenant of Grace commanding faith, doeth by this opinion command all that the Law of Works doeth, but in an Evangelick way, that they be done sincerely: *Ergo*, it must forbid all sin which the Law forbids; But the Law forbids not only unbelief, small unbelief, but all the works of the flesh: Also Christ must come *vixen* to louse and dissolve the Law, which he denies, *Math. 5.* for if the Covenant of redemp-
The right
of redemp-
tion is not
Covenant
ours, by
Evangelick
doing, as
Rev.22.14
is exponed
by some, nant of Grace condemne nothing but small unbelief, Christ in this Coven-
teacheth men to break these is the least of the Kingdome of God. ant must dissolve the Law; but Christ sayeth, he that breaks ours, by or teacheth men to break these is the least of the Kingdome of God.

But there is an other *jus* and *right* to life eternall, by which Christ dying hath satisfied the Law, expiated our sins, restored as much and more glory to God by passive obedience, by his sufferings, as we had taken glory from God by our evill doing, and so merited to us life eternall. If any say abusing that place, *Rev. 22.*

PART. I. *We are not justified, nor obtain we right*

14. that we obtain this *Exclusiv* and right to the Tree of Life, and to Christ our life and everlasting glory (which is our only right, the only Charter of blood) by keeping the Commandements Evangelically; he must say that we first may keep the Commandements Evangelically before we have right to life, to Christ, and so before we beleeve. 2. That we merit Christs right or merite by doing, and that by Evangelick works, we buy right to Christ and Christs merits, and so Christ hath not merited to us a *jus* and right and title to life everlasting by dying, and grace and a gracious right to do his Commandements by his death, but that we, by doing his Commandements, do earne and sweat for a right to Heaven, which is to say, that we by doing, merite and deserve the price of By Christ Redemption, and that we merite Christ to our selves, by doing, dying, we whereas it is he and he alone, that hath merited to us Grace and obtaine Glory, and all title to Heaven. Not to say that a Charter of life right to from such a noble Superiour as Christ by the purchase of blood, and life and to of such blood, the blood of God, *All. 20.28.* is some better then by works, to have eternall livelihood and free-hold from our duty and lu-
brick best works, which are polluted with sin, and by which, though we were Evangelically conscious to our selves of nothing, yet shalld we not be therefore justified, 1 Cor. 4.4. for the righteousness in which is Davids blessednesse before Christ, and Abrahams before the Law, and ours under the Gospel, is in forgiving of iniquity, covering of sin, not imputing of sin, Rom. 4.1,2,3,4,5,6,7. But in all the Scripture our sins are never said to be pardoned and not imputed to us, by our own most Evangelick doing, for we are justified freely by his Grace, through the Redemption that is in Christ Jesus, Rom. 3.24. not by the Redemption that is in us, and are wassen from our sins in his Blood, Eph. 1.7. Col. 1. 14. Mat. 26. 28. Rev. 1.5. and sufferings, not by our Evangelick doings, and if such a case could stand, the Martyrs, sure, might well be justified by their own blood, and since no pardoning, washing, Law-satisfying vertue, can be in faith, works, or our Evangelick de-
servings, they can not justifie us nor keep and occupy the Chair of Christ. And the fault were the lesse, if our works were onely *Via ad reg-*
called the way to the kingdom, not the cause of raigning, but they num, non
are called perfect, both in their nature, and conforme to the rule, causa reg-
and undi.

To Christ by Evangelick works. PART. I.
and also in order to the end, to justify us before God, and to save us. And if so, all in Christ may say, We have no sin, contrary to Scripture, Jam. 3. 2. 1 King. 8. 46. Eccles. 7. 20. Prov. 20. 9. Jam. 2. 10. Yea though he that is guilty in one offends in all, yet

There can not be a 143. 2. Nor can it be said that such works are perfectly conform to perfection the Gospel, because the doers believeng in the lowest degree ful in our faith fills the condition of the Gospel. But where it is said that the Go- and Evan- spel commands only faith in the lowest degree; Then the Cen- turies works in the Gospel, Covenant of Grace cannot (say they) be required in the Covenant more then of Works, and it is not required in the Gospel under the pain of to the Law, sinning against the Covenant of Grace, and of damnation, for then to justify us. all who have not faith in the highest degree should be damned, and violate and break the Covenant of Grace, contrary to the whole Gospel, which saith that these who have weak faith are justified and saved, and so the greatest faith shall be will-worship and a work of supererogation. And because this way faith that all and every one of mankind are under the Covenant of Grace, then 1. there shall be none living under the Law. 2. no Law, but only to believe in CHRIST, shall lay an obligation on any Jews, Christians, under pain of wrath.

And if James be to prove that we are justified by works, and yet If faith & mean, that both faith and works concur as causes, though faith works con- more principally, how can Paul deny that we are justified by our jointly works, If Peter and John jointly work a miracle and heal the as causes of creeple man, suppose the influence of John in the miracle be more, out justifi- yet it is not to be denied, that Peter wrought the miracle. Nor extion, and doth the Scripture say that we are more principally justified by James' own faith, and lesse principally justified by works, but the places al- truely that ledged for salvation by works (if works have a causative influence) we are ju- specially Matth. 25. speaks more for the preheminence of works, stified by Paul that Justification, or of growing in Justification, in having our sins not we are ju- imputed to us to our very day of death; and the Question must be, stified by Rom. 4. whether Abraham was justified by works done before works,

circumcision

PART. I. The place of Jam. c. 2. discussed.

circumcision, or not, Rom. 4. when as faith was not reckoned to Abraham, when he was in uncircumcision, and the blessednesse of righteousness by faith cometh both upon circumcision and uncircumcision, vers. 9. and he had faith and righteousness and was in Christ and regenerated, when he was justified. Though some taught Justification by the works of the ceremoniall Law, yet Paul Gal. 3. 10. states the Question of works agreeable to the Morall Law, that are absolutely perfect, and must be done by Grace. And Paul might justly in the Epistles to the Romans and Galatians have excepted himself, David, Abraham, and all the regenerate, for they are justified by giving almes to the poor, Mat. 25. as was Rachab, by receiving and lodging the spyes. The English Divines say, How could the Scripture conclude from Abrahams being justified by Works, whence he offered his Son Isaac, unless by works here we understand a working faith, the Apostle must Fm. 2. mean the same by works, vers. 21. that he meaneth by faith, 23. for he cannot say vers. 23. the Scripture was fulfilled (in Abra- hams being justified in the work of offering his son, v. 21.) which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for rightousnesse: Except it must be meant, that the work of offering his son Isaac was counted to him for rightousnesse. Now the latter of the Text expressly vers. 23. saith that believing God was Believing counted to Abraham for rightousnesse, then the work of offering and faith, his Son must either be the believeng declared by offering his son, Fm. 6. 20. 21, 23. must and faith working by that act of offering, or if they be two sundry be believ- things, he must then say this in effect, Abraham was justified by iug and the work of sacrificing, vers. 21. causatively before God, Ergo, working the Scripture is fulfilled, vers. 23. and Abraham is justified by be- lieving causatively before God, vers. 23. which we cannot ascribe to the Apostle, according to their minde who make faith and works the two collaterall and joint causes of Justification before God: as one would say Peter wrought the miracle. Ergo, the Scripture fulfilled that John wrought the miracle. So Abraham was justified by works, vers. 21. Ergo, Abraham was justified by faith, 23. 2. The faith which James debarres from Justification must be the faith, Jam. 2. by which Paul strongly proves, Rom. 3. c. 4. we are justified without works. If faith and works concurre as collaterall

The place Jam. 2. touching justification. PART I.

collateral causes in our Justification before God, as the Papists contend; but the faith which James excludes from Justification, is no faith at all.

The faith which James excludes from Justification, is no faith at all. But only (1.) fair words to the hungry and naked, and giving them supply for no necessity either of hunger or nakednesse, and which cannot save, and so is no faith, and so can from justification have no saving influence with works to justify and save, but such is the faith which James excludes *καὶ σώσεις οὐκεῖς ἀλλὰ* not the *v. 14, v. 15.* the faith of Paul, saves, Rom. 4. Rom. 5. purifies Paul speaks the heart, Acts 15. 9. (2.) A dead faith is no saving and living *v. 16, Rom. 3.* faith, no more then a dead corps is a living man, *v. 17.* (3.) A Gal. 3. but a faith that cannot be shewn to others in good works, as this *v. 18.* bastard is no faith, for it hath no motions of life. (4.) A faith of the faith only same nature, with the faith of the Devils, who believe and tremble, See Cart. wright, see *v. 19.* (5.) A faith which a vain empty professour imagines to D. Fulk be a living faith, when it is dead, without works, as this *v. 20.* against the can have no joint influence of life to justify and save with good Jesuies of works; all which saving influences contrair to this, saving faith Rhems, hath. Jam. 2.

2. It is to be observed that James maketh mention of two sorts Stapleton of faiths, ch. 2. which the Adversarie confounds. 1. All along, de sola fide *v. 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20.* he gives vive characters of a dead justificante, painted faith, which is in *δρεποντερη in the vaine empty boaster,* *hoc autem ver. 20.* 2. He showes us of a lively faith of Abraham, which sides sine wrought with his Works, now it is a lewd error to make Abrahams charitae faith, and the faith of believing Rahab of the same nature with the mortua est. faith of the vain empty Hypocrite, who's faith is nothing but false words, and with the faith of Divels. So the Papists, Lorinu, fistula & by Estius, Stapleton, Marochius, Bellarmino make it an Hypocritica, criticall and dead faith, and lively faith as Abrahams was, a vital Tim. 1. receiving of Christ and a believing the Lord, so as believing is quantum ad perfectae justitia vitam & veritatem, non autem quantum ad scipiam sibiique propriam virtutem, &c

Lorin. *Commen. in Jac. 2. 26.* (*Sicut enim corpus*) non sit comparatio cum homine mortuo; *sed cum corpore,* nam homo mortuus non potest proprie volari homo; *sed corpus mortuum est proprius.* Quo caram pacto fides sine operibus, est vere fides, tunc mortua — Nec fatus placet quod addit (*Cajetan in Comment.*) fides sine operibus mortuam, quoniam opera sunt concomitania fidei.

Estius *Com. non comparat Apostolus fidem mortuam cum homine mortuo, sed cum corpore mortuus ergo corpus mortuum est vere & proprius corpus, ita fides mortua vere & proprius fides est.*

PART I. The acts of a lively faith.

ed for righteousness, to differ not in nature and essence from the faith of the Devils, whereas in the faith of sound Believers there is a Godly submitting and leading captive of the understanding to the obedience of Christ, because it is the Lord that speaks, and so a receiving of the Word as the Word of God, 2 Cor. 10. 5. 1 Thes. 2. 13. Math. 22. 32. which is not in the faith of Divels. (3.) There is in it a receiving of Christ, Job. 1. 11. a fiducial resting of the heart upon God in Christ. And the word *τόπος* is to confide, to betake himself to a lurking place, where one may be safe from a storme, Psal. 2. 12. Psal. 11. 1. Psal. 31. 2. Deut. 32. 37. Psal. 118. 9. Judg. 9. 15. come and trust under my shadow. And this is contradistinguished from the Divels and Hypocrites who cannot seek their lodging nor a hiding place against wrath in the Lord.

2. It is to lean and rest the body, 2 Sam. 1. 6. *Saul leaned upon his spear,* and by a Metaphore it is to cast the burden upon the Lord, Isa. 50. 10. Psal. 55. 22. hence the word that notes a stiffe, 2 Sam. 22. 18. Isa. 3. the Lord hath broken the stay and the stiffe of bread, Isa. 30. 1, and this is to be done often, when there is no present duty to be done, nor any work required of us, est corporis. but only a fiducial relying upon the Lord alone, as at the Red Sea 2 King. 5. Moses and the people were to leane upon JEHOVAH only, not to act, which cannot be said of the faith of Divels and Hypocrites. The Lord (3.) It is to look with delight and confidence, Isa. 17. 7. as opposed servants, Psal. 123. 1, 2. (4) There is a word that notes hand the to be silent, not to speak, not to move, Job. 10. 12, 13. the Sun King lean- was silent, it moved not: It notes a Godly submission that the soul dur not speak against God, Psal. 37. 7. rest in the Lord, file down under Jebovae: LXX. *subditus est o Domino,* Psal. 62. 6. whence faith teacheth us to submit and hold our peace and lay the mouth in the dust, as a spirit dantoned of God, Lev. 10. 3. Job 1. 21. Lam. 1. 1. Gen 18. 3. 28. Ezek. 16. 63. which is far from Hypocrites. (5.) To believe is to cleave to God, from a root that signifies to adhere as, us, helpes, things glewed together with pick or glew, Psal. 63. 9. Job. 23. 8. for me leane upon thee.

τόπος aspexit cum delectatione cum *τόπος* est inniti, recumbere. *τόπος* silere tacere, Ezek. 17. 17. Ps. 131. 2.

τόπος In Kal. agglutinatus est, adhaesit, amore conjugali. Metaphora a rebus glutinis & bitumine implexis. Similiter in Lexico.

Deut. 32. so we become one Spirit with the Lord , 2 Cor. 3. Firmatur (6.) It is a word of near adherence נִזְזָה to lean firmly upon any intiu unde with hope of securitie , 2 King. 18. 5. hast thou leaned upon this sumitur pro reed ? Hos. 10. 13. Psal. 13. 6. Psal. 31. 7. Deut. 12. 10. Thou securum esse shalt dwell safely , confidently , it places the soul under the Rock eo quod con fidemus of Omnipotencie. (7.) It is to roll thy self upon God , and is sequentur so borrowed from heavy bodies , Josh. 10. 18. Roll great stones to the curvitas ipso mouth of the cave , Genel. 29. 3. Psal. 22. 9. he trusted in the nitor dubi Lord , rolling himself on the Lord . Prov. 16. 3. commit thy rationi. Est in alio spes works unto the Lord , and thy thoughts shall be established . Cart omnia sive Wright layeth it is a Metaphore from men who, being opprested ponere ut se with a burden , transfer it off themselves upon one who is migh- cure quietest tier and stronger : it is excellent when the heart rolles all its cares animus ad- upon the Lord , and disburdens it self upon him. (8.) There is versus omnia a word that notech to leane , to stay or stablish , to strengthen , Isa. res arduas 48. 2. 2 Chron. 32. 8. the people rested themselves upon the word suscipere au- of Ezekiah , Cant. 2. 3. stay me with flagons , Psal. 71. 6. I deat. have leaned upon thee from the womb , and it notes to draw near ,

Ezek. 24. 2. so it is to strengthen and make strong the heart that A summo is trembling and shaking if it be not stayed upon God. And shall ad imum de- all these excellencies of faith , be in the faith of Divels and Hypo- votit. crites ? and therefore it is most absurd to make the faith of Abra-

ham all one in nature with the faith of Divels and Hypocrites , and In iuxta con- junctus vici to make the difference only in having Works , and no Works , as if mus fuit con. there were the same heart leaning , soul rolling , and cleaving to firmavit sta the Lord by faith in Abraham , and in Hypocrites and Divels bilivit. who tremble .

Saving 3. That Scripture , Abraham believed and it was counted to faith not- him for righteousness : Is not Gen. 22. when he did justifie him- eth fare o- ther lively self by the work of sacrificing Isaac : But it is Gen. 15. 6. when the acts then son of promise Isaac , a type of Christ is promised to him : at which can be in time there was no work at all required of Abraham , but only be- lieving the promise , for what should Abraham act or do to fur- ther the fulfilling of that promise , for he believed that Gospel pro- mise in the mean time , with a faith lively , and having with it a concomitant a resolution to walk before God and be perfect , but then the Text shall say , Gen. 15. 6. Abraham resolved to be fruit-

full in good works , when he heard the promise , and that resolution of good works was counted to him for righteousness which is most violent .

4. Who so are justified causally and in the sight of God by Workes , as James saith , to him workes are counted as the formall cause , for so James from Scripture , ver. 23. Abraham , επεισει τῷ Θεῷ believed God and it was counted to him for righteousness . Which sayeth , by that faith he was declared or by that he was justified , which was imputed to him for righteousness . But his beleeving or his faith living and working like the body quickened with the Spirit , was counted to him for righteousness . Now except it be yeelded that James speaks of two faitlis , one dead and empty , ascribed to the hypocrite , ver. 14, 15, 16. another lively and working , ascribed to Abraham , ver. 23. and except this be denied , that Abraham was justified , ver. 23. not by that same faith ; It must follow that Abrahams empty beleeving , ver. 23. was that which was counted to him for righteousness , Gen. 15. 6. but James cannot be so understood , but when he saith , the Scripture Gen. 15. 6. Was fulfilled ; for his faith in beleeving the promised seed , Gen. 15. he shows that Abraham was justified by faith without works , as Paul , Rom. 4. and when he saith he was justified by works in offering his son , as Gen. 22. he saith he was not declared just , or not justified by the empty and idle faith of the hypocrites ; but by a faith that did prove it self to be lively . So that James proveth that we are not justified by a dead faith that neither hath , nor can have good works . As his Adversaries said , and Paul proves , Rom. 4. that we are not justified and saved by works , that is by our own inherent perfect righteousness , because , Rom. 3. all have sinned , Jew and Gentile . Because Abraham then should boast as a perfect man , free of sin , and he needed no Redemer , the Law of works should save him , and so he needed not remission of sins , nor the non-imputation of iniquity . But there is a mids between these , and James saith that is to be justified by faith , by a metonymie of the effect , by faith made known to be lively , not to the world only , but to their own conscience , for if James should mean that we are justified by works properly as counted to us for righteousness , he could net say , ver. 21.

The place Jam. 2. discussed.

*Abraham was justified by works, when he offered his son, vers. 22. he cannot infer, vers. 22. thou seest that his faith wrought with his works: What faith? He had spoken of works, vers. 21. not one word of Abrahams faith, yet he saith, because Abraham was justified, that is declared to be really, before God, to his own conscience and others justified, his faith did work in a lively way as reall in and by his works, and you see that Abrahams faith, Gen. 15. 6. was perfected by works, Gen. 22. when he offered his son. Now it was not perfected as touching the nature of it, and the act of justifying, for Paul, Rom. 4. cites Gen. 15. 6. to prove that Abraham was justified by that faith in believing the promise of the blessed seed, some 25. years, as others reckon 30. years before he sacrificed Isaac, Gen. 22. so that it must follow that Abraham was not justified by works, nor his faith perfect in its lively operations till he offered his son Isaac: when the contrair of this, the Scripture tells us, for by faith he left his Countrey, C. 12. By faith believing the promise he was justified, Rom. 4. many years before: Therefore these words, *seest thou his faith*, must mean that his faith came out to view by his works.*

But there be learned and godly Protestants who grant that James must speak of Justification reall and before God, and not of declared Justification before men only? Answ. Its true, and easie to name them. But these are subordinate: James speaks not of a faith only declared, nor of a justification onely declared to the world: But of a declared Justification that is reall before God:

2. That is declared to the man himself, and to the world. And that James speaks of a Justification before God, the Text saith: Because he saith, ver. 14. *What can that faith profite?* Which is reall justification, he must mean, what can it profite before God, to save before God, and justify? As the word, 1 Cor. 13. 3. if I have not love &c. but under ~~as~~ exceptual, it profits me nothing before God. 2. Can that faith (it is not well translated leaving out the particle in the new Translation, can faith save him?) save him? Then he must speak affected to so of reall faith, and so reall salvation and so of justification before men & to God. 3. The examples of the Justification of Abraham, of Rawbab, which were reall, must say something to the same purpose. 2. That he speaks of reall Justification to the mans own conscience as

well

*PART. I.**The place Jam. 2. discussed.*

well as to the world if clear in the Text also. For James speaks to the conscience and primitiv of the man who saith that he is justified, and hath faith, vers. 18. Σύ τοι είσιν εγκίνεις. 19. Σύ τοι είσεστε, thou hast faith, thou believest, the Devils also believest, he would have the hypocrite to discusse his own conscience, and solidely to know, whether his Faith and Justification be reall or not; And James wakens all visible professors in this Epistle (as John also doth) to try his Religion whether it be true and solide, or vain: by Chap. 1. being a doer of the Word, and not a hearer only, 23, 24. by visiting the fatherlesse, vers. 27. by loving and respecting the poor that are Godly, as well as the rich, Ch. 2. by trying his faith whether it be dead or lively, by bridling the tongue, Ch. 3.

And therefore the Arminians and others do but lose their labour, who say James doeth not speak here of Justification declared to the world, because the world cannot judge infallibly whether our works by which we are declared to be justified, are sincere or not. For 1. we say that James doth speak of Justification declared to the world, for he speaks of real Justification before God but as

declared, not to the world only, but to the conscience also of the doer. 2. Because the world can not infallibly judge of our Justification and works, therefore they cannot judge at all. Its a loose consequence: For we may declare our selves to our own conscience and to others by our good works, that we are before God justified. Otherwise because men cannot see our good works, nor the principles from which they proceed, whether from saving faith or not, nor the ends for which they are, whether for the glory of God, or not, men should not glorifie our heavenly Father: Contrario to Matth. 5. 16. nor should the Gentiles glorify God in the day of visitation: As 1 Pet. 2. 12. because they cannot infallibly know whether they be good works or not and done in faith and for God: Nor is Abraham declared to be justified because of a secret intentio ab in corde hominis. Theologia enim eorum non patitur credere hoc verum esse — nam ne de operibus ipsis constare potest an sint bona opera: non enim possunt esse bona nisi ex fide sicut, ex fide cuncti non modo non possunt alieri declarari, sed ne illi ipsi, id constare potest, qui ea faciunt. Quia seipsum illa eadem opera praestare potest.

Remonstr
Apol. c. 10.
fol. 13. col. 2. Jacobson
de justifica
tione non
loqui docent
verbi ipsa.
Quis enim
ad eo ve
rest qui cum
Apostolo
concedere
homo decla
retur iustus
ex fide, fides
enim quae
nus fiducia
operibus pie
tatis, non est
in corde hominis.

place

*The place of Jam.**PART. I.*

the place where he was to sacrifice his son, his building an Altar, his laying on wood, his binding his son and stretching out his hand to kill him, may well declare him to be a justified man to the world and to men. *Trelcatius, the Professours of Leyden, Calvine,*

Trelcatius Beza, Parcus, yea a Papist Cajetan hath said well to this point. Not to adde that Scripture shall never admit, that *Abrahams* and senior de Justifica 1. *Rahabs sins were pardoned, their iniquities not imputed, and they* Class. Arg. delivered from condemnation, by the works of offering *Isaac*, re- 373. Pau- ceiving the spies, fighting the Lords battels, suffering persecution lus per quod of *Saul*. For *Iames*, if he say any thing for this cause, that good homines cre- works are the formall cause of our righteouinesse, our merits, and ficiamur co- in the very place of the satisfaction of the blood shed by Christ, we rum DEO, shall so be formal causes not of the declaratory act of justifying (for docet. Ico- that may be thought to be the Lord our Justifiers act) yet of our bus, quo modo justifi- own Justification, and so should we fight and run for the Crowne cari cognos- of inherent righteousness of works, as well as for the Crown of canur. 2. Life. And what Scripture is there for that? 3. A man shall be Paulus fide as just and sinlesse, as he may say, *I have no sin, I am just*: And ver 2 folium in order to the Covenant of Grace, which forbids no sin (as some nos justifica- ri Jacobus,

quenam sit vera illa fides, ab effectis, probat. 3. *Paulus huic vere fiduci tribuit justificationem si- ne operibus ut causa justificationis*: *Jacobus fiduci detribuit hanc vim, & contra veram proba ab effectis veris.* 4. *Paulus negat bona opera procedere justificandum*: *Jacobus dicit ea justi- ficationum sequi.* 5. *Paulus a causa justificationis ad effecta discende, quibus detribuit coram Deo vim justificandi, ut in solidum id tribuat Dei gracie & Christi merito.*

Calvin. In libro II. 111. c. 17. n. 11. Incidit in duplum Persagolismum: Alterum in justi- ficationis, alterum in fiduci vocabulo. — *Tu credis (inquit) quod Deus est, sanc si nihil in ista fide contineatur, nisi ut creditur Deum esse, Jam nihil mirum est si non justificet. — nec vero dum hec admittitur quicquam derogari putamus fiduci Christianae.* — N. 12. *Justificari à Paulo dicimus, cum obliterata justitia nostra memoria justi reputamur, eo si expectasset Ico- bus praepostere citasset. Illud ex Mose, Credidit Abraham Deo.* — *si absurdum est effi- clum sua causa priorum esse, aut falso testatur Moses eo loco, imputatum fuisse Abramam fiduci- justitiam, aut ex ea quam in Isaac offerendo præstit obediencia, justitiam non fuit promissa, nondum conceptio Ismaele, qui jam adoleverat, antequam nasceretur Isaac, fide sua justificans fuit Abraham.*

We are not Evangelically justified by Works.

Professores Leyden. in Synosi Pur. Theo. Dis. de Justific. & in Censura Confessio. Remonstrant. c. 10. pag. 145. Apud Paulum nomen Justificationis sumitur pro ipso justificandi actu, qui solus DEI est tanquam causa efficientis principalis, fiduci tanquam cause instrumentalis, Apud Jacobum pro fiduci professione fides sumitur.

*PART. I.**Chap. 2. opened:*

for this way do teach) but finall unbeleef, he no more needs for- givenesse of sins and the blood of sprinkling, nor pardoning grace, then the Elect Angels, or Adam in the state of innocency, and to that, *Prov. 20. 9.* as to that, *Eccles. 7. 20. 1 Joh. 1. Who can say I have made my heart clean, I am pure from my sin?* The man Evangelically justified can say, *I have made my heart clean, I am pure from my sinne.* 4. No needs such a man pray, forgive me my sins, as I forgive, &c. for he is justified from all Law-sins, who is inherently holy and Evangelically just: And so the Go- spel is a new Law which does not forbid all sins that the Law forbids, and the man is not under sinne, though he sinne against the love of Christ. According to that, *if ye love me keep my Commandments*, *Joh. 14. 15.* so he once, ere he die, believe. For the Law (say the Authors) forbids not unbeleef, nor any Evangelick unthankfulness against the Law of a ransome-payer, which yet, I judge the Law of Nature and Nations condemnes: The Covenant of Grace forbids no sin, but finall unbeleef, and the beleever can not be guilty of that except he fall away.

5. And it may justly be asked, whether the beleever Evangelically justified, who needs no grace of pardon of Redemption from in Jacob. c. sin in order to the Covenant of Grace, needs the grace of renovation 2 v. 23. Adverte, to keep him to beleeve, for he needs no pardon for the weak- ness of his finall beleeveng, for the smallest weak faith is a fulfilling prudens Le- of the Covenant of Grace. To these adde, if *James* mean by *opus fidei, quod sicut Jacobus nouit fidei, faith alone*, v. 24. by which he sayes we are not justified, *in ex parte, ex parte, non sunt fidei, no other then the dead faith*, ver. 20. and the *ab que operi- buamorium* faith which cannot save, the faith of fair words to the hungry and naked, when the vain man gives him nothing necessary for his body, 16. the faith without works, 17. the faith that cannot be shown to men, 18. such a faith as devils, 19. and vain hypocrites *effe (quoni- am confite- ros justifica- ri per fidem* boast of, 20. then sure the conclusion is for us, and agreeable to *alique operi-* the scope of *James*, v. 24. *deinde tunc, ye see then a man is justi- in infan- bsis in pice- sed before men and to himself, and so really declared before God, bus &c.) sed*

de operibus hoc est instrumentum operari esse mortuum: & implita est (Scriptura) qualis extenuatio- sen maximi operis, at quod parva erat fides Abrahæ, — mercede verum dicit: P. ubi quis- ton quod non factis ceremonialibus aut judicialibus secundum se, sed fidei gratia justificamur. Ja- cobus autem quod non fide sterili, sed fide secunda operibus justificamur. Ja- What a faith James, Chap. 2. speaks of justified

*The place, Jam. c. 2. opened.***PART. I:**

*justified and saved by works as the fruits of saving faith, & *επειδη* is *τιμων μηρον*, and not by faith only which is dead and without works.* David Pa-
reus, Com. For 1. he cannot exclude saving and lively faith: For that be-
ing God is counted to Abraham for righteousness, saith James, c. 2. *Absur-*
de enim di- ver. 23. for then the conclusion should contradict the premisses,
ceterum si item, and he should say, *Abraham was justified by sound and lively*
v. 21 coope- *beleevring.* Ergo, we are not justified by only sound and lively be-
ratam fuisse leevring. 2. The Adversaries, *Socinians*, and *Arminians*, who
operibus (ni- by this Text, say we are justified by works, know no Gospel-faith,
si opera se- by which we are justified, but faith including essentially new obe-
nch lochiec sumere, per dience, the crucifying of the old man, the walking in the Spirit,
metonymum and repentance; as else where Icite. Therefore when James saith
effecti pro ip- we are not justified by faith only, he must mean a naked dead as-
sa fide operi- sent: as in the former verses; We are not justified; and that is it
bis conspi- which we say: James denies not but saies that Abraham bele-
cuia) 1. Fu-
beret videre, ved, Gen. 15.
quod non e-
rat et quod assent, which was counted to him for righteousness) and Gen. 15.
non dixerat: Rom. 4. he was thereby justified; and therefore Paul and James
Quia fideli, are well reconciled. And the faith here excluded must be a dead
nihil ammen, fide, not a lively faith and a true faith, as the body without the
rat: puer soul is a true body and hath the nature of a true body, though it
diceret, vi- be no living body. So (say they) the faith that James excludes
des opera is a true faith, when as it is evident, it is no more true faith than
faulie con- perat &c. the faith of Devils and Hypocrites. 3. It is false by the Papisti
2. *Absurde*
etiam diceret, ver. 22. Credidit Abraham Deo Scripturam opere impletione filii impletam fuisse
Scriptura enim de fide & Justificatione Abrahams impleri non poterat, nisi per fidem justificationem
cujus in historia oblationis nulli habetur mentio: ino sibi contradiceret, ver. 20. ex operibus, &
ver. 22. ex fide Abrahamum justificationem aferens. 3. Absurde etiam ex Scriptura. Credidit
Abraham Deo inferret, ver. 24. videris ex operibus justificari hominem. Potius et
contrarium inferendum erat. Videris ex fide justificari hominem, non ex fide, &c. 18
Jaco. Arminius dispu. priva 8. th. 7. Justificatione apud Jacobum pro manifestatione & declara-
tione Justificationis que fide fit ex operibus, sed alia ratione quam ea qua fides propria-
& justificationem DEO propositam apprehendit que certe fide & operibus non apprehenditur, sed appre-
hensa declaratur ——— fides non accipitur cum modo quo apud Paulum pro agens numero
duplici, sed pro fidei confessione & professione quomodo fides sumpta se habet cum opera, tempe ut ei
bonis operibus juncta declarari & manifestari hominem justificationem, & sic justificari, &c.

Catech. Raccov. c. 9. de Prophete muncro, l. C. pag 193.

PART. I. The place of Jam. c. 2. opened.

way and *Arminians* also, that we are not justified by faith only, which is a true and generall assent to the Word of God, for they teach that in the first Justification, we are justified by faith only without works, as *Paul* proves, but in the second Justification when a man of just is made more just (say they) he is justified by works; as saith *James*, c. 2. Now by this they are forced to say, the Popish *James* speaks not of the first Justification, but of the second, but beside that the Scripture knows not two Justifications, *James* must deny that the unconverted hypocrites, and *Rahab* the harlot were justified by only faith, as *Paul* saith, and it were molt incongruous to teach unconverted ones who never knew the first Justification, how they were not justified in the second Justification. And if *James* be speaking of the natrre and causes of the same Justification before God only, with *Paul* and not of the effects thereof, it were false that *James* saith (with reverence to the holy Lord) that we are not justified by faith *καθεις εγω* without works, for *Paul* sayes it, and proves it strongly from the Scripture, and never insinuates that we are justified in a second Justification by works. And sure he should not have denied all the Jews, all the Gentiles, all the world, Rom. 3 9, 19, 29, 30. *David* a man according to Gods heart, and much in communion with God, when he penned the 32. *Psalm*, and *Abraham* a beleever and effectually called, Gen. 12. and justified, when he, Gen. 15.6. beleeved the promise of the seed, Rom. 4. to be justified by works in their second, or their Evangelick Justification.

Yea when *James* saith we are not justified *μηρον* only, he must mean *fidem solitariam*, a faith solitary which hath no works conveying it, as man sees not with eyes that are solitary and plucked out of the heart, and separated from hearing, smelling, and the senses, though faith, if true and properly so called (as they say this is) must justifie as the eye sees only *μηρον*, and the eare only, not the eye, hears, now this faith hath a causative influence in Justification as well as works (if it be proper and true faith, as they say it is, as the body without the spirit hath the nature of a body) and so *James* had no more ground for him to say, ye see then that we are not justified by faith only, then to say, ye see then that we are not justified by Works only. For works separated from faith are

* *James*
can hardly
be under-
stood to
speak of
second Ju-
stification
by works.

The place, Jam. 2. opened.

PART. I.
are no lesse dead works & cannot justifie, *1 Cor. 13. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.* Then faith separated from works, & really pulled from them, as in an hypocrite, is a true faith. Obj. When James saith that a man is justified by works, not by faith only, he maketh faith and works concomitante in that procurement of justification, and in that kind of causality, for he saith not, as he is commonly interpreted (not by faith which is alone) but by faith only *καὶ δύνεται μήσεως ψευδοῦς.* Ans. He is not more commonly, nor soundly and truly interpreted, he is not justified by faith which is alone, *fide solitaria;* by dead faith. For *sola fide justificamur.* Faith hath the only vertue of justifying as an instrument, and so is the Adverb *μόνον Solum* taken, *Matt. 5. 47. If ye salute your brethren μόνον only, what do ye more than Publicans?* Where *μόνον* notes duties only naturall excluding these which only converts in a spirituall way can do, *Matt. 8. 8.*

What *μόνον*
only
Jam. 2. no.
seth.

Only say the word, *μόνον* it clearly saith that a mandat of Omnipotency only in **CHRIST** could heal the sick servant; but yet that Omnipotency is not really separated from justice, wisdom, mercy, *Matt. 9. 21. εἰπὼν διάβολοι Ιf I only touch him, I shall be whole.* But the act of touching was conjoined with the act of hearing: *Who hath touched me?* Yet the act of hearing had no causative influence in the drawing vertue out of Christ, but only the act of touching did extract the vertue, as Christ saith, *Luk. 8. 50. Mar. 5. 36. Fear not, μόνον μήσεως, only beleevē,* saith Christ to the Ruler; can it be said, but this excludes works as touching the apprehending of the power and mercy of Christ in raising the dead Damosel. And yet that beleevēing was not solitary, but conjoined with love, reverence, submission, 35. So *Luk. 8. 50. Mat. 21. 19. And Act. 3. 16. The faith that is by Christ hath given this creeple perfect soundnesse.* *Heb. 11. 30. By faith the walls of Jericho fell.* It were strange to say (by Peter's and John's good works and holinesse, the creeple man was made whole) and (by good works the walls of Jericho fell) and yet there were good works, love, mercifullnesse, courage in the Priests who compassed the walls of Jericho, and in Peter and John. Adde to these that by good works we must more and more justifie and pardon our own sins, and must more and more buy a right to the Tree of Life;

The place, Jam. 2. opened.

as they teach, citing *Rev. 22. 14.* and more merit, *ex parte Evangelico,* life eternall: and so our works and merites must be joint causes with the blood of Christ, and the Martyrs blood and Christs blood must have paralel and collateral influence with Christs blood to buy right to the Tree of Life; Yea and *Paul* already justified, even in the progresse of that which is called his Evangelick Justification, *Phil. 3.* would be in another condition, 9. That I may be found in him not having mine own righteousness which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith. And why should Arminians and Socinians deny it to be Pauls own. For 1. it is inherent righteousness. 2. It is not infused as Papists say, but acquired as they teach. 3. It came (say they) from *Paul's* own free-will indifferent to will or nill.

But how is the Scripture fulfilled in *Abrahams* beleevēing, *Jam. 2. 23.*

Ans. The Apostle spake often of faith *πίστις* and beleevēing, v. 14. twice, v. 17. once, v. 18. thrice, v. 19. twice, v. 20. once, v. 22. twise, that is nine times, thereof Emphatically, v. 23. by way of excellency the Scripture was then fulfilled, Abraham *πίστιν τῷ Θεῷ, beleevēd, and it was counted to him for righteousness,* as its written, *Gen. 15. 6.* before God and man and to his own conscience, when he offered his son Isaac upon the altar. That was reall, visible and conspicuous believing and righteousness, to deny himself so far for God: For *James* is much for Religion made known to a mans self, and to men, and hath far other Adversaries in the other extremity then *Paul* had, even the old *Gnosticks,* who, in opposition to the *Jews* and *Pharisees,* laid aside the Law, doing of the Law, *Jam. 1. 22, 23. all works, c. 2. 14. all conscience of bridling the tongue, c. 13. 1, 2. of peaceable and mortified living, c. 4. c. 5. and thought it godlinesse to hear the word in the Assemblies, ch. 2. 1, 2, 3. without love to the Brethren, and to keep in their head a room, empty faith, and professed fair, and gave good words, but no garments to the naked, v. 14, 15. And *James* had good cause to treat of a visible and declared faith, but yet not meerly declared, but which was reall and can save, 14. and of justification such, as that of *Abraham* and *Rachab,* as was sensible*

Catech.
Racov. 6.
9. pag. 194.

Faith and new Obedience

sible and reall and not in a bare profession: For James speaks of a profitting and saving faith, *Jam. 2. 14. What doth it profit, &c.* Can faith save him? Another devise is here alledged, of a formed faith animated with charity and that justifies (say Papists) and an unformed faith void of charity, and that, say they, doth not justifie: And the same way, but in other expressions, Arminians and Socinians teach, that to believe and do good works, and to repent and walk in all the Commandements of *Iesus Christ*, is to believe, or compleat formed and Evangelick faith. But we distinguish them as the Scripture. Its true, *Rom. 4. 9.* faith is said to be imputed to *Abraham* for righteousness, and so v. 3. v. 5. but it is not meant of the act or work of believing, that was counted for *Abrahams* formall righteousness, there should so no room be left to the satisfaction of Christ, reckoned to be ours: if all the righteousness of God, *Rom. 10. 3. 1 Corin. 5. 21. Phili. 3. 9.* should be turned over in an act of believing, mixt with much doubting and in our sinfull obedience; And the Socinians have more reason for them to say, there is no necessitie of any reall satisfaction of blood payed for us, then the Arminians and Papists: For if our righteousness and inherent obedience may be of grace esteemed formall righteousness before God, by a free Evangelick obdientcm, paction and an act of Gods free-will: the Lord might have esteemed the eating of an apple, or any act of obedience, our formall righteousness; and so Christ dyed in vain, to become our righteousness, where an act of a sinfull man, or a deed of the Law, even tico, 1. C. the Law of faith is sufficient. What needs the shedding of the munere, c. blood of God? *Frustra fit per plura, quod aque bene potest fieri* 9.pag.193. *per pauciora.* There's no need of reall satisfaction.

Ergo tu o. bedientiam subside comprehendis? Sic est Jac. 2. ut fidem Abrahe ex operibus consummatam, p. 194. they expone that. *Ut penitentiam agamus; non secundum carnem ambulamus, — nullus peccati habitum contrahamus, omnium vero virtutum Christianarum habitus comparemus.* Remonstr. Armini. Confess. c. 10. ch. 2. *Utique necesse est fidei prescriptum non alto modo hic (quatenus iustificat) consideretur, quam quatenus proprietate sua naturali obedientiam fidei includit: Hac ratione considerata fides totam hominis conversionem Evangelio prescriptam suo ambitu continet.* Remon. Apologia fol. 113, 114. Edward Poppius. August. Porta. fol. 28.

2. Faith imputed doth well bear the sense of the object that faith layes hold on, as our righteousness, Rom. 3.21. Now the righteousness

PART. I. must be distinguished, not confounded.

righteousnesse of God without the Law is manifested. What righteousness of God? ver. 22. Even the righteousness of God through faith of Jesus Christ unto all. Now if the righteousness of God is manifested without one Law, to wit, of works, why not without another Law, of faith and of inherent Gospel-righteousnesse? And what need that Christ should die, if the act of beleeving should be that precious righteousness of God, and that according to the Law of faith? This by the way. As hope is put for the object hoped for? As Rom. 8. 24. *Hope that is seen is not hope,* that is, the thing possessed, the salvation which we have in present possession, is not hoped for. Col. 1. 5. *For the hops sake laid up in heaven,* that is, the thing hoped for. For the grace of hope is not laid up in heaven. ver. 27. *Christ in you the hope of glory.* So faith here put for the thing beleeved; so faith the Martyr, my love is crucified, that is, Christ my loved or beleeved one is crucified: *So by faith in his name is this man made whole.* It were strange to say, by faith, and repentance, and mortification is this man made whole. And it must be said, it so be that faith includes repentance. Now Peter denies, *Acts 3. 12.* this, why marvail ye, as if we by our power and holiness had made this man to walk? Its not our holiness, but Jesus Christ hath done it, even God, the God of Abraham, &c. ver. 13. hath done it: And yet, ver. 16. *faith in his Name hath made him strong:* That is, faith or beleeving in his Name, that is, in his Power, Authority, God-head, hath made him strong. Ergo, faith is put for the thing or righteousness beleeved: So *Heb. 11.* *By faith the walls of Jericho fell,* that is, by love the soul and form of faith, say Papists, and by repentance and new obedience, which is all one with faith, say Socinians, *the walls of Jericho fell.* So by faith they subdued Kingdomes, stopped the mouths of Lions. What influence reall or physicall had faith in slaying men, in refraining the hungry Lions to eat Daniel? None at all: But thus the mighty God belieaved in by these men, subdued Kingdomes, stopped the mouths of Lions; if it be replied there is not alike reason of justifying faith, which is dead as touching the influence and causality to justifie, as there is of the faith of miracles in these points; it is replyed, there is every way the same reason: For as Abrahams dead faith, if it had

*Faith and new Obedience**PART. I.*

had been dead could no more have joyned and saved him, then the hypocrites dead faith can save and justify him, as *James* faith, 2.14,15,16, &c. So could not these worthies recorded, *Heb.* 11. have casten down the walls of *Jericho*, subdued Kingdomes, stopped the mouths of Lions by faith, if that faith had been as dead in its nature, as the faith of the vain *Gnostick* and *Hypocrite*, who faith to the brother or sister naked, depart in peace, be thou warmed and filled, and yet gives him not these things that are needfull to the body, *Jam.* 2.15,16. And this we must say, except we admit that the fancied faith of the Hypocrite can remove mountains, nor is it place to dispute whether Reprobates as *Iudas* have saving faith in working miracles, it is sure their faith of miracles cannot be a Hypocriticall faith such as is, *James* 2. 14, 15, 16. (3.) The Scripture differenceth between faith and love, and faith and repentance. As 1. we are not once said to be justified by faith, but are never said to be justified by love, repentance, almes deeds. Its easie with an active ingine to labour to prove how faith includes love: And so doth hope and love include many other works and gifts of the

The Script-Spirit, but the Holy Ghost distinguisheth them. As (2.) by faith pure and sound rea-as from a saving principle, *Abraham* sojourned in the Land, by son distin-faith *Noah* builded an Ark, *Jacob* blessed the sons of *Joseph*, *Moses* guith be-would not be called the Son of *Pharaohs* daughter, yet to build tweentiauth an Ark is not to believe in God; we pray in faith, hear in faith, yet and new obedience. these are not the same.

(3.) *Mar.* 1.15. Repent and believe, *Act.* 20.21. Testifying repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord *Iesus*, *Heb.* 6.1. Not laying the foundation of repentance from dead works, and faith toward God, *1 Tim.* 1.5. Love and a good conscience and faith unfained, *Phil.* 5. Love and faith, *1 Thes.* 1.3. We thank God, remembering your work of faith, and labour of love, *Heb.* 6.10. Labour of love. 11. The full assurance of hope. 12. Faith and patience. We believe in Christ: but do we repent in Christ? 4. Faith is a leaning on God, *Isa.* 10.20. *Isa.* 26.3. *Isa.* 50.10. love is not so. Faith is a coming to God by way of assurance, *Ioh.* 5.40. *Matth.* 11.28. *Ioh.* 6.37. a receiving of Christ, *Ioh.* 1.11. an eating of his flesh, and drinking of his blood, *Ioh.* 6.54,55,56.

PART. I. must be distinguished, not confounded. not any of these can be said of love, of repentance, of new obedience.

(4.) If to beleieve in Christ as Lord and Law-giver be formally (for effectively and practically we may with that Learned and Pious D. Prestoun say it is) a consenting to Christs Dominion and Government over us to obey him (though to consent at the Coronation and to swear an oath of loyaltie to a King be widely different from obeying his Laws) as unbelief is a rebellion against his Government, *Luk.* 19.17. then well may *Adam*, in the Covenant of Works, be said to be justified and saved by faith; for if to To give beleieve in God Redemeer, be to give our selves to obey him as our selves Lord Redemeer, and if this surrendring be the obedience of works to Jesus Christ to be ruled & commmanded in the Covenant of Works, and for *Adam* to surrender himself ded by him Covenant wayes, by a legall faith shall be the Law obedience of as Lord works by which *Adam* is justified and saved, and so he is saved by and King, is not formally to Law-faith, as we are by Gospel-faith.

And this is to be remembred, that for one to give himself to believe in Christ as his Lord to be governed and commanded, and to be willing to obey him is neither formally faith (though it may be conjoined with believing) nor obedience, but an intention or purpose to obey. And 1. shall we then be justified by works, that is, by a purpose and intention to work? 2. There are in us *May* resolutions and purposes like *May* blossomes, that wither before Harvest, as some are willing but not obedient, *Isa.* 1.19. One saith he will go work in his fathers Vineyard, it may be he purposes to work, but yet he works not, *Mat.* 21.30. nor is a practicall purpose of heart to obey either obedience or faith formally.

5. If to be justified by faith in Christ as not only Jesus who saves, but as Lord who commands, then we are justified by love, for we are to love him not as Jesus only, but also as Lord, *1 Cor.* 16.22. *Eph.* 6.24. especially since all the works of the Law come under the command of love, *Matth.* 22.3.7. *Luk.* 7.27. *Deu.* 6.5. *Rom.* 13.8.

(6.) All these, thy faith hath saved thee, *Matth.* 9. *Luk.* 7. only beleieve, must be of this truth, thy good works hath saved thee only

only do good works. And it is strange that *Paul* saith, *Eph.* 2. 8. *By grace ye are saved through faith, and that not of your selves, it is the gift of God.* 9. *Not of works, lest any man should boast.* Nor could *Paul* make an opposition between grace and works (as in *Rom.* 11. 6.) if the grace of believing and good works were one in the New Testament, for so we should be saved by works, and not by works. And *Paul* by an *ἀπάρτασις*, takes that away. Yea but we are saved, that is, justified and delivered from obligation to wrath by the works of free-grace. He answers, nay, but nei-

ther are we saved or justified by these works of grace as by means Learned or causes. For we are first saved and justified before we can do Commen- good works, for good works are the fruits of free-grace, since in ter, D. *Trochirige*, 10. *we are his workmanship created in Christ Jesus* (and so justified and saved in Christ Jesus) *to good works, that we should walk 8,9.*

in them. Yea and *Paul* undeniably removeth this doubt, 1 *Cor.* 4. 4. *I know nothing by myself* (that is, by his grace I am free of such sinnes as bring condemnation, and so he must abound in works of grace) *ἀν' εὐεργέτην*, yet thereby (and notwithstanding all my inherent holiness by works of grace) *I am not justified.* (7.) There should be no ground of gloriation and boasting more then this, by the *Socinian* and *Arminian* way, if we should be justified by works which come from free-will not determined by any grace either habituall or actuall which is merited by the death of Christ, but do proceed from pure free-will which separateth the beleever from the non-beleever: Then might we glory and boast that we are not in the debt of Christ or of his grace for that which is our formall righteousness before G O D, and so no flesh can say they are justified by grace, but that we are justified by nature the same way that *Adam* should have been justified without being beholden to C H R I S T or to his

Right or death.

jus to life Affer. 3. There are not properly the same causes of the pos- eternal, & session of Life Eternall, and of the righteousness of Life Eter- nall: The ransome of Christs blood is only the cause of the right way to life For *jus* or right to Life Eternall is a legall and a morall thing, *ens* eternal, are *moralia*, and hath a mortall cause, as a man hath right to such a much dif- City being the Lord and owner thereof by birth, or money, or conqueste,

conquesse, or by gift or grant of a Prince or of the Citizens themselves, but possession and injoying the houses and rents of the City is a Physicall thing, *ens Physicum*, and hath a Physicall cause, as eating, drinking, lodging, sleeping, wearing of cloaths to defend the body from the cold. So the legall right a man hath to the bread and lodging he hath in an Innes, but the Physicall causes, are hunger, appetite, bodily necessities so require and his pleasure to make use of such necessities. Hence the eating, drinking, may *be* Christ's Physically good, and the right, *jus legale*, very bad, he may right of have no right to the bread, when he comes to it only by spoil and merite to rapine. So the legall right, *jus legale* to life eternall is the ransom of blood that Christ payed, our *Goel*, our friend and kinsman, to make the inheritance ours; but that great (I may say) almost way and Apolstolick light, Mr. John Calvin saith good works, are, as it meane by were, the inferiour causes of the possession of life. So simple pos- session is one thing, and *quod jure aut titulo*, but by what Law-right he possessest, is another thing.

Calvinus Instr. 1. 3. c. 15. n. 21. *Respo. ad 1. Arg.* *Istis nihil obstat quo minus opera Dominus unquam causis inferiores amplectatur. Sed unde illi? Nempe quos sui misericordia eterna vita hereditati destinavit, eos ordinaria sua dispensatione per hanc opera inducit in ejus possessionem. Quod in ordine dispensationis procedit, posterioris causam nominat.*

But 1. Good works are necessary, *necessitate precepti*, by the command of God and promise, 1 *Theſ. 4. 4.* 1 *Cor. 6. 20.* *Eph. 2. 10.* *Matth. 28. 20.* and where it is said, 1 *Tim. 4. 8.* *Godliness is profitable to all things, having the promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.* *επαρξία* the promise is opposed to the Law. And that is a strong Argument, *Gal. 3. 18.* *Et γε εἰ τούτη οὐκεποιεῖται ἐν τῇ επαρξίᾳ If the inheritance be of the Law, it is no more of promise, but God gave it to Abraham by promise, Covenant-promise: What is that to the Galatians and to us Gentiles?* Much every way. For three notable points are therein. 1. The heavenly inheritance promised to the seed, to Christ and his, ver. 16. not a poor earthly Canaan, as *Socinians* and *Papists* say, were promised to *Abraham* and his seed, except they say that an earthly Canaan was promised to *Christ*. 2. That Covenant-promise of an heavenly inheritance made to *Abraham*, the same

The necessity
of good
works.

same is made to the believing Galatians, the Gentiles and their seed, else Paul saith nothing for the Doctrine of Justification by faith to the Gentiles, contrair to the purpose of the Apostle. 3. There is an inheritance by Covenant promise a promise of eternall life made not to works as the price that buyes the right: for, sure, then Christ must have dyed in vain. 3. Works are not necessary simply, necessitate medii: for then we must exclude all Infants. But the necessity of a Precept inferreth a necessity of means ordinary to all capable of a Command, that they do good, and *sicut* to the Spirit, that they may reap of the Spirit life everlasting, Gal. 6. 8. (3.) They are necessary for the glory of God, Mat. 5. 16. 1 Pet. 3. 1, 2. 1 Pet. 2. 12. (4.) They are necessary by the law of gratitude, which is common both to the Covenant of Works and of Grace, as we are debtors to God for being, so to God-incarnate as ransomed ones for everlasting life, 1 Cor. 6. 20. Luke 1. 75. 1 Pet. 1. 18. and eternall well-being.

But such as will have our works the formall cause of our justification, they put them in the chair of Christ's merite, and they must be meritorious as Adams legall obedience should have been: yea, but not, but by and of gracious estimation, God so esteeming them, say they. True: but, as is proven, neither was Adams obedience meritorious, but by Gods estimation: Yea and Calvin gives a power of meriting *ex parte* to our works. But our works of grace are dyed and washen in Christs blood, and justified that they may justifie us. But the Scripture speaks nothing of justifying of works, or not imputing sin to our works. Antinomians dream of a freeing of both the person and works of a justified man from Law-obligatiōns, not of persons, and that is a way indeed to justifie works of murther and adulstery in David or any justified man from being sins against the Law of God: But because our works of grace have an intrinscall power of meriting and justifying communicated to them by the merits of Christ, they must be far more our formall righteousnesse before God, then Adams righteousnesse was his justification and life before God. And if our works of grace have no power of merite or worth communicated to them from Christs death, then must it follow, though Christ had never dyed, our works may have the same gracious esteem of God, the same power of meriting, of justifying

Rifying and saving they now have. Yea, and since Christ hath redeemed us from our vain conversation, 1 Pet. 1. 18. by his blood: How wee Why but, as he hath redeemed us from hell, and purchased salvation to us, by giving us grace by our own good works after conversion to redeem and justifie and save our selves, so he hath redeemed us from our vain conversation, 1 Pet. 1. 18. by giving us grace to do such works, before we be redeemed from our vain conversation, and before we be converted, as we may merite our conversion and Redemption from our vain conversation? If it be said, he absolutely and without any condition that is required, on our part, by his blood redeems all, whom he hath given his Son Christ to die for, from their vain conversation. 1. All mankind without exception (for by their way he hath died for them all) must be redeemed from their vain conversation and converted: Nothing can be more false. 2. The Gospel to all, purpure, and the Gospel-Commands shall in vain crave obedience, or so much as the duty of hearing the Gospel, from such as are not yet redeemed from their vain conversation, or not yet converted: For that Redemption is promised to them absolutely, without any condition required of them, saith this way.

Obj. If works have a causative influence on the possession of Objections glory, as working on wages, and fighting on victory, then must against the distinction they have influence on just possession also: For possession, except it of right to life, & pos- session of

Answ. Possession is essentially the enjoying of any thing pleasant, gainfull, yea or honest, whether the title be just or unjust. The Title is accidentall to the Possession.

Obj. 2. He that possessest the Crown, possessest the Diamonds The title or and pretious stones and the worth of the Crown; Therefore he that right is ac- possessest life, possessest the right and title to it. cidental to the nature

Answ. True: but hence it followeth not but possession and of posses- sion right to what we possesse do differ in their nature. Nor do we pro- perly posses the right of possession: for the right or title is *modus* * Possessio- ni, non res, the maner of and the due or the undue way of the of life, and possession thereof. due right to

Obj. 3. Is not possession of eternall life from Christ, as well as life, both the title or right to the Crown from Him?

from Christ but diverse ways.

*Possession of life, and***PART. I.**

Ans. True, both are from Christ, but not the same way. Possession of the Crowne is the enjoying thereof, and is from free grace, and we, as willing and sanctified agents, make use thereof: But Christ alone bought with his blood the title and right to it. And when he gave his life for the rightfull and due possession of glory to us, we did contribute nothing either request or help to procure the title, and the grace to enter in to the possession by faith is the fruits also of free grace. Nor can it be denied but our good works, by which we enter into possession of the Crown, are also the fruit of Christ's death: but yet not so as there is any meritorious or federal power of deserving the possession communicate to our works; Only they are made by Christ's death the obliged way to the possession of life.

Obj. 4. *How then is there a promise of the life to come made to Godliness, 1 Tim. 4. 8?*

Ans. That promise is neither a promise of the Covenant of Works, for by the deeds of the Law no flesh can be saved: Nor is it a federal promise of the Covenant of Grace, strictly so called, How the except any would say that it is called a promise especially for faith, promise is which is speciall Godliness, and the acknowledging of the truth, made to which is according to godliness, Tit. 1. 1. and so a promise made godlynesse, to the Godly in so far as he is in Christ by faith, and in Christ is the promise of life, 2 Tim. 1. 1. Nor 3. is the promise of a title and right, which is made to Christ our Ransome payer, made to our Godliness, as if it did buy our right to life eternall, or were the price thereof. 4. Life is promised to Believers who work, not because they work: And 5. the Lord in these only sheweth the order of bringing men to glory, not the causes of the right and title to glory, except we say the mowing of the first quarter of the Meadow is the cause of the mowing of the second, because it makes way to the mowing of the second, and the mowing of the second quarter is a cause of the mowing of the third, and so forth, until all be mown. As, because God gives grace to work, to run, to use means, therefore he giveth, of free grace, the crown of life in the possession thereof.

Obj. Adams Law-obedience should only have so, and by this may been the cause or way to the possession?

*Ans.**Right to life, differ.*

Ans. Not so, if Adam had perfected his obedience, he should have claimed life by right of sinlessness, federal merit, *ex parte*, without suiting of it by any title of grace merited by CHRIST, not so we. Its true believers are called *εγινονται*, worthy, Rev. 3. but that is legally in Christ the Head, not that the meritorious worth of Christ goeth out of himself and renders our works intrinsically meritorious.

C H A P. X.

Whether or not suffered Christ for any sin against the Gospel only, such as unbelief finally, which is conceived to be the only sin against the Gospel. That Christ died not for all without exception. The unwarrantableness of that Doctrine, how the Law commands justifying faith and repentance, how not.

IT may appear that Christ suffered not for any sin which is only against the Gospel, such as final unbelief: If any sins be considered in any other respect as against the Gospel only, then Christ was not to suffer for any such sin so considered, for where no death is threatened, none is explicitly due, and where it is not so due to the sinner, nor should have been execute upon him, there it could not have been due to Christ nor executed upon him, For the Gospel threateneth not death to any sin, but final unbelief and rebellion (and for that Christ never died) therefore Christ died not for any sin as against the Gospel, nor suffered that which is nowhere threatened. But this is most doubtful and cannot well stand. Its true that Christ suffered not for final unbelief, it being the proper sin of some reprobates, to wit, of such as hear the Gospel, Job. 8. 21, 24. 2 Thes. 1. 7, 8. But it seems against all Scripture that Christ should die for these, for whose sins he dies not: And so that 1. Christ should half and part the sins of the Reprobate, and the Scripture, I judge shall not admit that Christ bare in his own body, on the tree, some sins of the Reprobate, to wit, all their sins against the Law, absolutely, or conditionally, and he that bears not either absolutely, or conditionally their other sins against the Gospel,

Christ suffered to wit, their small unbelief and rebellion, for Christ was wounded and bruised for the transgressions and iniquities of those for whom some sins of reprobates, he died; He must then have been wounded for some of their transgressions, and not wounded for other of their transgressions. And others.

So the sins of the Reprobates, are divided between Christ's satisfaction upon the Cross, and their own satisfaction in Hell: But he suffered (one may say) conditionally only for the Reprobates sins against the Law upon the Cross, if they believe, not otherwise? *Ans.* The same real satisfaction conditionally that he performed on the Cross, for the Elect, the same (say the Authors) he performed for the Reprobate, conditionally, if either believe, but because the one believes, it is accepted for payment for them, and the other believes not, it is not accepted for them.

2. As there is a satisfaction performed for some sins, not for all, not for small unbelief, that sin then must be in the same case with the sin of the fallen Angels, there is no sacrifice for it, nor is Christ's death applicable by divine ordination to purge men from small unbelief more than to purge Devils from any sins they commit. 3. The same incorruptible price of the blood of the Lamb that is given to ransom all from wrath, *Matth. 20.28. 1 Tim. 2.6.* conditionally, is given to buy all, for whom Christ died, from their vain

CHRIST conversation, also, *1 Pet. 1.18.* that is to merite faith to them cannot buy conditionally. Shew us the condition of the one more than the all from their vain conversation, if a condition cannot be shown, Christ must have payed the price of blood upon the Cross, for some upon intention, for others upon another unlike intention. 4. If Christ died for all, not only, for because they did will and believe, but that they might will and believe; and if Jesus suffered without the Camp, that he might sanctify the people by his own blood, *Heb. 13.12. Heb. 10.10.* That be shown in Scriptur he might wash them from their sins, and make them Kings and Priests to God, *Rev. 1.5,6.* That they might offer up themselves holy living sacrifices to him, *Rom. 12.1.* upon a great designe of love, to cleanse them with the washing of Water by the Word, and present them a glorious Church without spot or wrinkle, *Eph. 5.26, 27.* If he gave himself for them, that they should live to righteousness, being dead to sins, *1 Pet. 2.24.* That they might be delivered from the present evil world, *Gal. 1.4.* If Christ gave him self

self for these, for whom he dyed, that he might redeem them from all iniquity, and might purifie them to himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works, *Tit. 2.14.* Then did he die to redeem all men from iniquity, even from small unbelief the great iniquity, small vain and from the vain conversation of small unbelief, and that they conversation might be dead to sins, especially the sin of small unbelief: Except it be laid that Christ gave a price to buy faith to all Reprobate and Elect, and to redeem them from small unbelief, if all would be willing.

But to commit to their free-will the efficacie of Redemption, which Prosper *Carmi. de gratia.* saith, maketh the will of God valide and effectuall, and invalide and weak, according as the will of man: Ergo homines *opus postulatum* have been written by him in his riper years, and reviled by *vina voluntatis, aut intentio.* justly censures as the boyl of Pelagian Doctrine, which *Faustus Reginensis* did covertly teach: The Lord (saith he) redeems such as are willing, being a rewarder of their good or evill wils. Now hardly can these eschew this Pelagianisme who teach, that the death of Christ is an universall salve applicable, by the decree of God, to save all and every one of mankind, Christian and Pagan, so they actually believe: For it cannot be said, that Christ *bunum.* hath died to make all mankind saveable, upon condition of actuall farr. *de fide.* de faith to receive Christ preached: for so Infants, to whom Christ more Christ preached is in no tollerable sense applicable, that way, by any ordination of God, if they actually believe, shall be no parts of the world, & pa. *1650. c. 1.* *Hoc* they must be excluded from Baptism. And it cannot be said that this *argumentum* shall militate against us: for we do not defend such a conditionall applicabilitie of Christ upon condition of faith actuall in preached Christ even to infants in the Visible Church, yet we teach *infantes debent Pelagianis.* *quod Faultus Reginensis.* they are in Covenant with God, and so God hath his decree of election to Glory and Redemption in Christ, among infants as among bisse viraged professours.

2. There is a providentiall, and to many thou rum imaginands of Pagans, who never heard, nor could hear of Christ, an invincible impediment, and so Christ is not applicable by Gods decree to them, upon condition of actuall believing, *Rom. 10.14.* us redit, How shall they believē in him of whom they have not heard? It seemes Christ's death is not a remedie applicable by the Gospel Covenant, to all and every one of mankind, so they actually believe.

seems

Whether Christ suffered

seems to me physically impossible, that there is such a thing as the Indians worship Satan under such a name and in such rites, if I never heard of the Indians, or of their God, or their worship: So neither can they worship Christ in a Gospel-way, who never heard of him. Its impossible to beleieve a *non ens*, Christ offered in the Gospel is very nothing and so not applicable to thousands by any decree of God. 3. This is not written in Scripture. God hath decreed that Christ be Preached and life be offered actually to all and every one of all and every Nation under Heaven, and this opinion saith that Christ died and satisfied offended Justice for the sins of all and every one of all and every Nation under heaven, except for finall unbelleef. The Antecedent is clear by Scripture and experience. God fulfills his decrees irresistiblly: But he never sent the Preached Gospel to as many as these

This is Authors say he died for. Nor can they themselves teach any such false, that thing: Nor is this true, God hath decreed that Christ in the God hath Preached Gospel and salvation may be offered to all and every one, decreed that Christ in the old and young, of all and every Nation, in all Generations, upon preached Go. condition of actuall believeng. And yet for all these, without spet, and fal-exception, Christ died, say they. For not to say, God never de-
cration my cred that such may be offered to infants of Pagans, for whom they be offered to say Christ died. To make a thing that physically is possible, the all and eve-
ry one older object of a decree of God, we must say that God hath decreed to
young, of all give the gift of tongues to all Professours and Pastours to speak to
and every all and every Nation in their own Language, and to make an offer-
nation in all of Christ: For there be many Nations, who never heard of Christ,
generations, and understand not writing or any of the commonest Latine and
upon condi-
tion of actu Greek, and there is not any such decree revealed in the word, and
all believeng we can not but know such gifts of Tongues are not bestowed on
men, and without this it is physically impossible to communicate
the Gospel. It shall not help to say that Christians should travell
to all Countreys and learn their Tongues, that so they may commu-
nicate the Gospel; and it is their sin they do not so. And there-
fore God hath decreed that the Gospel may be offered and Christ
applicable. *Ansf.* 1. What shall become of the aged, and of
multitudes, for whom Christ died, who must die in Paganism, be-
fore Christians can be so mixed and learn the Tongues of all Nations
under

PART. I.

for finall unbelief.

under Heaven? 2. Did ever the Apostles to whom the Lord gave the gift of the tongues, go to this Nation and not to this, but by the call of the Spirit, to Macedonia, not to Bythinia, Act. 16? Is there no call of God now required for spreading of the Gospel? Some Nations would kill them, some would persecute Christians to death and not receive them: in the mean time, many for whom Christ died, perish. 3. Show from Scripture that it is the duty of Christians to mix themselves with all Nations, and to learn their Language, and that they sin in not doing so. Nor let it be said, into what Nation soever I come, I may say *if thou believe in Christ thou shalt be saved.* *Auf.* 1. You can not say that, except you Preach the Gospel to them. For they are not obliged to believe upon one sentence, and if you Preach the Gospel to the Nation, God hath some chosen ones there, and it is no more a Pagan Nation. 2. You are to say to any one by your way (*thou art obliged to believethat Christ satisfied for all thy sins, and for the sins of the whole world*) but that is a lie which you teach Pagans as a principle of the Gospel. 3. Its false that I may say and Preach truly such a thing to every Nation, and all in it. 4. Nor is it physically possible that Christians can so speak to all and every old and young. Also all is indeed referred to the free-will, except the Authors say that God doth insuperably determine the will of the Elect to believeth, and the places speak of the efficacious redemption of the Elect only: But so God had two intentions in Christ's dying, one generall to render all mankind saveable; another speciell, actually to save the Elect. But 1. who can believeth multiplied intentions in God of half redemption from wrath, and of whole redemption from both vain conversation and wrath upon their bare word, when the Scripture saith Christ in suffering without the Camp, suffered for the world of Jew and Gentiles, that he might sanctifie them he died for? 2. What warrant to separate these two conjoined by God, to wit, that CHRIST should bear on the Crosse the sins of reprobate, and not intend that they should die to sin, and be redeemed, but not from all iniquity: be loved and washen, and not made Kings and Priests to God? That Christ should be wounded for the transgressions of many, and yet the chasement of his peace not be upon them? 3. The dying for all and every

That there
be two in-
tentions in
God in dy-
ing for all
without ex-
ceptio, hith
no warrant
in scripture

*Whether Christ suffered***PART. I.**

every one cannot be conditionall, in so far as the condition is referred to dying, to wit, if they believe; for to believing must go before dying, either really, which is manifestly false: for multitudes for whom Christ dyed had neither being nor believing, when he dyed for them; Or in the prescience of God, and that destroys their principles: for so Christ cannot have died for all and every one, foreseeing that all and every one would believe: for he never foresaw that the Reprobate should believe. Then must the condition of dying or Redeeming, or of paying the ransome of His blood (these being all one) be referred to Gods accepting of Christs death for so many or for all, if they should believe. And the same way the Argument is as formerly: For God accepteth the payed ransome for all and every one, if they all really believe, or if they all and every one be foreseen of God to believe before the Lords accepting of them. Both are false, as is evident, and so they say in the issue what we say, and contradict themselves, to wit, that believers, and only believers, are these for whom Christ died. We before said, the promises are conditionally to all within the Visible Church, but so as the condition relates only to the benefite promised, we shall have remission and life, if we believe, but not otherwise: But now the Covenant-promise, which is accepted of, and assented unto by Professors, in their very profession in themselves or their parents, is absolutely made to all within the Visible Church, and they are Covenant-wayes ingadged and say, and profess they are the Lords people, and they take him, and no other, for their God, whether they obey and believe, or no: for a people, not right in heart, may bind themselves in Covenant with God, Deut. 29. 10,11,12,13,14. compared with 21, 22, 23. Deut. 31. 27. Job. 24. 22. compared with Judg. 2. 12, 13. So God absolutely intends to save all for whom Christ dies, and by his death intends to give a price to redeem them from hell and from unbelief, or their vain conversation, 1 Pet. 1. 18. from all iniquitie, Tit. 2. 14. from this present evill world, Gal. 1. 14. Ergo, from finall unbelief the greatest iniquity of a present evill world. But here the case widely varies, upon no condition, that we can read in holy Scripture, gave Christ a price, a ransome of blood to redeem men from unbelief and from all iniquitie, this price must be absolutely,

The promises are so made to all within the Visible Church as all are in Covenant conditionall.

whether they obey and believe, or no: for a people, not right in heart, may bind themselves in Covenant with God, Deut. 29. 10,11,12,13,14. compared with 21, 22, 23. Deut. 31. 27. Job. 24. 22. compared with Judg. 2. 12, 13. So God absolutely intends to save all for whom Christ dies, and by his death intends to give a price to redeem them from hell and from unbelief, or their vain conversation, 1 Pet. 1. 18. from all iniquitie, Tit. 2. 14. from this present evill world, Gal. 1. 14. Ergo, from finall unbelief the greatest iniquity of a present evill world. But here the case widely varies, upon no condition, that we can read in holy Scripture, gave Christ a price, a ransome of blood to redeem men from unbelief and from all iniquitie, this price must be absolutely,

PART. I.*for finall unbelief.*

absolutely given, and grace purchased to all whose sins Christ did bear in the Crosse that they may beleve, that they may be sanctified, Heb. 13. 12. 1 Pet. 2. 24. 2. Sines of Thomas, refusing to beleve the resurrection of Christ, and of Peter denying the Lord before men, and the Gospel-sines of beleevers, after they are justified, and are enlightened, must be sins against the Covenant of sons is against the Covenant, as well as against the Law. And the denying of Christ before men hath a sad threatening of everlasting death, Matth. 10. 32. Mar. 8. 38. annexed to it, if they repent not. And shall these within the Visible Church, who receive not Christ, be in a harder condition then Sodom and Gomorrah, Matth. 10. 14,15. if no sins beside finall unbelief? Yea the Scripture saith such as live in the Visible Church and are in Covenant with God, not only for finall unbelief are condemned, but because they are unrighteous, fornicators, idolaters, adulterers, 1 Cor. 6. 9. whoremongers, unclean, covetous persons, Eph. 5. 5,6. murtherers, soocers, dogs, liars, Rev. 21.8. Rev. 22.15. for all their ungodly deids and hard speeches, Jude v. 15. 2 Pet. 2.17. for all disobedience, 1 Cor. 4. 5. Matth. 12. 36,37. they are everlastingely punished. And if Christ have suffered on the Crosse for all the sines of the Reprobate, how are they judged and condemned for these sins, as the Scripture saith? And what Scripture saith they are condemned for the guilt of only unbelief: or that Pagans are condemned for Gospel-unbelief, where as Sodom, Gomorrah, Mat.10.15. the men of Ninivich, Mat. 12. 41. Tyrus and Sidon, Mat.11.21. and such as have sinned without the Law, Rom. 2.12,13,14 15. are freed of Gospel-guiltiness, and condemned for sines against the Law, and yet this same way saith that there is a Gospel-Covenant made with all, even thousands of Pagans who never heard of a Gospel, never ingadged themselves by any profession to take the Lord for their God in Christ, yet Christ bare their sins on the Tree, and made his blood applicable to them by a Gospel-Covenant, if they shall beleeve. Whence they must all break the Covenant of Grace, of which many of them never heard, and be condemned for no sin but the last act of Sodomy, gluttony, parricide, for the Gospel threateneth not death to any sin but to finall unbelief, say they. There are not any sines committed

All sins a committed against the Gospel, but they are also sinnes against the Law : because God incarnate and *Immanuel* is God, and leaves not off to be God *consubstantiall with the Father*, because he assumes even finall the nature of man. Then as the first Command obligeith *Abra-*
unbelife, *ham* to sacrifice his son *Isaac*, when *God* shall reveal that Com-
against the mand, and *Moses* and the people are by that first Command to be.
Law and r- lieve their deliverance out of *Egypt*, and so if the first Command
against God oblige us to believe and obey all Commands and Promises and
Redeemer,
Immanuel! Threatnings of God revealed and to be revealed, because the Lord
is God, then must Christ God Redeemer and *Immanuel* be belie-
ved by this Command, and so finall unbelief and finall despising of
Christ God Redeemer is as directly against the first Command (and
so not a sin only threatened and forbidden in the Gospel) as simple
unbelief and simple despising of Christ God Redeemer ; For the
believing & final believing, and unbelief and unbelief, continuing to
the end, differ in the accident of duration, not in nature and essence,
As a Rose that grows for a moneth only, and a Rose of the same
nature that growtheth and flourisheth for three moneths. Otherwise
Christ could not have pronounced *Peter* blessed, *paracletus ei*, Mat.
16. 17. in the present, for believing in the present : for he should
not have been blessed to the end : as *Solon* said of his blessed man,
bitum nemo supremaque fuisse debet. And this cannot but subvert our faith, crush the peace, hope, con-
solation of weak Believers, to whom undoubtedly the promise of
perseverance is absolutely made, *Jer.* 31. 31, 35. *Jer.* 32. 39, 40.
Isai. 54. 10. *Isai.* 59. 20, 21. *Joh.* 4. 14. *Joh.* 10. 27, 28.

2. If there be as formall a transgression of the first Command in
finall unbelief, as in unbelief simply considered, and in the other
sins of *Judas* and other Apostates. Why but as Christ bare in his
body the sins of unbelief and satisfied for them, he must so also bear
the sins of finall rebellion and unbelief ? And shall we believe that
Christ payed a satisfactory ransome of blood upon the crosse for the
yesterdays unbelief of *Judas*, and not for the dayes unbelief ?

If it be said, No man can break the Gospel-Covenant, for it is
an everlasting Covenant. Ans. Its an everlasting Covenant, but
yet all who sin against the commanding love and authority of our
Immanuel, especially they so professing to be his, do truly break
the Covenant : but they so break it, as it leaves not off to be the
Covenant

Covenant of life both to the breakers, if they repent and beleieve, and to others : for so is the nature of this Covenant, and so it is Covenant everlasting, but the Covenant of Works if once broken, ceases to be a Covenant of life for ever, because the nature of it is, to admit everlasting of no repentance at all. Obj. Does not the Law command the & yet bro-
sinner offending God to mourne and be humbled, and confess? Ans. ke by men.
It doth. But it injoines not repentance as a way of life, with a
promise of life to the repenter, as the Law or as a Covenant of
Works commands to its native and proper Covenanter's obedience. The Law
and every tingle act of obedience as a way to obtain the reward of commands
a Law-life, nor does the Law as a Covenant of Works command but not
justifying faith and reliance upon God Redeemer, or *Immanuel* : with a pro-
but rather as the Law of Nature, or as the Law of thankfulness to mice of life,
a Ransoning and Redeeming God, the Law does this. Though or as a way
in a speciall Covenant way the Gospel command faith in Christ, to life.

Obj. Bye finall unbelief as against God Redeemer and so consid-
ered is the only breach of the Covenant of Grace: He that believeth
not is condemned, as the man that rejects the only remedie of sin.

Ans. The only breach of the Covenant of Grace, is too nar-
row to be the adequat cause of damnation, for many Pagans who How small
never heard of Christ and are under no Covenant, but that of
Works, are condemned not for not believeth in him of whom they
never heard, Rom.10.14. nor for breach of the Covenant of Grace, demnation
but for breach of the Covenant of Works. 2. Unbelief may be and to
called the nearest cause of damnation to such as perish within the whom and how not,
Visible Church, as the wilfull refusing of medicine which only and
infallibly would heal the sick man of such a disease, is the cause of
his death, but is the Morall cause. For the disease it self is the
Physicall cause, or the materiall cause of the mans death. And without doubt, uncleanness, covetousnelle, sorcerie, lying, i-
dolatrie, &c. and many the like sinnes, beside unbelief, are,

Cor. 6.9. *Eph.* 5.5,6. *Rev.* 21.8. *Rev.* 22.15. *Jud.* 6.7,8. 2 *Pet.*
2.17. 10,11,12,13. 2 *Thes.* 2.9,10. 1 *Pet.* 4.3,4. 2 *Pet.* 2.2,3,
4,5. the causes of the damnation of many visible professours, where
this way saith Christ did satisfie upon the Crosse for all these sins,
and the damned of visible professours suffer in hell only for finall
unbelief. And it seems unjust that both Christ and they should
suffer

Whether Christ suffered

suffer satisfactory punishment for these same sins done against the Law : And as strange that Christ should die for any, and not die for their sinnes, since the Scripture useth the word of dying for sinnes, Rom. 4. 25 delivered from our sinnes, Christ is a propitiation for our sinnes, and (the same way) not for ours only, but for whom Christ died, for the sinnes of the whole world ; he died for sinners, Heb. 2. 17. he died for that he might make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people : that their sins, is, for the sinfull people, or sinners, Heb. 9. 28. So Christ was once and for all offered to bear the sinnes of many : That is to bear the sins of the their sins, sinfull many that he died for, Heb. 10. 12. But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sin, sat down on the right hand of God : that is, after he had offered a sacrifice for sinners, 1 Pet. 3. 18. Christ once suffered for sin, that is, for sinners, 1 Cor. 15. 3. I delivered unto you how Christ died for our sinnes, that is, for the persons of us sinners. 1 Joh. 3. 5. He was manifested to take away our sinnes. 1 Joh. 4. 10. Herein is love — that he sent his Son to be a propitiation for our sinnes. Rev. 1. 5. To him that loved us, and washed us from our sinnes — be glory. Gal. 1. 4. He gave himself for our sinnes. Now it must not be asserted, but proven that in all these places where he is said to be a propitiation for the sins of the world ; and hath taken away our sinnes speaking (as these Authors say) of the whole visible Church, and not of the elect onlie that Christ hath died and by his death hath taken away some sinnes, and hath suffered for some sinnes, and not for all sinnes, not for the finall unbelief of sinners, if it be said, that we cannot teach that Christ suffered for finall unbelief, we grant it : But then we say that Christ suffered not for finall unbelievers and for the other sins of finall unbelievers, since suffering for sins and for persons that are sinners, to bring them to God, 1 Pet. 3. 18. are conjoined. And God was in Christ reconciling the world in himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them, 2 Cor. 5. 19. Therefore there must be a pardoned and a justified world, and so truely blessed world, as Paul and David teach, Psal. 32. 1, 2. Rom. 4. and so a loved, John. 3. 16. and chosen world followed with the separating love of God to man which saves some foolish ones and serving diverse lusts, and saves not others ; and so there must be a love and mercy of predestination, *amor iudiciorum*, not com-

*PART. I.**for finall unbelief.*

mon to all the world ; as is clear, Tit. 3. 3, 4, 5; Eph. 2. 1, 2, 3. There is a world reconciled to whom God imputes no sinne, and leaves them in wrath, imputes not their trespasses to them, and therefore all makes them blessed, as David sayes, Ps. 32. 1. and imputes their finall unbelief to them, and leaves them under a curse : Nor shall & Infidels help the mater to say that finall unbelief may be considered as cannot be both against the Law, and as only forbidden in the Gospel. And such as in the former respect Christ hath suffered for it, not in the latter. Christ did For if the *ἀρχή*, the contrariety between finall unbelief and the first Command, as it is a rebellion against God manifested in the unbelieve flesh, be satisfied for by Christ on the crosse ; How can it condemn the person, assure it doth ? Joh. 3. 18, 36. Job. 8. 21, 24. It can- for, not be said that Christ died for finall unbelief, so we beleve.

2. What speciall *ἀρρώσα* and repugnancie to the Law of God is there in finall unbelief, that is not a repugnancie to the Covenant of Works and Grace both ? And what repugnancie to the Covenant of Grace which is not also contrair to the Law ? This I grant (which I desire the Reader carefully to observe) the Law and the Covenant of Grace do not one and the same way command faith, and forbid unbelief. I speak now of the Covenant of Works and Grace doe not, one & the same way command faith, and forbid unbelief.

For 1. the Law as the Law commands 1. Faith in the superlative degree, as it doth all acts of obedience, and so doth it require repentance. Because the Law commands all obedience most exact and perfect, and condemnes faith in the positive degree, though sincere and lively, as sinfully deficient. The Gospel doth only require sincere faith, and condemneth not for the want of the degrees of faith most perfect, though the Law of thankfulness to the Ransome-paver (which Law is common to both Covenants) require that we believe in the highest degree, because Christ hath expressed to us the greatest love, Joh. 3. 16. Job. 15. 13.

2. The Law as the Law requires faith not finall only, but faith Immanuel for ever, and that we be born with the Image of God that

*Of the Commandments of**PART. I.*

that we believe at all times, under the pain of damnation. But the Covenant of Grace, because it admits of repentance, and holds forth the meekness, forbearance, and longanimitie of Christ, is satisfied with faith at any time, or what hour of the day they shall be brought in.

3. The Law requires faith, with the promise of Law-life: The Covenant of Grace requires faith, promises grace to believe, with promise of a Gospel-life.

4. The Law requires not faith in *Christ* with sinners Covenant-ways as a work to be legally rewarded, for it finding all sinners, and all by nature, Covenant-breakers, cannot indent with them that have broken the Covenant, to promise life to them by tennor of ~~The~~ Covenant, which now ceaseth to be a Covenant of life, and cannot but condemn, and is now rendered impossible to justify and

How the ~~reprobate~~ *are under* ~~the~~ *Cove-*
nent of ~~Works,~~ *probate* *then* *are* *this* *way* *under* *the* *Covenant* *of* *Works*, *that* *they* *are* *(as* *it* *were)* *possible* *Covenanters* *lyable* *to* *suffer* *the* *ven-*
geance *of* *a* *broken* *Covenant*, *but* *not* *formially* *active* *Covenanters* *as* *Adam* *was*. *But* *if* *Christ* *suffer* *for* *finall* *unbeleef*, *as* *it* *is* *against* *the* *Law* *as* *the* *Law*, *how* *is* *it* *charged* *upon* *reprobates* *as* *a* *sin* *against* *the* *Gospel* *only*? *Since* *no* *wrong* *done* *to* *God* *Redeemer* *can* *be* *any* *thing* *but* *a* *sin* *against* *God*, *and* *a* *breach* *of* *the* *first* *Command*. *I* *deny* *not* *but* *finall* *unbeleef* *hath* *an* *aggravation* *that* *it* *is* *the* *nearest* *barre* *and* *iron* *gate* *between* *the* *sinner* *and* *the* *only* *Saviour* *of* *sinners*, *but* *yet* *the* *putting* *of* *such* *a* *barre* *is* *a* *sin* *against* *the* *Law*. *Neither* *can* *it* *be* *said* *that* *only* *finall* *unbeleef* *is* *the* *only* *meritorious* *cause* *of* *damnation* *to* *such* *as* *hear* *the* *Gospel*. *For* *beside* *finall* *unbelief* *there* *is* *also* *a* *contrariety* *betwixt* *the* *mur-*
thers, *Sodomies*, &c. *of* *professours* *and* *the* *Law* *for* *which* *they* *suffer* *in* *hell* *eternally*, *Rev*.*21*.*8*. *c*.*18*.*7*.

Quest. Whether doth the Lord Mediator as Mediator, command the same good works in the Covenant of Grace which are commanded in the Covenant of Works?

CHAP. XXI.

Ans. According to the matter of the thing commanded, *quoad rem mandatam*, he commands the same, and charges upon

*PART. I.**Christ as Mediator.*

upon all and every one the morall duty even as Mediator, for he cannot loose the least of these Commandements, but simply they are not the same, *quoad modum mandandi*. It shall not be needfull to dispute whether they be commands differing in nature: For not only doth the Mediator command obedience upon his interposed Authority as Law-giver and Creator, but also as *Lord Redemeer* upon the motive of Gospel constraining love. In which notion he calls love the keeping of his Commandements (if they love him, *Job*.*14*.) the new Commandement of love.

Q. 2. Doth the *Lord Mediator*, in the Covenant of Grace, command the same good works to all, the same way?

Ans. *Rom*.*3*.*19*. The Lord, in the Law, must speak one way to these that are under the Law, that is, under the jurisdiction and condemning power of the Law: and a far other way to these that are not under the Law.

CHRIST speaks to reprobats in the VISIBLE Church, even when the matter of the command is Evangelick, as to non confederates of grace in a Law way, and in a Law intention. For he cannot bid them obey upon any other ground then legislative authority, not upon the ground of Redemption-love bestowed on them, or that he died out of love to save all and every one: For we disclaim that ground; or because he died out of a speciall design to save them as his chosen ones. For there is no ground for that untill we believe: But they are to obey upon the ground of Redemption-love, so they first believe and fiducially rely upon Christ the Saviour of all. But he commands Law obedience to his chosen even as *Mediator*. (1.) Upon a Gospel intention to chase them to Christ, *Gal*.*3*.*23*. (2.) When they are come to hedge them in, with Law-threatening to adhere, in a Godly fear, more closely to Christ. But the Lord commands no believer to believe hell in the event to be their reward, but to believe perseverance and life, but hell in the deserving. Hence that, *1 Tim*.*1*.*9*. *The Law* *κείσις*, *is not made for the righteous* (to condemn them: as if God thereby opened up to them their doom) *but for the lawlesse*, &c. to let them be damned and see their damnation.

*Christ one
way lives
Evangelick
upon the
Earth, & a-
nother way
on the Re-
probate.*

CHAP. XXII.

The differences in the promise of the Covenants.

Quest. What is the speciall difference of the promise of the two Covenants?

Ans. It is known that only life eternall is promised in the Law; if a right to the things of this life was promised to *Adam*, it is like he behoved to compleat his course of obedience, and merit a right legall to the herbs and fruit of the earth, beside the right he had by gift of Creation, *ex dono Creatoris, non jure operum.*

But 2. There was no promise made to *Adam* of perseverance, and so no promise made to him of influences to work in *Adam* to will and to do; so the influences by which he obeyed was, *purum donum Creatoris*, a meer gift of the Creator, not a gift of either the grace of *Christ*, or a promised grace, though in a large sense; it may be called a grace, or *donum gratis datum*: For *God* gave that influence upon no obligation. Now that it was not a grace promised is evident by *Adams* fall: for *God*, who is true, fulfills his promises. 2. *Augustine* and our Divines teach, *Dedit Deus posse ut vellet, non velle ut posset*, a power to stand, but not the gift of actuall perseverance. If any say that the *Lord* promised to *Adam* perseverance conditionally (which in one sense is true, in another false) if he pleased, in that he gave to him all necessaries required for actuall standing. *Ans.* 1. This is to teach that perseverance was promised the same way, in the Covenant of Works, that *Arminius* saith it is promised in the Covenant of Grace, and that the free-will was absolute lord of standing and falling, and to deny *God* to be the nearest cause of our standing and persevering in either, the one or the other, and to bid us first and last sacrifice to our own free-will. 2. Willing perseverance actuall cannot be promised conditionally: for the question should be, Upon what condition doth the *Lord* promise to work in *Adam* actual perseverance, if he should be willing to persevere? But the question shall remain, whether that willingnesse to persevere, since it is the greatest part, if not whole perseverance, be promised or not; If it be not promised,

Conditionall perse-
verance
was not
promised
to *Adam*.

vised, the contrarie whereof they hold, if it be promised conditionally, the question shall recur, what shall be the condition, and another condition then the willingnesse of the will to persevere cannot be given, and to the argument shall rise against it self, and the issue must be, *God* give to *Adam* actuall perseverance, if he should be willing to persevere, that is, he gives to *Adam* perseverance, if he give him perseverance; for willingnesse to persevere is perseverance, or a very huge part thereof.

3. But persevering grace and so influence of grace to persevere is promised in the Covenant of Grace, *Jer. 31. 35.* that they shall continue in Covenant, more sure then the night and the day. *Jer. 32. 40.* *I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me.* The meaning cannot be, I will give them a power deable dis-
ferencesbe-
twixt the
influences
of God gi-
And 2. If notwithstanding of that fear both promised and put in ven to *A-*
the heart, and in the will, yet lubrick free-will may stand or fail dam for his
and remain indifferent to either, then the sense shall be thus, *I will it wading in
make an everlasting Covenant, I will put my fear in their heart, and these
by which they may either depart from me, and turn apostates, or influences
not depart from me, but persevere:* But so the Covenant, made given to us
with *Adam* and the fallen Angels, should be an everlasting Cove- in the se-
nant, and yet it was broken. For the Image of *God* of it self incli-
ned *Adam* and the fallen Angels never to depart from *God*: For
sure, *Adams* fear, being a part of that Image, which sanctified his
affections, inclined him (but not undeclinably and immutably)
not to depart from *God*, and not to hearken to the lying Serpents
suggestions. But it is not that new Covenant-fear promised and
given in the second *ADAM*, *Jer. 32. 39, 40.*

4. That these influences were purchased by *Christs* death is clear, because they are the nearest causes of our actuall believing and coming to *Christ*, of faith and perseverance that are given freely, and repentance and faith are given of *Christ*, *Acts. 5. 31.* *Ezech. 12. 10.* *2 Tim. 2. 25.* *Phil. 1. 29.* *Ephes. 2. 1, 2, 3.* *Ezek. 36. 6, 27.* *Eph. 1. 17, 18, 19, 20.* *John 6. 44, 45.*

5. So obedience to the Covenant of Works was *Adams* own.

(2.) And came from his concreted self (the Image of God that was his own) by a common influence, and neither was the Image of God, nor the influences of God acts of free grace, or the purchase of grace properly so called.

(2.) Adam had a Law-claim to the Crown without sin, if he had continued in obedience, and did merite *ex parte* life eternall, our new Covenant obedience in habituall and actuall performance is so a duty, that it is also promised and a benefite merited to us by the death of Christ, whereas Adams obedience was benefite, *parum officium, non officium promissum*, as our Gospel-obedience is.

both a due. 6. Hence in obedience distinguish two. 1. The nature of obe-
dience and a dience. 2. The worth and excellencie of obedience. The more the
promised obedience be from our selves, the more it partakes of the nature
of obedience. Hence four kinds of obedience are to be considered.

Four kinds of obediences. 1. Christ's obedience was the most legall obedience, and also the most perfect, for he obeyed most of his own, of any, from his own will purely, *Iob. xv. 18. Mat. 26. 39,42,44.* His own blood, *Hebr. 9.14. Rev. 1.5.* My blood, saith he, *Matth. 26.28.* He gave his life a ransome, *Matth. 20.28.* He gave himself a ransom, *1 Tim. 2.6.* By himself he purged our sins, *Heb. 1.3.* Gave himself for his Church, *Eph. 5.25.* Offered himself, *Heb. 9.14.* And therefore the satisfaction that he made was properly his own. Its true the life, flesh and blood which he offered to God, as common to the three Persons, was equally the life, flesh, blood of God by way of *Creation* and *efficiency*: For God as God created His Man-hood; and gave him a body, but that Man-hood, *in abstracto*, *Eto*, was not the offering, but all these, *in concreto*, and the self, including the value and the dignitie, was not the *Father*'s, not the *Spirits*, but most properly his own, and the *Sons* only by way of

The excellency of the personall termination and subsistence. 1. There are contradictory tearms affirmed of this holy self the Son, and of the Spirit and the obedience of Jesus Father. The Son was God incarnate. 2. The son offered himself, Christ how his own life, his own blood to God for our sins. Neither the Father was his ther nor the Spirit at all is God incarnate, neither Father nor Spirit offered his own life, his own blood to God; Neither the Father nor the Spirit hath (to speak so) a personall or terminative dominion.

PART. I.
nion over the flesh and blood of Christ. 2. Christ was in no sort
obliged to empty himself, and cannot be under a *ius* or obligation
to the Creator or the creature. Of free love and his own will he
became *Mediator God Man*, and being created man, and having
said (*here am I to do thy will*) having stricken hands with God as
Surety of the Covenant, none more obliged, being holy and true; The obedi-
dience of
CHRIST
And therefore though *Christ-Man* was most strictly tyed to give
the Father obedience, yet he was not obliged to give him such
and such obedience, so noble, so excellent, from a personall Uni-
on: for Christ God cannot properly come under any obligation.
Hence the obedience of Christ is most meritorious, because *maxi-
me indebita*, in regard of the *God-head* most undebtfull, and yet
obedience most debtfull in regard of the *Man Christ*. 3. Most
from his own will personally considered, the affection, love, the
bended will, highest delight to obey, lay personally near to the
heart and holy will of Christ God: *with desire have I desired to
eat this Passeover*. He went foremost in the journey to *Jerusalem*,
when he was to suffer. Much of the internall propensity of the
will makes much and (as it were) heightens and intends the na-
ture of obedience, so that *Christ's* and our obedience have scarce
an univocall definition. 4. He gave and restored more glory to of-
fended justice, by such a noble, incomparably excellent death,
then *Adam* and all his Sons took of glory from *God*: therefore
against impure *Socinus* it is a most reall satisfaction and compensati-
on, where glory by obeying and suffering is restored in liew of the
glory taken away. All that *Socinians* lay, that *God* cannot be a
loser, and needs not glory, and nothing can be taken from him,
and nothing can be given to him, proves nothing but that it is not
such a satisfaction as one creature performs to another, nor is it a
satisfaction that brings profit to *God*: *For can a man be profitable
to the Almighty?* Nor such a satisfaction as eases a disquieted
minde; Which proves not *Christ* to be a *Saviour* painted in a
meer coppy to us, and only a godly Martyr who liveth only by
preaching and witnesssing, and not by a most reall and eminently
clear satisfaction.

2. The Elect *Angels* next to *Christ* give obedience in their Law course, but not so properly of their own as *Christ*, for some discriminating.

Angels of discriminating and strengthening grace they had from Christ M-
obeitance diete their head, Col.2.10. that they should not fall, and some-
thing from the Election of Grace, which do not necessarily agree.
that is of to the Covenant of Works, which they performed without sin, and
grace and the more extinsecall help from grace, the lesse merit, so farre is
not their grace from being, as Jesuites say, the essentiall requisite of merit,
own.

that the work is lesse ours, and so the lesse meritorious, that it
hath grace. Let not any say then Christ's obedience that came
from the fulnesse of the Spirit without measure *bona ex parte*, must
Grace di- so be lesse meritorious, which is absurd, for the reason why grace
minith in Angels, and men who are meer creatures diminishes the nature
of the na- ture of me. of merit, is, because grace is not their own, nor their proper due,
rite from but supernaturall or preternaturall, and so hirneth the nature of the
the obedi- merit, but to the meriting person Christ-God. *As man* nothing is su-
pernitrall, nothing extinsecall, nothing not his own: Grace is
his own as it were by a sort of personall dominion, not to say that
the Man Christ as man did not merit, yet as man he was born sinless
and with the full Image of God.

3. Adam gave more faintly obedience, more indeed of his own,
Of Adams but it was lesse obedience, and lesse will in it, then the obedience
obedience of Angels, and had he continued, his obedience had been proper
how proper it was. obedi-ence; but this is to be observed, none did ever, *alio secun-*
do, and by the only help of simple nature attain Justification and
Salvation by the simple Covenant of Works, but men and evill An-
gels fell under both, though that was a possible Covenant and ho-
ly and spirituall, yet God set it up to be an inlet to pure Justice in
the reprobate Angels, and so to free grace in elect men.

Gospel- 4. The obedience of faith, or Gospel-obedience, in the fourth
obedience place, hath lesse of the nature of obedience, then that of Adam, or
bath less of the nature of the Elect Angels, or that of Christ's. Its true we are called
of obedi- Children, and they are called the Commandements of
ence, then Christ, and Christ hath taken the Morall Law and made use of it in
Adams be- an Evangelick way, yet we are more (as it were) patients, in ob-
dience. obeying Gospel Commands, not that we are meer patients, as Li-
bertines teach, for grace makes us willing, but we have both su-
pernaturall habits and influences of grace furnished to us from the
Grace of Christ, who hath merited both to us, and so in Gospel-
obedience

obedience we offer more of the Lords own, and lesse of our own,
because he both commands, and gives us grace to obey. And to the Law
to the elect believer the Law is turned in Gospel, he by his Grace is made
fulfilling (as it were) *the righteousness of the Law is in us by be- (is it ever)*
gun new obedience, Rom.8.4. and to the reprobate the Law re-
mains the Law, and the Gospel is turned in the Law, for all condi-
tional promises to the Reprobate, though in *ea mis* Evangelick, the Gospel
yet are Law to them (*if Cain do well he shall be saved*) (*if Judas Law to re-*
belineve he shall be saved) because *(god by* Grace fulfills not the
promise in them. Obj. 1. Then shall Gospel-obedience be of lesse
worth then Law-obedience, which floweth not from Grace, which
Christ hath merited by his death? Ans. Its not denied, but it
is obedience, so the Scripture, Heb.5.9. Rom.1.5. Rom.6.17.
Rom.16.19. 2 Cor.10.5. 1 Pet.1.5. Act.6.9. Act.5.32.37. But
(2.) It hath lesse of the nature of obedience, but more excellency.
Who would say Peter labouring in the Vineyard of John for
wages, does properly obey, if we suppon that Peter bath from
John, not only soul, will, body, arms, and legs, but the inward
infused principle of willingness, the habite and art of dressing
Vines, the nearest propension and determination of will to work, to
have we in the Gospel, but in the Law, though the Lord who gives
being, does also give his Image to Adam, and his influence to ob-
ey, yet the Image of God is concreated, and Adams own, grace
especially merited by Christ is supervenient and a meer stranger to
us, and the influence, though it did predetermine Adams will,
yet it is connaturall as it were, *natura debita*, not merited by
Christs death, and so we give more of our own, when we give the
fruit of Creation which God hath bestowed on the Pishire and
the Worm, then when we give the obedience of Grace. 2. The
obedience of Adam though rationall and persuasive, there being a
lamp of light in the mind, yet came from the feared authority of
the Law-giver under the pain of damnation, the Gospel-obedience
is by the word, Act.2.37. is by way of perswasion: Christ saith from Law
not, Peter, thou art afraid of hell, feed my Lambs, but, Peter, and from
loves thou me, feed my Lambs: For a Law-obeyer is not to be-
lieve life eternall but in so far as he shull keep the Law perfectly,
the Gospel obeyer so obeys as he believeth deliverance from wrath
and

Believing and doing how different conditions, PART. I.
 and life eternal, but his believng is not reckoned to him, *καὶ οὐ* *λέγεται*, of Law-debt, but of love and Grace debt: See Rom. 4.4. Matth. 6.12. thef. promises, 1 Tim. 4.8. Luk. 12.31. Matth. 19.29. are expounded by the promises made to the overcomer, Rev.2. Rev.3. which is by faith, 1 Joh. 5.4 5. 3. But it is most true, Gospel-obedience hath these excellencies. 1. It is a plant of a more noble Vine coming from the merit of blood, yet is not our obedience comparable to Christ's; for a work of Law or Gospel Grace hath a necessary reference to no wages of its own nature, but only by the intervening of the free pleasure of God. But Christ's obedience intrinsically from the excellent dignity of the person hath a meriting virtue. 2. It works more eminently than nature: It is a pillar to support fowning nature, and acts in more excellent subjects, in CHRIST, in the Elect Angels, in the Redeemed ones and makes them stones of another nature, and this is the handie-work of CHRIST, Isa. 51.11. *I will lay thy stones with fair colours, and lay thy foundations with Saphires. v. 12. I will make thy windows of Agats, and thy gates of Carbuncles, and all thy borders of pleasant stones:* What do morall men that work on clay and make clay pots all their life and know nothing of the actings of saving Grace. Fairest civility is but rousie iron the basest of Metals: and they sweat and hammer upon Law-works being strangers to Christ, and his gold. O! what a difference between praying and hearing out of discretion, and by necessity of the office, and praying in the Holy Ghost, and hearing in faith.

CHAP. XXIII.

Q. VV Hat sort of doing the Law requireth?

Tremellius & *Trostius* tinued in doing to the end is required by the Law. *Paul* interpreting *Moses*, Deut. 26.27. Gal. 3.10. *Cursed be every one*, *In Syria*. *Ver. Gal. 3. 5;* *our* *ἐπίβεβητεν* *τοῖς*. *Who continueth not in all that are written in* *Scriptura*, *the Law to do them.* Dcut. 26.27. *Cursed is he who shall not* *be firm.* It is a word they use in inacting of Laws, when we say, *Be* *רְשָׁא* *it statuted and ordained:* the word in *Piel* is three times in the *DISP.* *N* Book of *Ester*, to ordain by a Law: Which clearly saith the

PART. I.

in the Covenant.

the Covenant of Works was a work of justice and such a time God set to Adam, so as to the end he was to run it out, but how long *Hieronimus* *Maledictus* *qui non per-*
mansit.

LXX. *ἰστιν ἀλεξανδρεῖ τίς δὲ ἀνθρώπος ἢ ἵστε εἰς ἐπίβεβητεν τοῖς λέγοις τὸν ρόπον;* Chald. Para. *Qui non permanferit.* Syria. Versio. *Maledictus qui non perficietur.* Arab. Verchio. *Qui non confirmabit.* Beza. Gal. 3.10. *Qui non firmari.* Magna vis Verbi Jakim. Pagni. & Art. Montanus, *Qui non statuerit.*

CHAP. XXIII.

Whether faith as lively and true, or faith as continuing to the end, be the condition of the Covenant of Grace?

These, who in all points, as in this, make this new Covenant a Covenant of Works, contend that faith as enduring to the end, must be the condition of the new Covenant. 1. Because the promise of the reward. 2. The reward is given to him that endures to the end. And this faith (say they) is the adequate and compleat condition of the Covenant of Grace as full and consummate obedience to the end in degrees and parts.

2. But faith as lively and sincere is the condition of the Covenant, the nature and essence of this faith is to continue to the end, but continuance to the end is an accidentall condition of this onely essentiall condition of the Covenant, faith *qua*, which endures to the end, but not *quā ant quatenus*, as it endures to the end is that which saves us and justifies us as the condition of the Covenant. 1. Faith as lively units us to Christ and justifies whether it be come to the full perfection or not. Otherwise 1. no man should be ingrafted in Christ as branches in the Vine Tree, no man partakers of the Divine nature, no man quickened, but he that dies in finall believing: Whereas, Joh.5.24. *he that believeth before his finall continuance to the end, μωρεῖται εἰς τὸν θάνατον,* hath passed from death to life and shall never come to condemnation. And

Faith as lively, not in this is the difference of the condition of the Covenant of Works, to the end that Adam had no right to life by one or two the most sincere acts the condition of the and highest in measure, except he continue, *ἐπίβεβει* (as the Law saith, *Deut. 26.27. Gal. 3.10.*) to the end, otherwise at the first act of *new Covenant* *obedience*.

• 202 Faith as lively not as great and enduring to the end, PART. I.
obedience perfect in degrees and parts, God behoved by Covenant
(except the Lord should break the first Covenant himself, before
man sin, which is blasphemous) to have given him confirming
grace and the reward of life ; but the condition of the Covenant
of Grace is that, *He that believeth, Joh. 3.36.* *exquiescat,* is not con-
demned, yea is freed from all condemnation, *Rom. 8.1.* and *ixit*
hath life being *really* united as the member to the head, as the
branch to the tree, *mystically*, as the wife to the husband, *legally*,
as the debtor and the surety becomes one person in Law, the
summe one and not two. *1 Joh. 5.11.* *And this is the witness that*
eterna he hath given us life eternall, and this is in the Son. *12.*
He that hath the Son hath life : He that believeth hath the Son
dwelling in his heart by faith, *Eph. 3.17.*

2. Faith, before it come to seed and full harvest brings solid
peace and comfort and saveth : So Christ to the blind man, *Luke*
18.42. *thy faith of course,* *bath saved thee,* not a bare miraculous
faith, but that which apprehends remission of sinnes, as he speaks
to the woman who did wash his feet with tears, *Luke* *7.50.* and
to the paralytick man, *Mat. 9.2.* seeing their faith, *be of good*
cheer, go in peace, thy sins are forgiven. If they be but forgiven
conditionally, so they believe to the end, whereas they may fall
away. 1. What comfort and good cheer ? 2. What peace be-
ing justified by faith, *Rom. 5.1?* 3. What glory in tribulation,
Rom. 5. have they more then *Judas* the son of perdition ? What
Covenant of life and of peace are we in ? What difference between
our Religion and the Religion of *Cicero, Seneca,* and of all *Pa-*
gans, if *Christ* furnish not to us solid unshaken help and consola-
tion ? And what a trembling hope have they that they be, and are
to fear they shall be in the condition of Apostate Angels to morrow
What faith then Christ, *Mat. 9.22.* *Mark 5.34.* *Mark 10.52.*
Luk. 8.58. *Luk. 5.20, 24.* *Mark 5.34.* *Mark 9.24.* yea and
much more saith the *Holy Ghost* of our case, even of *everlasting*
consolation, *2Theffal. 2.16.* *strong consolation,* *Hebr. 6.18.* *all*
comfort, *2Cor. 1.4.* *lively hope,* *1Pet. 1.4.* *Heb. 6.18, 19.* then
Heathens can say, Nay otherwise not so much, for they promise
not so much. 3. Our lively faith is to believe our perseverance in
lively faith as promised to us, *Jer. 32.39, 40.* *Isai. 54.10.* *Isai.*
59.20;

PART. I. a condition of the New Covenant.

59. 20, 21. Joh. 10. 27, 28. Joh. 4.14. 1Pet. 1. 3, 4, 5. Joh. 11. 26,
27. As we believe life eternall, and that purchased by the merit
of Christs death, the one as well as the other, then faith as finall
cannot be the condition; And who can think that God commands
faith in God Immanuel in the Covenant of Works ? But faith in
God Immanuel to the end is not commanded in the Covenant of
Works, but only in the Covenant of Grace. 4. Faith justifies and
saves as sincere, be it great or small : but if it justifie not and save
not, but as it endures to the end, then no man is compleatly ju-
stified and saved and united to Christ, untill he die.

Since faith (as all other graces in a child of God) is imperfect
and still growing, *2Pet. 3. 18.* and we are to pray, *Lord increase*
our faith, none shall be justifid and saved, but he that hath the
greatest faith, if faith only, which endures to the end, be the con-
dition of the Covenant, and such a faith as groweth and indires to
the end : For take one who for twenty years believeth, the first
two years he being united to Christ, hath right to Christ, *Joh.*
15.1, 2, 3, 4, 5. *Joh. 17. 21, 22.* *Joh. 14.16.* *Joh. 16. 7, 8, 13.* *Joh.*
4. 14. *Joh. 7. 37, 38, 39.* *he shall not be judged, not condemned,*
bath passed from death to life, *shall never die,* *Joh. 3. 36.* *1Joh.*
5.11, 12. *Joh. 4. 24.* *Joh. 11. 25, 26.* then should he die the end
of the first year of his believing, by the Scripture, he must be sa-
ved, else he must be damned, who yet died in true faith and yet
never fell away, which were strange : But by this opinion either
the remnant sound believing should be no condition of justification
and salvation, because the man is justified and saved without it, and
the faith of one or two years gave him right to Christ and saved
him ? Ergo the remnant faith is not a condition of the Covenant,
but a persevering by grace promised and a persevering in that faith,
as also by their way who make persevering faith the only condition
of the Covenant of Grace. 1. Faith and works are confounded :
whereas to be saved by faith is to be saved before, and to be justifi-
ed before we can do good works, and the *jus* or title to righteous-
nesse and salvation, coming only from the price and Redemption
that is in *Iesu Christ,* is not more or lesse, and growes not more
then the worth of the ransome of the blood called the blood of *God,*
Acts 20. 28. does grow, and it is to be justified by grace and by
faith,

*Now boasting is ex-
cluded by boast,* in a righteousnesse of his own, coming from no merite of grace.

Christ, which buyeth determining grace, and indeclinably leads and bows the will; Otherwise we may boast, that is, *glory in the Lord, who worketh all our works for us,* Psal. 34. 2. Isa. 41. 16. Isa. 26. 12. The salvation and righteousnesse is the gift of God.

What then shall be the room of works? He answers, No room at

*Boidius
Comment.
Eph. 2.*

all as causes of justification and salvation, by an excellent antanacrasis, as learned Trochrig: for he answers, *We are his workmanship created in Christ Jesus to good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.* Then by grace we have the full right to righteousnesse and salvation by the ransome of blood, which is Christs. *Papists and Arminians dare not bring in Evangelick works or faith as an Evangelick work here, though they be too bold.* 2. Being once made the creation of God in Christ, and having obtained right by the blood of Christ to salvation, *we walk by his grace in good works as leading us to the possession of the purchased inheritance.* 3. The Authors of this stand for the Apostacie of the Saints, and they cannot eschew it who make this finall faith that takes in in its essence good works as the soul of it or charity (as *Papists* say) as the form of it, the only condition of the Covenant.

Quest. But is not life eternall given and promised only to faith which continues to the end? *Ans.* Faith is considered two wayes. In its nature. 2. In its duration and existence. As to the former, saving faith is of that nature that it is apt to endure, it hath a sort of immortality, so the promise *in titulo & jure*, is made to that faith only which is of that nature that it must endure to the end, and the promise of life and remission is not made to a saving faith under the accident of enduring to the end, or for the years, suppon thirty or fourty years, or eight hundred years, or above, that *Adam* or the Patriarchs lived in the state of believing, for a faith of some hours only shall save the repenting thief as well as a faith of many years. And 2. life eternall in the possession is promised and given only to the faith that continues to the end, not because of the duration because a longer enduring faith hath merit,

but that is by accident, in regard of the right to life and because God hath commanded persevering in faith, life is given only in possession to such a faith as endures, but we cannot say that the accidentall endurance and existence of faith for so many years doth save and justify, as the living so many years makes a Child an heir to a great estate, for his being born the eldest son, makes him his fathers heir.

CHAP. XXIV.

What faith is required in the Gospel.

There is a legall faith, a duty commanded, the object of which is twofold. 1. Truths relating to the mind revealed and to be revealed. So *Adam* had a habit or habituall power to beleieve the Law and the Gospel upon supposition, it should be revealed. As a whole man beleeves skill in his Physician to prevent diseases ere their come, and to remove them, when come. Its folly to say *Adam* stood in need, before he fell, of a Supernaturall power to beleieve Evangelick truths, if he beleaved God to be true, he had such a power as to beleieve all was true, that God should reveal. 2. *Adam* had a faith of dependencie, to rely upon God in all possible evils feared.

2. The promise of life is not made to Law-faith more then to Law-love, or Law-fear, or Law-desire, more then to any other, but the promise is made to Evangelick-faith that layes hold on Christ as our righteousnesse. But for obeying the Commands of his *Adam* was to live, Gal. 3. 13. *et auctor in* them, by doing act, them, Ezek. 20. 11. As *Lavater*, there is no absurditie if it be Shindle, said men shall live, that is merit by free passion, life eternall; but this not in, then (faith Calvin) if a man keep the Law, he needs not the cum,proper. Grace of Christ. Obj. If faith be imputed, as it layes hold on Calv. com. Christ Righteousnesse, it must be the meritorious cause of Justification and by its inherent dignitie, for thereto is nothing more essen- 11. Nulla tiall to faith, then to lay hold on Christs Righteousnesse. Ans. absurditas coabsurditas si homines est in et merita pacto viam eternam: Sed si quis legem servat sequitur cum non opus habere Christi gratia. vivant hoc. est mere- ing

How righteousness is imputed to us. PART. I.

ing hold on Christ, it were true, but the act of faith is not imputed, but that which faith layes hold on, it being an instrument, to wit, the Righteousnesse of Christ, it is not an act of believing faith a Jesuit. And though they say the works Evangelick are from the habit of grace, so was Adam a patient, when God concreated his Image, and habituall righteousness in him. But Arminians and Jesuits do not say, nor darre not, that predeterminating Grace is from Christ's merites, therefore yet the sinner may more boast then

Toletus, Rom. 3. *Adverte si.* Adam, and say I have justified my self by the acts of free-will *dcm non ha* which is indifferent and from under all the bowing and determining *bere ex se* or swaying of the Grace of Christ, for the free-will should have no efficaciam whether Christ had died or not died.

Eius quidam, noster est, remittendi & reconciliandi, sed virtutem totam procedere ex objecto ipso; nempe, Christo cuius virtutem & meritum diffusus Deus per fidem in ipsum applicare peccatori ad justificandum.

The Adversaries exclude not Law-boasting.

C H A P. X X V.

Q. **V**Hether is Christ's Righteousnesse imputed and made ours, because we believe and apprehend it ours; or do we believe, because it is ours first before we believe?

A twofold imputatio of Christ, one legall, another which for Doctrines cause we call application or reall (though the legall imputation be also reall; but not to us as the former) the Lord's act of laying the iniquity of us all upon Christ, Isa. 53. 6. and the Lords making him sin for us, that is a sacrifice for sin, 2 Cor. 5. 21. evinces necessarily the truth of this, the former imputation. For 2 Cor. 5. 21. God was in Christ reconciling the world to himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them. If it be expounded of actual reconciliation of persons, it may say something, for the other imputation, but the other imputation is clear, Rom. 4. 3. Abraham believeth God, and it was counted to him for righteousness, v. 7. Blessed is the man whose iniquities are forgiven and whose sins are covered, v. 8. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord imputeth not sin, v. 9. Faith (that is, that which faith believeth, as hope is put for the thing hoped for, Col. 1. 5. Rom. 8. 24. was imputed to Abraham for righteousness, though Gomarus give another exposition, to wit, that by faith or the act of believing we obtain this to be

How Christ's righteousness is imputed to us.

be reputed righteous, and it suits better with the Text. And as to the former imputation, God could not in justice wound Christ for our transgressions, nor bruise him for our iniquities, nor could the Lord break him, nor deliver him to the death for us all, except God had both made him the sinner, that is, imputed and reckoned him the sinner in Law (for intrinsically and inherently he was not the sinner, but holy, harmless, &c.) and laid our debts upon him, Isa. 53. 6. and except he had been willing to have been counted the sinner, and had said (*thou hast given me a body, here am I, to do thy will*, Psal. 40. 7. Heb. 10. 6, 7.) this reckoning of Christ to be the sinner is not only in the eternall decree, but also a laying of our iniquities upon him in time, Isa. 53. 6. or a dealing with him in Law in punishing him as the sinner. And 2. by using the humane nature as an instrument of our Redemption on the Crosse. Antinomians take this imputing of our sins to Christ, and reckoning Christ to be the sinner, to be the justifying of the sinner, which is a grosse mistake; for so without believing all that Christ died for should be justified upon the Crosse. But the Scripture is so far from ascribing Justification to any but to a believer, that it saith Abrahams faith was imputed to him for righteousness. Now the faith of multitudes for whom Christ died when he sufferedd on the Crosse, is a very nothing: Many are not born, and a nothing or a non ens cannot be counted for righteousness.

It is to be observed that payment made by the surety absolveth the debtor, so as the Law, except it be the generall Law of gratitude, requireth no act of love, of faith, of service from the debtor, nor doth the Law of suretyship in its essence and nature require Obedience that the Creditor, & sub eo titulo should pay the homage of faith, to the sureindeed when the Creditor is both the Creditor and the offended ty. Party, and also the suprem Law-giver God, he may require of Christ is by the captives the obedience of faith. So would justice, which faith, Law. we should hurt none, give to every man his own, presse, that the debtor repay to the surety, so far as he is able to make up his losses, but to pay the obedience of faith as a part of the ransom due to offended Justice, is no Gospel-Law, nor any part thereof, nor can it bear truth, except we deny the reall satisfaction made by Christ, which both Papists do weaken when they mix the merit of high therewith, and Socinians deny.

4. The

The mis-
take of An-
tonomians.

How Christ's righteousness is made ours. PART I.

4. The satisfaction performed upon the Cross for sinners, though it be for a certain particular number, determined of God, & *quoad numerum numerantem*, & *quoad numerum numeratum*, both as touching the number, so many, not all and every one, and such persons, by head, name, birth, &c. Yet it is not the justifying of me; or *John*, or *Paul*, for I, nor no man can know that Christ's satisfaction stands for you or me, by name and person, while first I or you believe, because it is the hid Decree of God. 2. Nor is this legall imputation believable, nor is it revealed, as it is terminated to single persons, to me or to you, untill by faith we apprehend it.

5. But the imputation of application is that in which our justification standeth.

Faith pre- And the faith by which as by an instrument we are justified, presupposeth three unions, and maketh a fourth union.
supposeth
three uni-
ons, & ma- It presupposeth an union,
kech the
fourth.

1. Naturall, that Christ and we are not only both mankind, for *CHRIST* and *Pharaoh*, *Judas* the traitour and all the sons of perdition are one, *specie & natura*, true men, but one in brotherhood. He assuming the nature of man with a speciall eye to *Abraham*, *Heb. 2.16*. that is, to the elect and believers, for with them he is bone of their bone, and is not ashamed to call them brethren, *Heb. 2.11,12*. *Pf. 22. 22*.

2. It presuppones a Legall union between Christ and them, that God made the debtor and the Surety one in Law, and the summe one in so far as he laid our debts on Christ, *Isa. 53.6*. 2 *Cor. 5. 21*.

3. It presuppones an union Federall, God making Christ our Surety, and he was willing to be our Surety, and to assume not only our nature in a personall union, but also our state, condition, and made our cause his cause, our sins his sins, not to defend them, nor to say Amen to them, as if we might commit them again, but to suffer the punishment due to them. And our faith makes a fourth union betwixt Christ and us, whether naturall, as between head and members, the branches and the Vine Tree, or mystical as that of the spouse and beloved wife, or artificiall, or mixed be-

- 1. Naturall.
- 2. Legall.
- 3. Federall.

PART I. How Christ's righteousness is made ours
between the impe and the tree. Of 4. Legall, between the Surety and the Debter, the Advocate and the Client, or rather an union above all, is hard to determine, for these are but all comparissons, and this Christ prayes for, *Job. 17. 23*. *In them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one.*

6. Now to the Question, as the Law condemns not a man, but him who is first a sinner, and an heir of wrath by nature in the first *Adam*, for the Law is essentially just: So God justifies not a man, but the man who, by order of nature, is first by faith in *CHRIST*, *Rom. 5. 18*. Therefore as by the offence of one (*judgement*) came upon all men unto condemnation, even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men (in Christ, as the other were in the first *Adam*) unto the justification of life: and so we must say, that all, ere they be justified, and before God impute faith to them, that is, Christ believed righteousness to be theirs, must have faith and so believe, and so be one with Christ. And this imputed righteousness is ours, because we believe, and not untill we first believe, and the other imputation goes before faith: So the faith of Gods speciall mercy is two wayes so called. 1. As it leaneth upon and apprehendeth God in Christ, for the obtaining of mercy and remission of sins, and imputed righteousness: So faith goes before justification, and we believe that our sins may be pardoned, and that our sins may not be imputed, and that we may be justified and freed from condemnation: so by the act of believing, righteousness is imputed to us. And thus justification and remission, i.e. relaxing of our persons from a state of eternall condemnation, as is meant, *Rom. 8. 1*. are not the object of faith, but the effect and fruit of faith. 2. The faith of speciall mercy to me

We believe
is considered as it apprehendeth and believeth, or rather feelingly that Christ's
knoweth speciall mercy, imputation of Christ's righteousness now righteousness given to me, and as Christ hath payed a ransome for me, and satisfies me by
made ours, justice for me, and so imputed righteousness, and justification
are the object of faith; Or rather the object of the sense of faith, it is ours,
which is most carefully to be observed. To answer Bellarmine's un- we believe
solide Argument, we either believe remission of sins past, or to it to be
come, &c. But remission is liberation from punishment eternall ours also,
or temporall, but justification is freedome from the fundamental
guilt.

*Of our deadnesse to the Law,***PART. I.**

guilt-deserving punishment, and remission is a consequent thereof.

2. Whether or not, is Justification taken one and the same way in the Old and New Testament?

Ans. The Apostle is clear, Rom. 4. where he proves both Jews and Gentiles are justified as *Abraham* and *David*. But 2. Justifi-

cation by Grace hath not *in iisdem apicibus* in the same points, the
four or five sort of same adversaries. 1. *Moses* and the *Prophets* contend most with
adversaries Ceremoniall hypocrites, who sought righteousnesse much in Ceremo-
nies, Washings, Sacrifices, New Moons, and also their own
various cōsiderations inherent godlinesse, Deut. 5. Deut. 7. Deut. 10. Deut. 11. Isa.
of the que- 1.10, 11, 12, &c. Mic. 6. 6, 7, 8. Psal. 50. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14,
stion of ju. 15, 16, 17, 18. Ps. 4. 2, 3, 4, 5. 1 Sam. 15. 22, 23. Isa. 66. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.
fication Jer. 7. 1, 2, 3, — 21, 22, 23.

In the Old 2. *Paul* had other Adversaries, Rom. ch. 3. ch. 4. ch. 5. ch. 9,
and in the New Test. ch. 10. especially *Antinomians*, who drew the Doctrine of free
Justification by Grace to licencious loosnesse, then we may sinne, if
so and so, we be justified (said they) then is the Law of none ef-
fect, Rom. 6. 1. But his chief Adversaries, on the other extrem, were men that stood much for Justification by the works of the
Morall Law: And *Paul*, Rom. 3. proves that all, *Jews*, *Gentiles*,
David, *Abraham*, could be justified neither by works of Nature
nor of Grace, and casts down the *Jews* righteousnesse by Law-do-
ing, Rom. 9. Rom. 10.

3. There were a third Classe of Adversaries to free Justification, *Galatians*, seduced and false *Apostles*, who contended for Justification by Circumcision and the necessity of keeping the Ceremonial Law, if they would be saved, Act. 15. 1, 2, 3, 4, &c. Gal. 2. Gal. 3. Gal. 4. Gal. 5. ch. 6. Who mixed the Gospel and *Moses* his Law, and *Paul* proves, Gal. 3. that we are not justified by the works of the Morall Law, for that Law, Deut. 26. 27. involves all that omit the least duty of the Law, Gal. 3. 10, 11, 12, 13. under a curse, and *Christ* was made a curse for us. And *Paul* proves in the generall, we are justified by neither the works of the Morall, nor of the Ceremoniall Law.

4. *James* had to do with another gang of loose livers, the *Gno-
ficks*, who contended for justification by a bare nominall faith
without love or good works. And *James* proves that we are justi-
fied

and the Law-dominion.

sied before men and to our selves by faith working by love, and not
by a dead faith.

5. *John* contends much for reall and speaking marks of justifica-
tion and conversion, against dead Professours void of love to the
Brethren.

2. 3. What is the dominion of the Law over a sinner?

A. It is the legall power to condemn all such as are under the
Law, as a Covenant of Works; as marriage is dissolved, if either of
the parties be dead: So Rom. 7. 4. *Ye are dead to the Law through
the body of Christ*, and it is not every commanding power that
Paul, Rom. 7. denies to the Law, but a Lordly dominion, such Of the dom-
as Lords of life and death have and exercises, & *vixit & regnauit & ex-
mition of
mortuus*, and we are dead to the Law through the body of Christ, the Law.

which mortification or dying is not understood subjective, as if it
were in us, but legally and objectively in Christ, because Christ in
his body on the tree did bear our sins, 1 Pet. 2. 24. and was made
a curse for us in our place, Gal. 3. 13. For Christ (saith Ambrose, Ambro-
Mori legi est
clearing the place) giving his body as a Gaviour, overcame death Mori legi est
and condemned sin: Hence these two words, Rom. 7. 4. *Wherefore vivere Deo,
I through the Law am dead to the Law, that I might live unto eternitatem, scilicet
God;* As the death to the Law is legall, I am no more under Law- ergo dimittit
condemnation then a dead man, so the living to God is a Law. living tunc pcc-
to God on a Law-absolution (as the absolved malefactor cleared of
a capitall crime which might have cost him his head, liveth, and so
is set free) so there is another most emphatick word which insinuates
that Christ is dead to the Law, as Paul was, for after Paul saith, corpus Christi, hoc con-
Gal. 2. 19. *I through the Law am dead to the Law*, he adds, v. 20. sequitur be-
*I am crucified with Christ legally, that is, as Christ was crucified for
sin by the sentence of the Law, so I am crucified with him.* Rom. trahens in
6. 8. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also corpus suum
live with him, which is not only to be expounded of mortification Servator,
and inherent newnesse of life, but also of legall dying with Christ: moritem vi-
For Christ died no death but legall death, there is no inherent tun dama-
mortification or slaying of a body of sin in him as in us, though from vi.
his death there also flow an merited and inherent personal mortifi-
cation in us, for it is added, v. 9. knowing that Christ being rai-
sed

*Our deadnesse to the Law,***PART. I.**

sed from death dieth no more, death hath no more dominion over him, then Christ, by Law, cannot die twice, so Christ being once crucified, the Law and death, which had once dominion over him, hath now no more dominion over him. Then, first, as Christ died a Law-death and was under death, because under the Law, so are we legally in him freed from the Laws dominion, and death following thereupon. 2. As Christ defies the Laws dominion and death, so do we. 3. As Christ cannot twice satisfie the Law by & believeth dying (for then the first had not been sufficient) so neither can we ever be under Law-death and Law-condemnation, for we were from the once in Christ legally condemned and crucified in our Surety and so law-domi-
nion. cannot suffer in our persons legall condemnation and legall death.

4. As Christ is dead to the dominion of the Law and death having once died and come out from under both, so are we dead and come legally out in him, which answereth the severall temptations we can be under in Christ. *Obj.* But then may we not sin, because wee are freed from the dominion of the Law and death? as Rom. 6. he had said, *ye are not under the Law, but under Grace*, v. 15. What then? *Shall we sin, because we are not under the Law, but under Grace?* *God forbid*, ver. 16, 17. He answers from an absurd, then we that are ransomed by Christ, should not be our ransome-payers servants, but the servants of sin. Now except the meaning had been, we are not under the Law, that is, the Laws dominion and the Laws condemning power, there had been no place for such an Objection, nay, nor any shadow; but the true Objection is, we are not under the Law to be thereby condemned and eternally punished, therefore what is the hazard of sin? We may sinne at will, there is no fear of hell. *Paul* answers not from that evill of servile fear that followeth sin, but from the woefull ingratitude to our ransome-payer. O then we should not be under Christ and the directing light and rule of our *Lord Ransomer*, if we sin at will, but still servants and slaves to sin and so not redeemed, by which we

The Anti-
nomian ob-
jectiochar-
ged upon
is answered
by him.
gather that there is two things in the Law. 1. The condemning power of it. 2. The directive commanding power: As to the former, Christ by being condemned and suffering a cursed death for us, took that wholly away. We are not then under the Law as condemning, yea neither as saving and justifying, for then should we.

and of Law dominion.

we be married to the Law and under conjugall power as wife and husband living together, which *Paul* refutes, Rom. 2. 1, 2, 3, 8. (2.) There is a directive commanding power that **C H R I S T** taketh in hand, and commands us to obey our *Lord Ransomer*, and we should sin against his love, if we should live loofly, because we are freed from condemnation. Hence also there is a twofold ^{There is a} dominion of sin, one legal to condemn us eternally, another (as it were) dominion physical to keep us under the superlative power of lusts, if Christ of sin had not died, we had been under both.

Q. 4. What is meant by *the oldnesse of the letter in which we are not to serve?* Rom. 7.

A. He means the idle, fruitlesse, and bare knowledge of the Law in externall Discipline, that reigns in an unrenewed man, by which he remaining in nature under the Law, fomenteth an opinion pharisaicall (for he points at the false and literall glosses of the Law given by Pharisees and refuted by Christ, Mat. 5.) Of me-
nit, externall worship, ceremonies without any inward heart-re-
novation, to which is opposed *the newnesse of the spirit*, or true the newnes
new Evangelick obedience and holinesse wrought by the Spirit. ^{The old-}
^{letter, and}
^{newnesse of the Spi-}

Obj. Is not the letter of the Law a bondage, since we are freed in heaven from the letter and from awing threatening?

Ansf. To serve God is liberty, not bondage, Psal. 119. 45. Rev. 22. 3. compared with ver. 5. serving of God and raigning suit well together. See Luk. 1. 74, 75. Job. 8. 34, 35, 36. Rom. 6. 16, 17. but there is a threefold bondage of the letter. 1. *Accidental*, in regard of our corruption, the service is wearisome to unrenewed nature: This we are saved from in **CHRIST**, not fully in this life, but it comes not from the Law which is spirituall. 2. *A bondage to the dominion of the condemning Law.* 3. There is a *bulke of Ordinances*, hearing, reading, praying, meditating, repenting, receiving of the seals, we are freed from the one in this, and shall be freed from the other in the life to come.

Q. What is the dignity of the Gospel above the Law?

A. By the hearing of faith, that is, of the Gospel we receive the Spirit, Gal. 3. though the Law in the letter be also spirituall and lively and seek of us the lost Image of God by way of commanding, yet there is no promise of the Spirit, made in the Law neither

The eternity of the

neither gifts nor grace, and both are given by the Preaching of the Gospel.

No gifts 2. No miracles are wrought by the Law to confirm the Doctrine of the Law, for it is not new, nor is the gift of miracles given as a reward of Law-obedience, miracles *in genere cause finalis*, are wrought to avenge Pharaoh and the Egyptians Law-obedience; but the miracles are wrought by the Name of Jesus, *Aet. 4.* and for the confirming of the Gospel, and for the good of the Church: See *Gal. 3.1,2,3.*

CHAP. XXVI I.*Of the property of the Covenant of Grace, the perpetuity thereof.*

Ques. **V**Herein stands the eternity of the Covenant of Grace? And what other properties there be of the Covenant?

Ans. The Law and Covenant of Works is a rule of everlasting righteousness, and so may be called an everlasting righteousness containing precepts of the Law of nature intrinsically good, such as to know love, fear, trust in him as the only true God: and in this sense it is an eternall Covenant.

But 1. it is not eternall in the positives of the second, and fourth, and fifth Commands, the way of worship, the means, as Ceremonies, Sabbath, Magistracie, and such like, which are not to continue in the life to come, and so neither faith nor hope in God

How the Covenant of works is through Christ, *1 Cor. 13.13. Rom. 8.24,25. 2 Cor. 5.7.* nor a not eternall Temple, nor Ordinances, nor the Kingdom of Christ as now dispensed, are to be the binding rule for eternity to such as are confederats of the Covenant of Grace, *Rev. 21.22,23. 1 Cor. 15.24* though more of the smell and remnants of the Covenant of Grace of the Lamb, of praises to him who was slain, *Rev. 5.9,11,14.* being the life to come, then of the Law-Covenant, in regard of standing in a state of glory for evermore by the Mediator, to keep the nature in an eternall union, *for evermore*, by the Lord Christ his being cloathed with our nature, glorified for ever, *Rev. 3.11*

PART. I.*Covenant of Grace.*

&c. 5. Rev. 7. Rev. 20. Rev. 21. Ch. 22. And in that we shall be ever with Christ God-Man, *Luk. 23.42. Job. 17.24. 1 Thess. 1. 2 Cor. 5.8. Phil. 1.23,17.* in an eternall state of glory, though not in regard of an advocation and intercession for fallen sinners, of grace in As 1 *Job. 2.1,2.* or of praying that our faith fail not, when winnowing the life to come then as *Luk. 22.31,32.* In a word there is a mediation of the triumphing reign for the standing of the glorified nature, and a mediation for the reconciling of, and interceding for of sinners. The works latter must cease when the Kingdom is given up by the Sonne to the Father, *1 Cor. 15.24.* The former is eternall and shall never cease.

2. The Law as a possible and standing way of justifying and saving sinners is not eternall, but is now ceased to all flesh, the Man Christ only excepted, but the Covenant of Grace stands as the on-way under heaven, by which sinners may be saved, and after the Covenant of Grace there is no dispensation, which *Libertines* and *Familists* call more spirituall without Ordinances and a way as they speak of *all spirit, of pure spirit.* Other differences between the Covenant of Grace and that of Works, and that of Grace.

3. The Covenant of Grace is eternall, in regard in it there is promised actuall grace, and continuall influences of grace from the Head Christ, the High Priest, to keep the confederats in obedience and in perseverance to the end. And no such influences either for the habit of grace or for the continuated acts thereof, are promised in the Covenant of Works, in regard *Adam* a man, and poor men in him do undertake to obey. Whereas Christ-Man stands and undertakes as head Covenanter and Surety for all the under confederats, and for sinners in the Covenant of Grace. Which difference is much to be observed, between the Covenant of Works and the Covenant of Grace: And for that cause the Covenant of Works is, 1. more independent, and requires more of mans strength and less grace then the other.

4. It stands more by precepts, lesse by promises, having only one promise of a reward and hyre to the obeyer, and consists all of precepts, the other though it want not promises, especially, it is his command that we believe in the Son of God, yet stands most by promises, and this Covenant gets the name of a promise or the promise, *Acts 2. 39. Rom. 8.9.* compared with *Acts 3.25. Gen. 12. 3.*

3. The

3. The Covenant of Works bath more of hyre, more of man's nature; of earning and working, and more of man's Covenant where he binds for himself, and the other partie for himself, without the mutuall help of any of the confederate parties.

The perpetuity of the Covenant of Grace. The buried and dead parties *Abraham, Isaac and Jacob* are still in the Covenant of Grace, and there remains a Covenant union between Christ and their rotten flesh sleeping in the dust, which is not an union by faith, or by any actings obedientiall of dead men, as in the life to come.

most evident, if we compare our Saviours words, *Matth. 22. 32.* with the Lord speaking out of the Bush to *Moses*, *Exod. 3. 6.* and *God is not the God of the dead, but of the living*, nor is the rising of the body promised in the Covenant of Works, nor is there a standing Law Covenant between the Lord and dead *Abraham*, requiring the condition of faith from buried men. Only there is warrant to say that the Covenant is everlasting, because it goes beyond time, and stands with the dead in Christ, *Matth. 22. 32.* (2.) Because two great promises of the Covenant, the rising of the body and life everlasting, are fulfilled after time is ended, *Job. 6. 38, 39. 1 Thess. 4. 14, 16, 17.* and adde to this the publick owning and confessing of the Saints before the Father and the holy Angels; which is publick remission and declared justification before the world of Elect Men and Angels, *Luke 12. 8. Matth. 10. 31.* (3.) Because after all these, to walk among them as their God and dwell among them, *Rev. 7. 15, 16, 17.* when they are clothed in white Robs, and are before the throne serving him night and day, and that the Lord should be their God, *Rev. 21. 7.* after they have overcome all temptations, is fulfilled eternally in heaven. Now for God to walk among a people and be their God is to be a Covenanting God to them, as is evident from *2 Cor. 6. 16. Lev. 26. 11, 12. Jer. 32. 38. Zech. 13. 6.*

Every without hire or price, and every article and lith of it is Grace. 1. The whole Gospel is the word of Grace, *Acts 20. 32. Col. 1. 6.* the Bargaine a paction of Grace, and the new Covenant, *Heb. 8. 8.* for Grace is a new thing, and nature an old thing, the condition

of the Covenant, to beleeve is a gift of grace, *Phil. 1. 29.* the mercies bestowed and promised are all of free grace, for we are justified by his grace, *Rom. 3. 24.* freely, and are saved and called with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, *2 Tim. 1. 9.* For by grace (saith Paul) are ye saved through faith, and that not of your selves, it is the gift of God, *Eph. 2. 8.* and the new creation is framed in us of grace. But God who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, *Eph. 2. 4, 5.* and the new heart promised, *Ezek. 36. 26.* is given upon this account, v. 32. Not for your sakes do I this, saith the Lord, be it known unto you, be ashamed and confounded for your own wayes, O house of Israel. We have remission of sins freely of his grace, *Eph. 1. 7.* In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace, *Col. 1. 14.* Perseverence is promised of free grace, *Jer. 31. 35. Jer. 32. 39, 40. Isa. 54. 10.* as life eternall is the gift of God through Jesus Christ our Lord, *Rom. 6. 23.* and every influence of grace is of free grace, *Phil. 1. 13. Job. 15. 5.* and CHRIST the Surety of the Covenant, of free-grace and love, is given, *Job. 3. 16.* to taste of death for every man, *Heb. 2. 9.*

CHAP. XXVII.

Of cases of Law-fear, and Gospel-faith: How a child of God fears Law-threatnings.

From these properties flow diverse cases touching the stability of the Saints, their perseverance, their temptations, their standing in grace.

1. If they cannot fall away, who are thus seated in the Covenant, is not free will left to much losnesse of security? Answ. Not at all: For a principle of Godly fear is fixed in the heart, and so in free will, never to depart from God, *Jer. 32. 39, 40.* And where this Godly aw is, the heart is in a Godly trembling and fear, and darre not be loose, wanton, and secure to fear nothing, but fears alway

Of Law-threatnings

alway, *Prov. 28.14.* and fears and trembles at the Lord and his goodnessse, *Hos. 3.5.*

A Godly heart trembles more for fear of grace and the debt of grace, then of justice and wrath; and fears sin more, as it is against the bands of grace, and against Christ, and Gospel-love who can save, then as it is against Law the Law-giver, and him who eternally destroyes. And so the aw of heaven hath a stronger impression then the terror and aw of hell.

Ques. 2. How can the fear of falling away, and the faith of perseverance absolutely promised and absolutely given, consist together?

Ans. The Law-fear of falling away, and the Gospel faith of persevering are not consistent. The fear legall of the least sinne is beleever. a fear of hell and of eternall wrath to be irrecoverably inflicted, but because the person is under grace, the beleever cannot fear this fear,

* So the except the Law-fear be letten out against him as a temptation, but it is not his oblidged duty so to fear.

Ans. 2. The Law-fear upon a beleever is conditionall, and not absolute, that Christ their lute, as he fears hell and falling away, *jure*, as his deserving, if Son shal be God should enter in judgement with him, and if he were not in great shal sit **CHRIST**: But he is oblidged to a Gospel-faith which layes hold on Christ, righteousness, and deliverance from condemnation, and if Christ and interest in him be hid from him, and nothing on his fathers but Law-fear, that is a triall, not a duty of Law-fear.

* But there ver the house is a Godly Law-fear, or a Gospel-Law-fear, which is a Godly of Job for horrour conditionall for that which is never to be inflicted, but yet ever, *Luk. 1.* according to deserving may be inflicted, and this is the terror of 32,33. dia. well consist the Lord, which breedeth Gospel perswasion, *2 Cor. 5.11.* and so with that may well stand with Gospel-faith and assurance of deliverance from holy and o- falling away and of being stablished and confirmed to the end. As bedientiall a child in the fathers arm threatened to be cast over a sharp Rock in fear of flee- the Sea, may have horrour and fear, and cry out for fear, and yet ing into E- beleeve so his fathers compassion as he will not throw him in the gyp, for fear that Herod Sea, because the threatening is ordained not to be exercised, but shuld mur- that the child may so much the more thrust his arms about his fa- ther that thers neck.

hopessull young King *Ques.* 3. What is the best victory over temptations from such in his era- fears?

Ans. *Matt. 24.*

*PART. I.**as feared by beleevers.*

219

Ans. As in all temptations, so here, overcoming is attended with precious promises, which are to be read, *Rev. c. 2. 7. 17.* be done 26,27,28. *c. 3. 5. 12. 21. Rev. 21.* under tem- tations.

For 1. Feavers of the Law that have no kindly cools, and re-lenting by the promises of the Gospel, tend not to the strengthening of the life of God, but only when they leave a standing self loathing, and loving of Christ.

2. It argues the strenght of faith, after many, yea six foyles to stand; as the Army that is broken six times, yet rallies and draws up again, is often at the seventh time victorious.

3. Such as stand against a strong and mighty tentation, *b. ing pressed out of measure, above strength*, as Paul was, *2 Cor. 1.8.9.* *in so much* (saith he) *that we despaired even of life. But wee had the sentence of death in our selves, do prevail to the being taught of God, not to trust in our selves, but in God who quickens the dead:* For here there comes reall strength from fighting: As he who, by strength of nature, lives and convalesceth after a running boatch and strong pestilence, goes through pest-houses and is never infected again. So the worthies by faith who overcame strong temptations, *Heb. 11.* to the end, keep the fields and prevail till death.

4. Godly fear of self-weaknesse and trembling at sin which may darken the feelings of received mercies and sweet influences adderth strength. Something of that is here, *2 Cor. 12. 10. when I am weak, then am I strong.*

5. A fixed peace in assurance of deliverance from condemnation, and quietnele in beleeving pardon and righteousness in Christ, ought alway es to be, as touching the state of Justification: for the questioning of this in a beleever, if *Antinomians* will yeeld to truth, is contrair to faith, and no warrantable assurance. But 2. a fixed peace in *David*, immedioly after blood shed and adultery, be-

fore beleeving of the remission of these particular sins be, in the *What way a fixed peace. Lords order, renewed, is security, and not Godly peace. Psal. is in the 32.3. While I kept silence, my bones waxed old, through my children of bearing all the day. 5. I acknowledged — and thou forgave my iniquity of my sins. Psal. 51. 1, 2, 3, &c. prove this. But it may be said, doth not this holy feeling of, and trouble for*

Ecc

the

Of godly and of

the particular horious guiltiness, brangle the fixed peace and the persons faith and confidence that he is in a state of justification? A beleever Ans. Not at all: for the outcries of the child of God, Rom. 7. 24. ought not under, not a finger, or an arm, or a leg, but a body of sinne: O to complain wretched man, who shall deliver me from the body of this death? of a state of are good, and much feeling of pain argues much life. And such as non justifi-^{ation}, but in this regard say, I thank God, I was plagued and pained, but ought to now nothing ails me, I have peace, I am rich, I have need of no- complain thing, Revel. 3. 17. I am all whole, must be in a dangerous case. of a state of Indeed the complaining of want of justification and of the righte-ousnesse of God in a believer, and a raising of the foundation, as: Psal. 31. 22. Jon. 2. 4. I am cast out of thy sight: are both false and bastard-feelings, and hasty unbelief: for this is a reflection upon, and a reproaching of the Office of the Healer of sinners. This is contrair to faith, and the former is a complaining of the body of sin that can hardly be slandered; so a complaining of self, and the feeling of inherent corruption weakens not, but strengthens faith. And complaining thus, and triumphing in a believed justification, do well consort in Paul, Rom. 7. 24. O wretched man, &c. v. 25. I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord: and Rom. 8. 1. Then every feeling of sin is not contrair to faith, as Mr. Town and other Antinomians teach, some godly tender feeling foments faith.

Q. 6. How cometh it to passe that seldom feeling of sin wanteth unbelief?

Ans. Our looking, in a Legall, not in an Evangelick way, Why feel-
ing of sin, seldom wants un-
belief. upon sin, doth occasion unbelief: for looking to the sicknesse of the sinner is but abused, when this use is made of it, that the question which Christ hath abundantly answered; Ah he hath not, who satisfied and payed my ransome, justified me also by the Redemption that is in him: but the strong body of sin which leads me captive, Rom. 7. 23. doth also lead, rather mislead me to doubt whether the ransome was sufficiently payed, and I sufficiently and freely, by his grace and the Redemption that is in Christ Jesus, justified, as Rom. 3. 24. And because the sinner feels the stirring and too vigorous acting of a body of sin, which is his own work, he removes the foundation stones laid by Christ, and questions the well done work of Christ, and thrusts in his sickle into Christs har-vest:

PART. I.

unjust complaining.

rest: which is upon the mater to lay, Ah my sanctification is nought or small: Therefore Christs satisfaction is weak, so the man laying the burden upon the wrong back, will take and pull off the burden complains that Christ in his own body did bear on the tree, as 1 Pet. 2. 24. and of his own wrestle under his own body of sin himself, and he thinks he will do better himself then Christ. This is that which Antinomi-^{ans} imput to us groundlesly, but it is our sinfull weaknesse so to be lately troubled at the indwelling of a body of sin, as we doubt of and ed, he also call in question the work of Justification and the satisfaction of unbelieve-^{ing} Christ. But there is good cause why the sinner quarrel with him-self and complain of a body of sin, and yet not only quarrell with Christ, but exalt Christ, and by faith close with the absolutenesse performed of his gifted satisfaction and righteousness. And this is as easie by the Grace of God, as we see the more that a gracious soul abases himself, as one carnall and sold under sin, Rom. 7. 14. as one in whom there dwells no good, as touching the flesh, v. 18. in whom indwells, v. 20. as one brought into captivity to the Law of sin, and a wretched man, 24. so much the more doth he exalt Christ the only deliverer, Rom. 7. 25. Rom. 8. 1, 24, 33, 34, 35. and why should not our blacknesse commend Christs beauty, our deadnesse melt his life, our sinfull wretchednesse his glorious office in saving, and our emptinesse and drynesse his fulnesse of the anointing who shall fulnesse?

CHAP. XXVIII.

Christ died not to blot out the sense of sin, but rather to quicken a Godly sense thereof.

The more of Christ and his sufferings be apprehended, the more Godly sense of sin, so far is Christs death from blotting out all Christ by sense of sin: For if sense of sin be all one with a simple reflecting his death knowledge, that we once sinned, then the Godly in this life from removes grace, not from the stirring of the Law, do both know and ac-^{not sense of} knowledge what they were. 1 Tim. 1. 13. I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, &c. I was before a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and injurious: but I obtained mercy. Tit. 3. 3. We our selves were also

What sense of sin.

also sometimes foolish, disobedient, &c. Yea the glorified cannot before the Throne sing the glory of the Lamb slain and the price of Redemption payed, Rev.5.12. to redeem them from sin, but there must be even in glory, this *sense of their debt*, though without heart-break or sorrow. Then it cannot be a Doctrine of the Gospel that paying of our debt, and the ransom, doth score out of a gracious memory the counts of a payed debt: The more I know what Christ hath done, the more I should kiss and imbrace the gracious surety, and these kisses of Glory, and that song, *worthy is the Lamb, &c.* say that grace and the faith of the price payed do inklarge rather the holy memory and sense of sin, than obliterate it. Hence the translated out of sense of grace, cast back their eye to the pit, the drudgerie of bondage they were once in, Eph. 2.3,4,5. Tit.3.3,4,5. 1 Tim.1. 13,14. with loving and praising the riches of grace. And must it not be good to read old counter and weep for joy, and cast and dart up praises to him who is at the right hand of the Father, and sorrow for old debts, and love much him who freely pardons?

2. If sense of sin be taken for the unbelieving feeling of, and judging my self cast out of his sight and condemned, whereas yet I am in Christ, and it is God who justifies me, who is he shall condemn? Rom. 8.33,34. We shall agree with *entitomians*, this is indeed the hasty sense of unbelief, Psal. 31. 22. Jon. 2. 4. Hence let them be rebuked who say not that Christ in the Gospel hath taken away this sense of sin. Yea many redeemed of the Lord, are weary and laden, but they render themselves weary, and then sinfully complain that Christ will not ease them. In which unconverted ones in the dead-throw are more to be justified than they, the one being under a reall burden, and the spirit of the Law acting upon them, the other act the Law at their own hand, and will receive the spirit of bondage to fear again, whether it be reason or not. He is the less to be pittied, who casts himself with his own hand in prison.

3. There is a Gospel sense of in-dwelling of sin bringing forth the mourning of the dove, and tears that are so innocent as they wrong not Christ, or his work of redeeming and justifying: Of this, Rom. 7.24. Christ, sure, takes not this away. Believer

is removed by Christ's death.

lodg'd a body of sin in them, as sicking patients and as captives half against their will, at least their renewed will, does contradict this quest, Rom. 7.14,15,16,17,18, &c. 23,24. It is sinfull doctrine to say that CHRIST takes away this sense of sin. For 1. this is the very true tenderness and gracious smitings of heart under any sense or guiltinesse: As 1 Sam.24.5. 2 Sam. 24. 10. Davids heart smote any sense him after he had cut off the lap of Sauls garment, and numbed of sin flowing the people. 1 Job.3.20. Job 27.6. And in some it is the natural conscience accusing and challenging after sin is committed; now CHRIST came not to extirpate conscience, nor the power of feeling and discerning the obligation to wrath, that the conscience apprehendeth after sin is committed, nor the legall evill deserving of sin, nor the contrariety between it and the Law. 2. Christ by his death gives repentance and mourning for sin, Acts 5.31. Eze. 2.10,11. (3.) Christ commends this, Jer. 31.18. *I have surely spared Ephraim bemoaning himself.* 2 King.22.19. *Because thine heart was tender — and thou hast wept before me, I have also spared thee,* saith the Lord. Luk.7.44. *She hath washed my feet with tears.* (4.) If Christ by his death should remove this, hee should bring on, by his death, a heart passed feeling, and burnt with a hot iron, which is condemned, Eph.4.19. 1 Tim.4.2. (5.) It speaks a gracelesse rockinesse of heart to sin, and not care for it, Mat.18.17,18. Pro.30.20.

Far lesse would the Lord have us to dream that a Christian is annihilated and melted into God, where they leave off to know, will, desire, feel, act, or do any thing but God is all and all in this life, and that, to the eye of faith, though not to the eye of reason, all sense of sin is destroyed; this is a destroying and overturning of all, Law, Gospel, of all humble walking with God, and removes all necessity of fearing,hoping,believing,praying,hearing, and changes



P A R T . I I .

Of the Mediator of the Covenant.

C H A P . I .

2. What room or place hath Christ the Mediator in the Covenants ?

4. He hath place in the Covenant of Works as a satisfier for us. 2. As a doer and an obedient fulfiller thereof in all points. And he is *Mediator and Surety of the Covenant of Grace.*

2. The first *Adam* marres all, the second *ADAM* who makes all things new, mends all. The first *Adam* was a publick sort of *stirrersman*, to whom was committed the standing and falling of all mankind, and in reference to man, the standing of Heaven, Earth, the second and Creatures in their perfection, and he spoiled all, put all things *a-falling*. The second *ADAM* received in his arms the whole Creation that was *a-falling*, *for in him all things ~~to make~~ ^{are} made to stand fast*, Col. 1.17. And he bears up all by his mighty word, Heb.1.3. He satisfied for our sins, and for our breach of the Covenant of Works.

2. He is a full doer and fulfiller of the Covenant of Works most perfectly, by doing. 1 Job. 3.7. *He who does righteousness is righteous : As he who suffers for the broken Law, fulfills the Law.* Rom.6.7. *He that is dead, ~~is~~ ^{now} freed, justified from sin, in the obligation of it to punishment.* So Paul, vers. 8. *If wee be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall live with him.* This dying is to believe that he died for us, at least it excludes not that. And if we keep the Law, we are not obliged to suffer : for the Law does not oblige man in absolute sense, both to perfect doing

F f

and

and to perfect suffering copulatively, but to one of them. But if we be (legally) dead with Christ, (as his death so excellent doth exhaust sins punishment and is a perfect satisfaction therefore) we are freed or justified from sin, not to suffer or satisfie by suffering for it, as Rom. 8. 3: *For what the Law could not do, so that it was weak (by accident, not of it self) through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinfull flesh, and for sin condemned sin in the flesh.* τὸ δικαιοῦ τὸν ρύμα the righteousnesse of the Law, the passive righteousnesse in suffering for the breach of the Law, might be fulfilled in us, 2 Cor. 5. 2. And Isai. 53. 5. But he was wounded for our transgressions, &c. — 6. The Lord laid upon him the iniquity of us all. But though some suffer, as the reprobate do, and suffer in this life the beginning of satisfactory judgement, yet are they not loosed from active obedience to the Law as the Law, though they cannot, having once sinned, be under the Law as a Covenant of Justification and life: nor is any flesh under that Covenant now.

Q. What place hath Christ's righteousnesse here?

Ans. Parens with some others distinguish between the Righteousnesse of Christ's person, which contains his essentiall Righteousnesse, as God, the habituall and actuall conformity of the Man Christ, and the perfect holinesse of the Man Christ. Such a High person and Priest became us, as is holy, harmlesse, &c. Heb. 7. 26. And, The righteousnesse of his merit, in the satisfaction of his suffering, the satisfaction is the formall cause of our Justification which is counted ours: this latter righteousnesse is acquired, the former is essentiall.

Now the active obedience of Christ falls under a twofold consideration. 1. As the Man Christ's perfect conformity to the Law of God, so as man he was obliged to do and suffer all that he did and suffered, even to lay down his life for man. But had he been only man his righteousnesse had neither been by condignity meritorious, nor tortious for us. But 2. The whole course of Christ's obedience from his birth to the grave, by doing and suffering, is to be considered as the doing and suffering of so excellent a person, his being born, his praying, preaching, dying, coming from a Person God-Man. Now the Law required not praying, preaching of God,

God-man, the blood of God, or the dying of him who was God-Man. And so all these being both so excellent, and then so undue, have respect of satisfaction to God. 2. The active obedience of Christ & all that Christ did and suffered were performed by him in his state of humiliation: In which he was poor, *δέ νεκτης*, 2 Cor. 8. 9. for us, so also by the same ground a weeping man, hungry, thirsty, weary for us, made lower than the Angels by the suffering of death, Epist. ad Heb. 2. 9. Humbled by partaking of flesh and blood, because of the ^{vid} ^{dejusti. ch.} children, Heb. 2. 14. Emptied himself for us, Ph. 2. This was, as Parens well saith, *perpetua quædam passio & pena peccatorum nostrorum, fuit tota vita Christi:* All these have a respect of punishment and suffering. For since Christ was both a viator and a comprehensor, and such a holy sinlesse person, he ought to have had the actuall possession of the Crown of Glory from the womb, and so should have been free of weeping, hunger, thirst, weariness, groaning, sighing, sadness, persecution, reproaches, &c. all which adhered to all his active holiness, and therefore in that his actions were satisfactory passions. For satisfaction is defined a voluntary restoring of the equivalent, and as good in the place of what is taken away, and the good restored must be, 1. Undue. 2. The proper good of the tressorer, which agrees to the active and ^{Satisfactio est redditus voluntaria equivalentis} passive obedience of Christ.

Obj. Then Christ's very weeping, and praying, being the weeping and praying of God-Man, might have been a perfect satisfaction for our sins; for Christ was God-Man in all his holy acts, in the state of humiliation, as in his being crucified, and in his prior bonis & non debitis.

Ans. This doth not follow: Because the punishment of the breach of the Law, and not that only, but such a speciall punishment, by dying the first and second death, according to the threatening of the Law, Gen. 2. 17. *In the day that thou eatest thou shalt surely die:* was required in the Law, and except the threatening of the Law be fulfilled, the Law is not fulfilled: And Paul, Gal. 3. 13. *Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the Law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, cursed be every one that hangeth on a tree.* Now Christ's suffering the death of the cross the cursed death is that which makes him under the Law. Ff 2 Ergo,

No satis. *Ergo*, there is a Law-righteousnesse in suffering death. So Gal. 4.4. God sent forth his Son made of a woman, made under the Law. For what end? 5. To redrem them that were under the Law, that we might receive the Adoption of sons. How are we had died, redeemed from under the Law? By blood, purchasing to us Justice all stification. Rom. 3.24. Being justified freely by his Grace, through the satisfi-
ction of the redemption that is in Jesus Christ, whom God hath set forth a surety to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his right-
might in teouesnesse for the remission of sins past: And redemption from the Law have curse of the Law, and remission is ever ascribed to the blood of Christ dying, Rom. 3. 24,25. Ye are bought with a price, n̄ p̄s sed, and the called a ransome of Christs blood, Λντερ διλατεν, Matth. 20.28. Lord might have ever. I Tim. 2.6. Eph. 1.1-7. In whom we have redemption in his blood, nally puni- the forgiuenesse of sins. Col. 1.14. In whom we have redemption shied Adam through his blood, even the forgiuenesse of sins. Rom. 5.9. Being & all his, justified by his blood. 1 Pet. 1.18. Being redeemed by the blood of way in the Lamb unspotted and undefiled. 1 Joh. 1.8. The blood of Jesus their per- Christ purgeth us from all sin. Rev. 5.9. And they sang a new sons, there- song (to wit, the four Beasts and the four and twenty Elders) fore there — for thou hast slain, and hast redemeed us to God by thy blood. was need 1 Pet. 1.18. By his stripes (wt. ch he suffered in his death, Isa 53.) of a pu- nishment We are healed. Rev. 1.5. To him that hath loved us, and has been agreed up- us from our sins in his blood. For though all Christs actions of on between God-man from the worth of the infinite person be meritorious, yet God and are they refuseable, yea a satisfaction by Covenant, which was the death of God-Man must be also. 2. The word also never speaks of Christ dying for all, but it mentions Justification in his blood, Ro. 3.24,25. Rom. 5.9. Yea the Scripture adds another end of Christ's this punili- death, to wit, forgiuenesse, Col. 1.14. Eph. 1.7. intercession ment must at the right hand of God, 1 Joh. 2.1. that we may receive the A-
doption of sons, Gal. 4.5. To make us Kings and Priests to God, the Law Rev. 1.16. dying to sin, living to him, 1 Pet. 2.24. That he which re- quired death, Gen 2.17. and so must Christ-God-man die.

The Scripture never speaks of Christ dying, but it speaks of this intrinsecall end, that they should die to sin and live to God, for whom Christ died; now this end is not possible in Pagans who never hear, nor can hear the Gospel, therefore Christ died not for Pagans.

might bring us to God, 1 Pet. 3.18. The glorifying of God in our bodies, 1 Cor. 6.19,20. Redeeming us from our vain conversation, 1 Pet. 1.18. From this present evill world, Gal. 1. 4. Sanctifying the people, Heb. 13.12.; Heb. 10.8 9,10. All which the Lord must intend in Christs death to Pagans, old and young, to all and every one of mankind to whom the Gospel could not come. And what authority have men to devise a redemption generall, universall, from hell, and not from sin? 2. For life eternall and not for the giving of the Spirit, and for redemption from a vain conversation, and for sanctifying of the people also? 3. A redemption in Christs blood, but no forgiuenesse of sins in his blood, not any non-imputation of sin, nor reconciliaioa of the world, 2 Cor. 5.15;18? 4. A dying of the just for the unjust, but not to bring them to God; a redeeming of them, but not a redeeming of them out of every Kindred and Tongue, and People and Nation (for these People, Nations, and Tongues, were redeemed by this way, as well as they) and a washing of them in his blood, but no making of them Kings and Priests to God, a dying for all, but no living with him: contrair to 1 Pet. 1.18. Rev. 5.9. Rev. 1.5,5,6. 2 Cor. These who 5.15? 5. Christs blood did something (and it is not any thing) teach that to make all saveable, to pacifie Justice, satisfie the Law, to merite Christ di- Heaven; but did nothing to soften the heart, mortifie and sancti- and every ffered for all the will, mind, affections, to remove unbelief, to renew the one, and mind. But it is sure the Lord had not intended to commit heaven made a and hell any more to a sanctified will, but mutable and lubrick in Covenant Adam, but to commit all to Christ, to a better Covenant, bet- of Grace with all & promises, to a way of free grace not of nature: Yet these men every one, commit the salvation and damnation of all and every one, to an un- and sends sanctified, corrupt, rebellious will, Gen. 6.5. Gen. 8.21. 1 Cor. 2. no more 14. Job. 6.44. Job 14.4. Psal. 51.5. Jer. 17.9, 10, &c. (except of the God they say, Pagans and all mankind are regenerated, sanctified, ju- every one, stified) yea to a worse Covenant then that Covenant of Works, make the to an universall Covenant of Grace. That 1. never came to their way of fal- ears. 2. By which they are in a worse condition then Adam was, vatio more who had the Image of God in his soul, and a full power to stand, impossible and a clearly revealed Covenant: But all mankind for whom second, the Christ is supposed to die, are born heirs of wrath, but they are under the born first Adam.

Christ's place in the Covenants.

PART. II.

born in more miserie in the bondage of sin, of a blind heart, of a corrupt will, their chains heavier, their furnace hoter in hell, helps fewer. And yet the absolutenesse of Sovereignty under the freedom of the Grace of Christ, by this way of Universalists, shines no more now, nay not so much now as in Adams state, for more is laid upon free-will, and lesse help to heal the will, then was in the Covenant of Works. And if all die in Adam, and the Second Adam die for all, he must die to loose the works of Satan in all; Now if a weaker course be taken to destroy Sathan's kingdom now then in Adams state, and all be laid upon a weaker will, Sathan is stronger now then before: And if Christ do not purchase by his death grace to bow indeclinably the will of all these for whom he dyed, to cause them live to him, die to sin, to make them Kings and Priests to God, &c. but leave their will in a more weak and wicked condition then it was under in the first Covenant, Sathan is in this stronger then the second ADAM. No more of this here.

It is a question, the Threatning standing, Gen. 2. 17. how the active righteousnesse of Christ can be a cause meriting to us life, and satisfying the Law, when there is no suffering for the breach of the Law which exprely required death in the sinner: Not to say, that it seems too near to make Christ's dying needless, if his active holinesse do the businesse; Nay we cannot so teach.

CHAP. II.

Wherein stands our right to Christ and the satisfaction made for us by Christ? 2. Faith is not the cause of our right. 3. Christ's incarnation and dying are not favours merited by Christ. 4. How Adams sin and Christ's righteousnesse are ours.

Our right to CHRIST must be considered more accurately then ordinarily it is. Whether it floweth from 1. the merit of Christ: Or 2. from the grace of predestination: Or 3. faith in Christ.

1. Conclusion. Grace is either *objectivè*, out of us as the free love of God having mercy on whom he will; Or *subjectivè* merited by Christ to us and bestowed upon us.

PART. II. *The love of the cause of the Incarnation of God.*

As touching our right to God as incarnate. 2. As dying for us, Christ's incarnation and death cannot be carnation and death a fruit of not the nature of Angels, Heb. 2.16. Then sure by the merits of Christ's death it cannot come that God came in the flesh to save sinners. For the effect cannot but come from the cause; but the cause flowes not from the effect, nor is the effect, to wit, Christ's Incarnation and his dying, the cause of that love and free-grace of God which moved God to send his Son in the flesh, but posterior unto, and latter then that love: for because he loved us, he sent his Son in the flesh to e for us.

2. This cannot then be true (Christ by his dying for the Elect, merited and deserved, that God should be made Man for us) for this should be true also (by the blood of Christ, and by the redemption that is in Christ, God sent his Son in the flesh, and the Son took on him our nature, by the blood of the Covenant) nor can this be true (Christ merited by his death, that he should die for us) for so it should be true, that Christ by his blood shed his blood for us: Where as because he loved his Church freely, he gave himself for her. Eph. 5.25. Who loved me and gave himself for me, Gal. 2.20. Hence 1. though grace be the cause of grace, as because he of grace ordained us to glory, therefore of grace he calls, and because of free-grace he calls, of free-grace he carries on his work, and gives of grace, perseverance and glory. Yet there is a fountain-grace of election to glory, which hath no cause nor merit, not the merit of Christ for its cause; but is the cause of causes and of Christ's merits. As one fire may produce another, but the element of fire was not produced by another element of fire, but by God in creation. And one Vine Tree brings forth another, but the first Vine Tree was created by the Lord only.

2. Conclus. Nor have we (to speak acurately) right to Christ's satisfaction nor to his righteousnesse by faith. 1. Because the Lords We have free-grace in laying our sins on Christ, Isa. 53.6. and his making not proper. 2. Cor. 5.21. does rather give the right to his satisfaction. God would have Christ to stand for so many chosen of Christ's satisfaction God by faith.

*Faith gives us not Law-right**PART. II.*

God upon the Crosse, and for no other. *1 Cor. 1.30. Ye are of him through Jesus Christ, who is made ~~an~~ of God, to us, wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption.* Nor is there any act of faith interveening by which Christ became our surety and ransome-payer upon the Crosse, and not the surety of others.

2. It is ordinary to our Divines to say, by faith we do apply Christ and his righteousness: but if we speak properly, application is possession and a putting on of Christ and his righteousness. Now title or Law-right to an inheritance, and possession of it, are different natures, and have different causes: but faith gives not law-right to Christ and his righteousness not so much as instrumentally. My receiving with my hand gold, my eating and drinking the flesh and blood of Christ by faith, *Job. 6. 53, 54. &c.* doth presuppose some right to that gold: but no man can say that receiving of gold, and eating of bread and putting on of garments, gives a man right to gold, bread or garments. He that possesseth an inheritance hath some right to the inheritance by birth, buying, purchase or gift: the possession in its nature and causes may be unjust, yet it is possession. Nor can it be shown what causative influence, even instrumentall faith, hath in our Law-right to Christ's satisfaction and righteousness, except it were a meritorious cause of our right by way of instrument, which can hardly be said.

CHRISTS
death can-
not be ap-
plicable to
as they shall have life eternall, if they believe. For 1. there is ei-
ther a *jus* and a Law-right to pardon and life eternall merited by
Christ's death to the Reprobate, or no such thing is merited. If
neither be procured by Christ's merite, the Patrons of this way shall
say there is no serious offer made to them: yea there is a *jus*, a title
to them by to life eternall and remission, which all the reprobate may chal-
lenge.

Davenantius, *dissert. de morte Christi*, pag. 49. *Respectu mortis Christi voluntas Dei altera comparata ad omnes & singulos, quamvis sit absque ea, nam hoc ipso quod Christus passus est in na- tura humana, sine alio ullo medio interveniente, hoc saltet apud Deum effectum, ut velut u- vis homini (Caino) credenti & peccanti reconciliari, peccata remittere, vitam eternam conferre* — *tolle respectum hunc moris Christi* — *promissionibus quoad non-electos nihil ferri, nihil solidi aut veri subfici* — *illud certum quemlibet hominem beneficio moris Christi hoc iuris fibi vindicare posse (Ergo hoc jus est imperatum morte Christi ciam reprobis.)*

to the satisfaction of Christ.

lenge, even a right to remission and life eternall, so they beleevē. Well then, it is the same right conditional to life and pardon which is purchased to the Elect: yea this must be purchased whether they believe or not. Then there is no more in the kind of the Law-right to Redemption and life eternall and remission of sins purchased to Peter, then to Judas or Cain; And therefore hath Christ bestowed as much tender love in dying for the Reprobate as in dying for his friends. And Christ saith there is no greater love then this, *Job. 15. 13.* As for the efficacious intention of applying of Christ's death to Peter, when as God had no such intention of applying it to Judas, that is an act of eternall predestination, not a fruit of Christ's death, and as for the grace of beleevēing, it was purchased to all, Reprobate and Elect, only the Lord applyes not his death, and bestowes not the grace of beleevēing upon the Reprobate, but for right to faith, to remission, to perseverance, to life eternall, this right must be purchased, but faith it self is never bestowed upon them. But there is a ransome of blood given for faith, and purchased by C H R I S T S merit: But C H R I S T is never called the Head of all men, Elect and Reprobate, *but the Head of the Body the Church*, Eph. 1.22. Col.1.18. And whereas the Head hath merited faith to the Reprobate, and that absolutely (for a condition is not possible) he should bestow it absolutely, else there is no seriousness in the command of beleevēing. And since faith is no meritorious cause of right to remission and life eternall, nor a cause in part, or in whole, of our compleat and actuall reconciliation, it may well be said, that they all are compleatly reconciled, pardoned, justified, washen in Christ's blood, when nothing is wanting, that compleats the nature of remission and justification, for faith is only a condition applying, not a cause buying, nor satisfying for us, and no cause giving in part, or in whole, any new right.

3. *Conclus.* Should we, by faith, have right to the promise of a new heart, by beleevēing, we should have a new heart before we have a new heart, for none can beleeeve savingly any promise, and so neither can he beleeeve that promise that God shall give a new heart, untill the habit of faith, which is a speciall part of the new heart, be infused: For actuall faith must flow from habituall

We have
not a new
heart by
beleevēing.

How Adams sin is ours.

faith. Therefore right to that promise must be absolutely purchased by the death of Christ to the elect before they believe.

Ques. How is it that not only, penally, but intrinsically and formally we sinned in *Adam*, and are inherenter sinners in him, but we are righteous in Christ only *imputative*, and why should not Christ be named formally the sinner, since he is made by imputation the sinner? As *Adams* sin is ours by imputation, and we formally and inherently are sinners in *Adam*?

Ans. How we sinned in *Adam* is a point of greater difficulty:

Adams sin For this first sin the tottering and reeling of the specifick common is ours, nor nature in *Adam* is ours, not because he is our father *per se* by nature, but *because Adam is our father* by Covenant, and Law, the Law and nature, but Covenant of Works being laid in pawn in his hand. There because he three parts of Originall sin: A partaking of the first sin of *Adam*, is our father both we all sinned in him, *Rom. 5.12,14,15.* (2.) The want of the Image of God, called the Glory of God, *Rom. 3.23.* (3.) Concupiscence and a bentnesse of nature to sin, *Rom. 7.7,14,17,18,23,24.*

As to the first, *Adams* sin is ours really and truely, not so much because it is ours, as because it is imputed to be ours by *God*, who so contrived the Law of Works, as it should be made with *Adam*, not as a single father, but with *Adam* as a publick person representing all man, and having our common nature as a father both by nature and Law, which came from the meer free-will of *God*.

1. Who might so have contrived the first Covenant of Works, that sin should only have been *Adams* own sin, not the sin of his posterity. For by no necessity of nature, which is antecedent to the free decree of *God*, are all mankind legally in *Adams* loins, though naturally they be.

Imputing Adams sin (2.) But children are as naturally in their nearest fathers loins, as we are all in the loins of *Adam*, and all men are equally of that race. same specifick nature with their nearest Parents, as with their first Parents: Yet the sins of the nearest Parents, by no necessity, are alwayes charged upon the children, but now all have sinned in *Adam*, *Rom. 5.12,18.*

(3.) Where a sin is inherently and personally, there is no need of imputation, which is a free Act of *God*, had Christ been inherently,

and Christ made sin for us.

rently and personally the sinner, God needed not make him, or impute our sins to him: as *Isai. 53.6*, *2 Cor. 5. 21.* and if we had been intrinsically sinners in *Adam*, his sin had been ours as intrinsically as it was *Adams*; and as *Adam* was not the first who sinned by imputation, but personally and intrinsically, so neither should *Adams* sin have been our sin by imputation, but intrinsically and personally, now the Scripture saith, *Rom. 5. 19.* By one mans disobedience, many were made sinners, *παράπονοι κατεστησαν* οντος, then they were not intrinsically sinners, before they were made, that is, before they were reputed sinners in *Adam*, or before *Adams* sin was imputed to them: as we are not intrinsically righteous in Christ, before we be justified, and made or reputed righteous in Christ: When therefore our Divines say, wee are as guilty of eating the forbidden fruit, as if our hands were there and our teeth, and we did eat in him, the speech cannot be taken physically personally (for we were not then born) but morally and legally: but our nature was legally there. But when the Ele^t does sin, Christ is not said to have been in our loines legally, but he was made sin, he was punished so as if he had been the sinner; though there was in Christ no formall guiltiness, no *reatus culpa*, but *reatus pena*.

The difference between the imputation of *Adams* sin to us, & of the righteousness of Christ to us

But we are deprived of the Image of God, and inclined to all sin, not by imputation, as the young Lion and the young Serpent have not the bloody and the stinging nature of the old Lion and the old Serpent by imputation, but by naturall and intrinsecall inherencie: Now our holie, harmlesse, and undefiled High Priest hath no sin in him by inherencie.

3. A legall satisfaction and paying of a summe, yea more then the debtter was owing, can never take away a morally inherent Christ's imputed righteousness, nor inherently justifie and make innocent the sinner and make him one, who hath never borrowed the money and waled it, or one who hath never sinned in *Adam*, and who hath never sinned in his own person: Yeat the Law of Works standing, as it is most spiritual and holy; It is impossible that he who hath once broken the Law, though he be made inherently most holy, and perfectly sanctified, can be made righteous, which requires there such a never sinned,

How Christ died not equally

there shall never be one the least sin committed, and what is done cannot be undone.

2. The suffering of another, as of the Man Christ, may well stand for what we should have suffered, but cannot remove the inherent blot of sin, and remove fundamental guiltiness. The paying a thousand Crowns for him who borrowed five hundredth Crowns and spent them on harlotry and drunkennesse, may free the debtor from being in Law, lyable to pay the five hundredth Crowns, but can never free him from being an unjust borrower, and a profuse waster.

3. The two Covenants of Works and of Grace standing, its impossible that the active obedience of Christ can make us actively and inherently righteous, or restore to us our lost innocency.

C H A P. III.

How Christ suffered for us in our roome and place. 2. *He died not for all and every one.* 3. *How many wayes Christ is said to die in our stead.* 4. *The Lords so dying for all makes not all saveable, nor the Gospel Preachable to all Nations.* 5. *Christ died in the stead of the Elect.*

THE Lord Jesus hath a roome in each Covenant, of Works, and of Grace: In the Covenant of Works as a sufferer for the breach of it. Its said by Learned Davenantius, one is said truly and properly to die for another, who dies to procure his good, though Ex folâ vi the other by his own fault, get no good of his dying for him. But horum verum there is not such a Question as this, whether one may truly and properly die for another, but whether Christ in the sense of the Christus pro omnibus Holy Ghost died vere & proprie, truly and properly, the just for mortuus est the unjust, to procure good to the unjust, and yet these unjust non potest may eternally perish and reap no good by Christs dying, through inferri Christi, their unbelief? 2. Will it not follow that Christ 1. died truly sum pro omnibus ita mortuum esse ut absolute decreverit hac sua morte omnium salutem efficaciter & infallibiliter operari: quia satis vere & proprie pro aliquo mori is dicatur qui bono alterius procurando moriatur, quamvis ille alter suo vito nihil commodi inde percipiat.

Christ cannot be said to die for all, if these all may eternally perish.

P A R T . II .

for all without exception.

and properly for all, and yet, *non obstante morte Christi*, notwithstanding of the Lords dying, all the world may eternally perish, as say Arminians and Socinians. 3. It shall follow that the immediate, yet the compleat effect of Christs death is not actuall, but possible saving of all. And Christ hath vere & proprie, truelie and properly died for them. Nor 4. is it enough to say that Christ had a speciall intention in dying for the Elect to give them faith, but he had no such intention in dying for the Reprobate. But hence it follows that Christ as properly and truely died for the Reprobate as for the Elect, as touching the nature and intention of his dying; and that he offered as sufficient a ransome for the one as for the other, and that is a meer possible ransome, but as concerning the intention to apply effectually, or no effectuall intention to apply the death, there's the difference. But 1. we aske for

Scripture, where it is said CHRIST dying as dying for the world,

No Scripture war-
had these two contrair intentions. The Scripture faith, Christ di-
rected us

to gather his scattered children, Joh. 11. 5. to bring to God, to say that

1 Pet. 3. 18. these for whom he died, that they might have life, Christ died

Joh. 10. 11. live to God, 2 Cor. 5. 15. die to sin, 1 Pet. 2. 24. be

redeemed from their vain conversation, 1 Pet. 1. 18. be delivered

from this present evill world, Gal. 1. 4. Here is our effectuall inten-
tion; where is there a place for his dying with no effectuall inten-

tion to bring any to God? and yet he dyed for all good and evill, death to the

elect, and to make salvation possible, say they. It is not enough to coyn

with another intention to ap-
two intentions in Christ-God-Man dying, and give us Scripture

for one of them only, and bid us take the other on trust. 2. Nor

is it enough to say all these places speak of Christs effectuall dying

death at all for his Elect only. For 1. it is not truly nor properly said that

Christ effectuall died for the Elect only, for he effectuall died

for no man by this way, because he died only to make salvation

possible to all, so as they might perish for ever, notwithstanding of

his dying for them: So the efficacy of dying is in Christ's intention,

and application. Now efficacy of intention and efficacy of appli-

cation are both extrinsecall to his laying down his life. 2. The

place, 2 Cor. 5. 15. cannot be expounded by them of only the ef-

fect: For it speaks (as they expone it) of Christ dying for all

that were dead, as v. 14. and these they say are Elect and Repro-

Christ sustaine. 3. Nothing is said, whether Christ on the Crofesse did sustaine not stain the person of all for whom he died, Elect and Reprobate, and two persons upon the crofesse. whether he sustained two persons (for he was cut off, but not for himself, Dan.9.26.) one for the Reprobate, another for the Elect.

And whether he finished the transgrefſion, and made an end of sins, as Daniel saith, 9.24. that is, of all sins and transgressions, final unbelief and all others: For except he did that, hee cannot finish the transgrefſion, make an end of sins, make reconciliation for iniquity, and bring in everlasting righteousness. to all these for whom he died; Except either he bring in half a righteousnesſe, or at least imperfect, and never make an end of some sins and transgressions, because mea will not have it so, and set bounds to the infinite sufficiency of Christ: Or because he puts an end of sin, and brings in everlasting righteousness conditionally, who teach that he died for all without exception.

There is nothing put to the most part for Christ of Christ's death and so after. But it may well be said that every dies, but a created saving grace is a fruit of Christ's death, and that we receive pelagian power to apply which infused separateth an Elect from a Reprobate: For it is peculiar to power all Believers and the Elect to be gifted with one heart, Ezek.11.19. men have, and a new heart in the habit, Ezek.36.26. and with the spirit of suppose grace and supplication to believe and mourn, Zech.12.10. and CHRIST had never died, accor. seed, Isa.44.3. And so must we say, that the same habit as actualling to these who teach that CHRIST dled for all be a fruit of the death of Christ, but not habituall saving grace. 2. and every The death of Christ for all is as common a means of salvation as one.

the Preaching of the Gospel: And both must be made effectuall by efficacious grace, which is not the fruit of the merit of Christ, by this way, and since grace to actually apply the death of Christ, is not given to Pagans and millions for whom Christ died, as these Authors teach, how unsufficient must the death of our Lord be? For it leaves faith as impossible to the reprobates as if he had never died for them, for neither habituall nor actuall faith is purchased to them by this death: Only the Pelagian application is left to them, which they should have had, suppose Christ had never died for them.

2. It is to be considered, how many wayes C H R I S T may be said to give himself a ransom for us, or in our place.

1. Christ hath sufficiently died for all in their room to redeem them. For, *pro domini, for men*, noteth ever the decree and intention of Christ dying for men; but the sufficiency and worth and *infinite* dignity of Christ's death, depends not upon the decree & intention of God for the worth of the death and the blood of him who is God, Act.20.28. 1 Cor.2.8. and the Lord of Glory is infinite, because of the infinitesse of the person, before and without his person, the decree of God. 2. Nor is it true that Christ's dying for all and every one (which is a dream) makes salvation possible to all, so that the Covenant is Preachable to all upon condition of believeng, Act.10.43. To him (Jesus Anointed who went about doing good and so was man, v. 38) to him (who was slain in our nature, not for all and every man, v. 39. to him) whom God raised up the third day, v. 40. To him gave all the Prophets witnessse (as it is, v. 43) that through his Name, who ever believeth in him shall have remission of sins.

2. And this would be considered (who so believeth in Christ true that are justified and saved) how it is universall? It is most true thus: believethal There is a sure connexion between fith and life eternall, and the b^r saved, connexion is decreed of God; or the concatenation of the end and but the means, or of the means and the end, fith and salvation. And truth of it is true: whether all believeth or none at all believeth, and whether not upon all or none at all be saved, as is this (whosoever shall keep the Law Christ dy. perfectly, shall be justified and saved by the works of the Law.) ing for all but 1. it makes neither fith nor salvation possible to Pagans and for e. Reprobats, very one.

Reprobates, nor perfect obedience in doing the Law nor Justification or salvation by the works of the law possible to any living man. But the Question is, whether the connexion of the former be made true by the decree and revealed will of God promising life to the believer, by no means, but only by this, because Christ died for all and every one. And so this should have been false (if all Pagans and Reprobate and Elect believe they shall be saved) if Christ had died only for the Elect. This must be proven either by Scripture, or by some solid reason from Scripture ; for it saith this, Reprobates can not have life by believing in Christ crucified for them: except it be true that Christ was crucified for them, but none can be saved by believing that Christ died for them, except they also believe that Christ rose from the dead, and ascended and interceeds in Heaven for them. Then one might infer this could not be true, but false (if Reprobates believe they shall be saved) except

None are Christ have died, risen again, ascended, and interceeds for all Reprobate and Elect. For true and saving faith the only condition believing of salvation, must lay hold on the Resurrection, Ascension, and Intercession of Christ, as well as on his dying for all. The reason died for them, ex. why it cannot be true that Reprobates shall be saved, if they believe, except Christ have died for them, is (by this way) they cannot also believe believe that Christ hath died for their sins, except it be true that that Christ he died for their sins : Yea, I answer, they cannot believe that Christ rose again for their righteousness, except it be true that ascended, Christ also rose for the righteousness of the Reprobates ; this latter ded forthē, they cannot say.

It is said by Christ's dying for all, God hath now a conditional will of saving all and every one, Elect and Reprobate, if they shall believe, which conditional will was not in God, before Christ's dying for all. Yea without Christ's dying for all, salvation upon condition of believing had been impossible. But not to say that it is unworthy of the Holy Lord, that new wills and new decrees should arise in him, upon any thing that falls out in time, such as the crucifying of the Lord Jesus. Such Doctrine we condemn in *Vorstius*, and in *Arminians*, as is well observed by D. Twisse, such a decree as this, that God should say (I decree, will, and intend remission and life purchased by the death of Christ, to all Pa-

gans

PART. II. why the offer conditional is made to all & every one. 241
 gans that never hear the Gospel, to all Reprobates, so they shall believe in Christ : And yet I never decree they shall believe nor have grace to believe) saith no more then there is a connexion between faith as the condition, and remission and life eternall as the thing promised; as when God had decreed that Jerusalem should be burnt, and deny grace to obey; Yet faith Jeremiah from the God bath Lord, Jer. 38.17. If thou wilt assuredly go forth to the King of Babylon's Princes, then thy soul shall live, and this City shall not all, though be burnt with fire, and thou shall live and thine house. And the he say all Lord says to Cain, Gen. 4.7. If thou doest well (and shall savingly believe as Abel) thou shalt be accepted. Then was that connexion decreed of God, it containing a most just condition of life, comes such and a condition to which Zedekiah and Cain were obliged, but that the death of Christ made the Lord to intend and decree conditionally and in any terms either acceptation to life or remission to Cain, as the end, and well doing as the means, or intended to purchase the grace either of the one or the other, is not warranted by Scripture, for both the one and the other, are the fruits of the merits of Christ; Show 1. how God can will and decree such a thing to the Reprobate: for its as if a father would say, I purpose to sell such a plot of ground to my son, so he pay me an hundred Crownes, When 1. the son, by no possiblity, hath, or can have the hundred Crownes, but only from his father. 2. When the father of his free pleasure hath decreed never to give him the hundred Crownes or the plot of ground. 2. Show how faith is made possible by Christ's death, when it is not purchased to the reprobate by Christ's death, it is not surely made physically possible by Christ's death, if it be said that it is made possible morally, rationally, and objectively to them, because there cannot be an offer of life made to Reprobates and to all, upon condition of faith, except Christ have died for the Reprobate, that is denied, and never proven: If one should come (say they) to the Antipodes or to such as never heard of Christ, and Preach the Gospel, he should not, before he Preach, look for any new establishing of the conditional Covenant (who ever believes in Christ shall be justified and saved) but should take it as granted, it was made with them before; therefore by Christ's death the Gospel of it self is Preachable and may be Preached to all Nations, quovis

H h

*The Gospel is not Preachable to all and every PART.II.
quovis seculo, in any age, as it was to Job.* Ans. If any come
to the *Antipods* and any Nation that never heard of Christ, having
the gift of Tongues, and Preach to such, or by his own industrie

One that acquire the gift of such Tongues, and by the strong hand of pro-
pheth the vidence Preach the conditionall Covenant, these providences should
Tongues, be a command, and the setting up of a shining torch there should
may preach prove these people (as to the elect among them) in Gods minde
the Gospel were a Covenanted people no lesse then the Church of *Samaria*.
to the N. And there were no need to expect a new establishing of the condi-
comes un-
tionall Gospel-Covenant : But how is that proven to be from this,
to, but that
because God sent his Son to die for all and every one of these *Ant-
ipods*, and made the Gospel-Covenant with all and every one of
Gospel them before : the Authors shall be ebbe of Scripture here. And
comes in if these *Antipods* should, all and every one, refuse the Gospel and
in no sort, kill the Preacher, and never one either receive the Gospel, or pro-
from the pagate to any that may receive it ; Then such an Apostolick mis-
Lords sen-
tion is not in Scripture, and the lawfulness of that mans call to me
ding his
Son to die is to be questioned : and I should judge, his own Spirit, not God
for all and sent him. Nor is this true, that the *Gospel is and was Preachable,*
every one, and of it self, may be preached to any age. *Job* lived before the

The Go- giving of the Law, and *Melchisdeck*, and they had the call
spel is not of God to Preach to them to whom they Preached. 2. It shall be
preachable denied that *Jonah* had sinned, if he had not preached to *Ninevah*,
to all and except God had expressly commanded him to preach to *Ninevah*,
every Na- otherwise it had been the sin of Godly Prophets who lived with
tion, at all him in the time of *Joash King of Judah*, 2 King. 14. 25. and they
and every age & diff. had been guilty, as *Jonah* in not Preaching to *Ninevah*. Yea all
ference of the Ministers and Apostles, and Prophets had sinned in not Proph-
etisme.

cying to the *Phylisians, Syrians, Persians, Bythinia, Samaria*; whereas the Apostles, *Math.10.5. Act.16.6.* were for-
bidden to Preach the Gospel to the Gentiles, to *Azia*: and it were
strange to say *Ezekiel* sinned in not preaching to a people of an un-
known Language, whereas the Lord expressly says he sent him not
unto them, *Ezek 3.5,6.* and that, *Rom.10.15. How shall they
Preach, except they be sent?* is meant of the Apostles, and of all
lawfull Pastors. And there may be running and no sending of God
to Nations, *Jer.23.21. and Psal.147.19,20.* when he denies, he
declared his judgements and his statutes to any Nation, by sent

PART.II. Nation, and at all and every age.

Prophets, as he did to *Jacob*, if the Gospel then was of it self
Preachable to all Nations, Prophets unsent might have Preached
these same judgements to other Nations, that were Preached to
Jacob, though not sent of God. But that place, *Psal. 147.* and
diverse others would say he choised only *Israel* as his Covenanted
people : As *Deut.7.7,8,9. Deut.10.12,13,14,15. Exod.20.1,2.*
Psal.78.5,6. Amos 3.1,2. Deut.27.1,2. to them only he revealed
the Covenant of Grace, then was it not a Covenant of its own
nature that might at any age, be Preached to all Nations. But
what is then revealed in these decrees? (*if the Reprobate believe, they shall be saved*) Ans. Not Gods intention conditionall or ab-
solute to save them, or to give their faith or grace merited
by *Christ's* death, to believe, for then some good will and love of
election, the Lord should bear toward the election of such, and
should desire all the Reprobate to be saved, so they would believe,
and yet by this way, no more is there grace purchased to them, by

The co-
ditionall
Christ, to believe, then there is grace purchased to them to per-
forme obedience to the Law : Now the Authors will not say that
promise
either of
by *Christ's* dying for all, there is a conditionall will in Christ, or
life to all
in the Father, to give life to all who perfectly keep the Law : for
that shall
this conditionall will or means and end, was in God before, and
keep the
suppone Christ had never died for sinners. 2. This would say that
Law, or of
salvatio to
the Reprobate were to believe that *Christ* died to save them, ha-
all that be-
ing purchased life to them, and to believe that he died not to save
leve in
them all for whom he died, because they are not to believe he di-
Christ can
ed to purchase faith by his death, or grace to believe, without
inferre no
which salvation is impossible: it cannot be said that God absolutely or good-
intended to save them, whether they believe or not, even while with God
as there is such a decree in God, because he hath decreed both the to bestow
end and the means, to wit, having ordained for them salvation, the end &
and having ordained for them faith; nor is there any such decree upon ei-
ther the
in God, toward any but the Elect only, therefore this conditionall
decree (if all and every one believe, all and every one shall be sa-
one or the
ved) can infer no love of God through Christ to the persons of all other, or a-
ny good
and every one to have them saved, more then this can infer a love will toward
of saving all and every one, to be in God or to have been in the their per-
Lord, before the fall of *Angels*, and men (if all and every one of sons.

*The Gospel is not Preachable to all and***PART. II.**

Angels and men shall perfectly, without sin to the end, keep the Law, then all Angels, all men Elect and Reprobate shall be saved eternally.) Now no man sound in judgement can say this conditionall can infer that God had a good will to save some Angels, not to save others: More then this (if all and every man beleevve in Christ they shall be saved) can infer that God hath a good-will to save Reprobate men, and not fallen Angels. In a word, no simple conditionall propositions can infer the desire or good will of God to the persons of men or to have the things done, except God effectually work the condition: As this (if all fulfill the Law perfectly, men and Angels, and all men shall be saved by the Law) cannot infer that God hath a good will to the persons of all Angels and all men to justifie and save them all, without exception, by the works of the Law; the contrair whereof he decreed. For this connex proposition may stand true with the salvation of all Angels, of all men, of no Angels, or no men, according as the Lord shall be pleased of his good pleasure and free grace to work, or not to work the condition of moving the will of Angels and men to keep the Law. And therefore these connexions nihil ponunt absoluti,

*Conditionally promisi. they place nothing absolutely to persons, but only to things, to see place wit, 1. that it is the duetie and obligation of all Angels and men nothing at. to perform absolute obedience to the Law, as they would be justi-
solutely in persons but fied and saved by the Law, and its the duty of all men in the Visible
only the Church to beleevve in Christ. if they would be justified and saved in connexion Christ. 2. That there is a wise connexion between means and of things, end, obedience legall and life, faith and life, according to the ap. means & end, work, & reward, proving will of God, and yet neither means nor end may ever come to passe or fall out, and neither means nor end may ever be decreed of God to fall out: Yea God may decree absolutely that none of the extremes shall exist as God deccres (if Zedekiah shall yeeld to the King of Babylon, Jerusalem shall not be burnt) and yet according to his decree or will of purpose the Lord hath decreed that the yeelding of Zedekiah, and the safety of the idolatrous Citie should not come to passe, but the contrair. So God deccres, if Judas repent and beleevve, he shall be saved according to the will of precept, and yet according to the Lords will of purpose, neither did the Lord decree or intend the repenting and saving beleevving*

PART. II. *every Nation, at all times.*

of Judas nor was grace to beleevve and repent purchased by the death of Christ to Judas (by these Authors) though they boast of the amplitude of Christs death, nor did the Lord by that will of purpote ever decree or intend the salvation of Judas.

Therefore, 3. this, that the death of Christ is of its own nature preachable to all Nations, in every age, is not true: For the phrase is neither in Scripture, in Old or New Testament, nor is the thing it self in Scripture: For the meaning is, either God may send Apostles in any age to all the Nations of the world, to Preach: If that be, by his extraordinary power, he may save all the damned, If the God that way. That Preachableness is not the object of our faith: spel of it Nor is that Preachableness a fruit of Christs dying for all. If it be Preachable to all Nations: How is that to be said? Except we say God hath to all Na. decreed in his will of purpose to send Preachers to all; That can- tions, it not be, except his decree be disappointed. Q: 3. If it be his com- were the mand and revealed will that the Gospel be Preached to all Nations, sin of the Prophets every age, they grievously sin, who Preach not the Gospel to the ~~not to~~ *Brazilians and Antipods, whether they can speak in their Language Preach to or not. And if the Doctrine of the Covenant of its own nature all Nati- may so be Preached to all Nations, without exception, in every one, who- difference of time, then must all the Nations of the earth, in all that they differences of time, be in a capacity to be a Covenanted people of ~~with all Tongues~~ *with all Tongues* God, the Church of Christ, the Vineyard of the Lord, his inhe- ~~or no.~~ *or no.* 2. ~~And all~~ *And all* ~~Nations~~ *Nations* should be in a sim- Coven- ~~times to be~~ *times to be* ~~the Chur-~~ *the Chur-* ~~ch's of~~ *ch's of* ~~Christ, and~~ *Christ, and* ~~in Cove-~~ *in Cove-* ~~nir with~~ *nir with* ~~is Christ.~~ *is Christ.**

How Christ died in our stead and room, PART.II.
is against the wisdome of God, that 1. there should be such a band of love the greatest love that ever was, *Job. 15.13.* lying upon all mankind, *Brazilians, Americans,* binding them to thankfull Gospel-obedience that Christ died for them, yet this obligation of the greatest love is neither written in their heart, as the Law of nature, nor is it ever revealed to them that they are under so much love by Covenant. 2. How can the Lord say I choosed you, O Israel, among all the people of the earth, and entred in Covenant with you and your seed only. For 1. there is no need of a new establishing of the conditionall Gospel-Covenant, for it was established with Israel, and with all the world before he choosed or called them. 2. He cannot be said to enter in Covenant with them only. For all the world ever was thus Covenanted with God. 3. All the world must be an invisible Covenanted Church, and the fit matter to be a Church. For the Evangel may be Preached *eff de se annunciatib;e*, not to stones and to rocks, but to all Nations, *quovis seculo.* 4. Since the Preaching of the Gospel to some Nations, and not to others, is an act of the Sovereign pleasure, yea and of the free grace of God to such as this Sun-light graciously doth visit, by this way, the sinfull neglect of such as refuse to Preach shall be the cause of the perishing of the elect, a dream.

Its false
that Christ
died for us,
in our stead,
as if we had substituted him in our place, in so rigid a sense, as if he had been made over to us, that is, surely to fulfill both the preceptive and active, and also the satisfying and suffering part of the Law in our room. This may please Antinomians, but a doubt it is, if it stand with the truth: For then what ever we, yea all mortall men be (for Christ died for them all, as many teach) most wicked, yet Christ's active and the Law, surely and cautionary righteousness should be ours, and though we should never beleieve, yet Christ who fulfilled the Law and performed all active as well as the threatening part, must have beleaved for all obedience & that he died for, and what need we then in our persons either be passive by leevve or repente? Its true, we need not perform any active obedience, as a part of active fulfilling of that Covenant of Works, dying, that which either must have all, or no obedience. If it be said that God can *alio titulo*, upon another account of thankfulness to our ransom-payer we owe active obedience: Yet all that CHRIST died for, both

PART.II. *as some teach.*

both actively and passively must be perfectly righteous and justified, having payed the most perfect active and passive obedience that the Law required, though we never beleieve, and Christ must have payed the active part of justifying faith for us. And why, but we should be formally justified in him without faith also? As also, God, not we, laid our sins upon Christ, *Isai. 53.6.* *2 Cor. 5. 21.* and therefore we did commissionate and substitute Christ to die in our room.

Socinus, Crelleus, the Raccovian Catechism, Arminius, to die for contend that Christ died for *all finaliter*, for to procure good and us. *Socinus, de Servatore.* *l. 2. c. 8. di-* for example as a Martyr (say *Socinians*) as *Paul suffered pro* for the Church, so as we, beleeving in Christ as in the only chief *causam finali notat.* *Martyr and witnesse,* who as the only Author declared the Go-*Ioan Crel-* pel, not as a sufferer and ransom-payer who redeemed us from *luis. aduers.* the Law, are saved. And as *Arminians*, he died for our good, *Grotium,* not that he died in our room and stead, so as the sins of the Elect *pr. i. c. 5.* were actually taken off them and translated upon Christ, so as they *Catech.* we actually freed from the punishment of sin, as if we had subtli-*Ricovicie.* tute a Saviour our selves, and payed our debt our selves to God; *c. 8. pig.* and so according to the rigour of Justice, we might crave by the *183, 184.* *Loco & vi-* Law of buying and selling deliverance from punishment, and life *e- ce peccato-* eternall from God. But this way they will not have Christ to die *run nostro-* in the place and room of any, but only for their good, so as they *run mortu-* may die eternally themselves for whom Christ died. Hence 1. It *um esse, ni-* follows that Christ died for them but give no ransome of blood for *qui datur* them for whom he died. 2. *Arminians* will not have the sins *fendit au-* and punishment satisfactory to justice (for of such punishment we *tert' process;* speak) actually upon Christ, and translated off the sinner and laid *tibi in fuga,* *aut loco fuge* *il pendit.*

Jac. Armin. *Antiprelit. Bertiane*, pag. 675. *Quod si statuimus talen meditiosam ratio-*
ut omnium delitorum peccata actu ab ipsis abliantur & in Christum translati sint, qui pe-
ccupon pro illis passus, illos actu ipso a penitentia liberaverit, tum obediens ab illis postularat suavitatem, qui
est propositum, & virtus eternam illa prestacione non sibi, sed illis meruerit, non secundum quam si ipsi
mediatorum nostro loco constitutissimus & per eum DEO solvissimus debitancfra, jam simili statu-
endum est secundum ipsius justificationem DEI & legis rigorem electi deberi & innuiri eveni & peccatis
et vitam eternam, cosique ista bona i DEO posulare jure solutionis & emptionis, aliisque co ut De-
posulare illo jure filium in Christum & conversionem ad Deum posse. *upon*

*How Christ died for us,***PART.II.**

upon Christ and beleevers actually freed from satisfactory punishment : So that both beleevers and Christ must actually bear the satisfactory punishment. Which indeed makes beleevers half redeemers with Christ : against which we disputed before.

3. Arminians denies that we payed our debts to God, in Christ paying them for us. So that the broken man cannot be said to have satisfied the debt in, and through the surety who satisfied for him, which in all Law is unjust. And since Arminians denies that we payed to Justice a ransom for sin, because our Surety Christ payed for us, he must deny that *Christ was wounded for our transgressions, and bruised for our iniquities, or that the chastisement of our peace was upon him* : Contrair to *Isai. 53. 5.* because we made him not our Mediatour and Surety, but God made him Mediatour, and laid our iniquities upon him, *Isai. 53.6.* But it is accidental in

One may in Law, be a real and true satisfy who not requested, of free grace becomes surety and pays the ve-
ty for another, though the debtor neither re-
quest, nor Covenant with him to undertake, yea though he know no. thing of the sureties willingness to under-
take, and so Christ is our surety. did strike hands together : Christ put himself in our room, as an hostage, pledge and surety to die for us, and payed the first and second death, the summe that we was owing, according to a paction between the Lord and Christ, and we requested not Christ to be surety, only by beleeving, we thank him, and subscribe and say Amen to what is done. But in Law we payed, in regard the same

that is, in our stead and room.

nature that suffered was ours, and accepted as ours. but Armi-nians clearly refuse that Christ shall be an hostage and surety for us, because the offended party of his own furnished not one that died for him ; and so he strikes at the root of a reall sacrifice that is satisfactory to God, because one and the same cannot be both satisfied, and, *de suo*, of his own, furnish a satisfying surety. For so as his own, *Socinus* saith, one cannot be both a satisfier and a person satisfied, and this is no satisfaction at all, saith *Socinus*. (4.) Out beleeving cannot effectuate this, that Christ hath actually born the satisfactory punishment due to us. Arminius saith that Christ hath not, *alio ipso*, actually born that punishment : he must say he hath born it only potentially, *potentia*. Then its like when we beleeve, he bears that punishment compleatly, but he cannot die nor suffer, but once; only he must mean that Christ did actually bear our sins, but the satisfactory punishment is not accepted as suffered in our name. But our beleeving hindereh not, but he hath *in genere causa* How wee satisfied ju-
moralis & meritoria, really as a meriting cause deserved that God in stice in
justice cannot exact from us that same satisfactory punishment that Christ hath suffered for our sins, & its impossible that our faith can dying, so
adde any meritorious power to Christs death : & therefore though that we ca-
not in our selves and physically, yet really, morally, legally in Christ, not suffer eternally
deliverance from satisfactory punishment is due to us, we being in in hell, if
Christ legally, and life eternall is due to us, being in Christ ac-
cording to the rigour of justice, and *injuria irrogata Christo spon-
sori foret*, wrong should be done to Christ, and commutative ju-
stice, by which, *ex condigne*, by condignitie, he hath bought freedom
from hell, and right to heaven, to these he died for, if we should suffer eternall wrath, in our persons, whether we beleieve or be-
lieve not ; for beleeving is no part of the meriting cause of the sa-
tisfying ransom. Yea Christ by right of buying and selling, and we in Christ our surety may claime freedom from the second death,
and right to everlasting life, so as God should fail against commu-
tative justice against Christ, and break (with reverence and humble
submission to his Glorious Majesty be it spoken) Covenant to
Christ, and he should buy with a price more then enough, his seed,
and not get his wages, if these he died for, die the second death,
and come short of glory eternall, if the Lord say to Christ, I pro-
mise

Christ dies mise to thee a seed, that they shall be delivered from the second not so in death, and have life eternall, providing thou shalt give me a price our room abundantly sufficient to buy these, to wit, the life and blood of and stead, God-Man, and offer thy self a sacrifice upon the Crosse to offend as that we ded Justice. If C H R I S T shall do this and pay the ransome, cannot in justice die and Christ get no wages, no saved seed, but they perish through the second the want of faith only : either must faith be a part of the ransome, death ex- which none can say, or then the Lord shall not keep Covenant to cept there Christ. (5.) When Arminius saith that the Lord can, *nullo of Cove- jure, by no Law, nor Justice crave of us faith and conversion to nant be- God, if we have payed our debts, by rigour of justice exactly to tween the God in Christ who legally in our stead and place payed for us, he Lord and supposes plainly that God requires faith and obedience of us as a Christ.* part of recompence made to offended Justice. And Arminius

God de- saith, that Christ's righteousness is ours, not as performed by him, mands not but as imputed to us by faith: So that faith comes in as a collate- of us faith ral price payed for us or a part of the price, the very act and work and repen- tance, by of believing being counted ours, and our righteousness before necessity of God: Yea but God by no necessity of hurt Justice craves faith and divine ju- stice, for so

That C H R I S T died not for our good only, but in our stead is fall against proven, 1. Because Christ in some other more legall way died for us then for Angels, for he died for their good, that he might be (with all made the Head of Angels, Col.2.10. Phil.2.7,8,9,10,11. Rom. glory to 10.9,11. and he died for the good of the whole Creation that he him be it might make all things new, and restore the creatures to their perfe- spoken) If be should Action, which by the sin of man they had lost, Rom.8.20,21,22,23. exact thei Acts 3.21. Rev. 21.5. but he died not as suffering punishment from us. due to the Angels, and the work of Creation in their stead, as Christ died wounded for their transgressions, as he died for our transgressions, not for cur Isa.53. For the transgressions of us all, Elect and Reprobate as, good only, they say, exponing that all, Isa.53.6. of all and every one of man, but also in kind, were upon him.

2. We deny not, but there be considerable differences between Christ's dying, and the punishment of the Elect which they were to suffer. As,

1. Ours should have been eternall, because we could never

out-

out-satisfie. But the sufferings of Christ, because of the dignity There be of his person God-Man, were perfectly satisfactory in a short confide- rable diffe- rence be- tween Christ's pu- nishment and that punishment which was due to us eternally.

2. He could not suffer the same pain in number, that we should have suffered, for one and the same accident cannot be in different subjects, nor is the surety to pay the very same summe *numero*, that punishment and that debtor borrowed.

3. The Lord could not but have punished the Elect with hating & aversion of mind, they being intrinsically and inherently sinners. He punished Christ, who was not inherently, but only by imputation the sinner, with no hatred at all, but with anger and desire of shewing and exercising revenging justice, but still loving him dearly, as his only Son. But upon this account, Christ must stand in our room, and because of the five-fold oneness and Law-identity and samenesse. For,

1. Though physically the surety and the debtor be two different men, yet in Law they are one and the same person, and one and law identi- ty & same- ness between Christ the pursues in Law the surety, does also pursue the debtor.

2. The debt and summe is one, not two debts, nor two ransoms, nor two punishments, nor two lives to losse, but one.

3. It is one and the same solution and satisfaction, there can not whom be in Law justice, come another reckoning, dying, and payment ma- king after the surety hath payed.

4. There is one and the same acceptation upon the creditor his part, if he accept of satisfaction in the payment made by the surety, he cannot but legally accept of the debtor, and cannot pursue him in Law, but must look upon him as no debtor. To justifie him is another thing: It being a forinsecall transient declaration of his righteousness who believeth. I speak here of an acceptation of satisfaction to hurt justice revenging sin, not of an acceptation of obedience.

5. Its one and the same legall effect, Christ justified in the Spirit, and risen again, 1 Tim.3.16. and we in him as in the meritorious cause are legally justified. Hence he who suffered the same satisfactory punishment, for the same sinnes committed by us, which in Law we ought to have suffered eternally.

PART II.

2. He suffered and died for us in our stead and place, especially when the Creditor counts these sufferings, as if we had suffered: Scripture So Paul, 2 Cor.5.14. If one be dead for all, then were all dead. and argues And the Messiah was cut off and died not for himself, Dan. 9. 26. Scripture He did no violence, neither was guile found in his mouth, Isa. 53. prove that 9. Joh.8.46. Heb.7.26. But he was wounded for our transgressions, and bruised for our iniquities, the chastisement of our peace in our room and steads, was upon him, and with his stripes we are healed, Isa.53.5. 1 Pet. 2.2 3.24,25. He was delivered for our offences, The Lord laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was cut out of the land of the living, for the transgression of my people was he plagued, Isa.53.8. He bare on his body our sins on the tree.

3. He who being made under the Law, payed that Law-debt of satisfaction, which the Elect in their persons should have payed, and thereby freed them from the Law-debt of satisfaction : He sustained the person of the Elect in his suffeting. But Christ being made under the Law, payed that Law-debt of satisfaction, which the Elect in their persons should have payed. The proposition is out of doubt, none denies the Minor, but that we should have died eternally in our persons, if Christ had not died for us.

4. He who of purpose took on him our nature , the nature and seed of *Abraham*, and the legall condition of a surety to suffer for us, he stood in our person and room in suffering for us. But Christ took on him our nature, which is common to beleeving Jews , and to such also who are casten off of God, *Rom.9.3,4.* but not as common to them, but as the seed of *Abraham*. *Heb.2.16.*

If Christ was made under the curse, for it is written, cursed is every one who continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the Law that was to do them. 13. Christ hath redeemed us from the Law, being due in law made a curse for us — not to reconcile all and every one to him-
to us, that self, or to obtain a potentiall and far off power of salvation. But,
due to us ver. 14. That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles
right cōe through Iesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the
upon us spirit through faith. Not that we might beleeve or not beleeve,
then be if we would, that is not the blessing of Abraham, Act.11.18. Act.
fastered in 15.8,9. Act. 5.31. Ph. 1.29. and for his great love he died for
our place. 15.10. *m, the just for the unjust, to bring us to God.* 6 And

PART. II

our stead and place,

6. And it is thus confirmed, Christ in dying is not looked on as a man; Nor 2. simply as a single man dying; Nor 3. as a publick Martyr or witnessse that all, or none at all, if they so will, may get good of him, but by speciaall paction, if he shall lay down his life, and work his work, and suffer for our sins, that which we should have suffered, he shall receive his wages and see his seed.

7. As also none who dies as a surety or pays as a surety, but he bears the person of such as he pays for, who ever gives a ransom for another by way of payment, and whosoever as a Priest offers a sacrifice for another, he represents the person offended for whom he offers, so does the Advocate act the person of the Client, the intercessour his person for whom he interceeds.

8. The phrase to die for another as a ransomer signifies to die in the stead and person of another. *Demosthenes*, orat. *vñg. viii.*
in lieu of *Ktesiphon*. For *Archias*, for *Marcellus*, he *Oratio pro Archia Po-*
pleads, it is in Law as if *Archias*, as if *Marcellus*, or as *Cicero*, and *Demosthenes* do plead, were in *Oratio pro*
the parties for which *Cicero*, and *Demosthenes* do plead, were in *Oratio pro*
persons pleading themselves. Its true, *Isocrates* hath *vñs* for *in Marcello*.
bonum, for the favour and good of any: And (for) *vñs* notes *vñs*
also to do or die for the good and profit of others, *Col. I. 24.* *Ire.* *vñs*
pice in my sufferings for you, that I may fill up the remnant of the *vñs* *sufferings of Christ for his body.* But if it cannot be denied, but *Democrithe*,
for *Christ to die for his body* is somewhat more then for *Paul* or *vñs*
any Martyr to die for the body, then sure *Christ*s dying for his *Ephesians*
Church (as the more doth include the less) notes *Christ*s dying *vñs*
for the good of his *Church*, and somewhat more then for the *Corinthians* *vñs*
Churches profit: any may see *Stephanus* his *Thesaurus*.

Socrates, καὶ επ τῶν ἐχθρῶν οὐ σφῶν διέλεγον εἰμεῖνον Σωκρέου μερος.

τὸν οὐρανὸν ἀπέβησεν. Homer, Ilia 5. ἡ πεισένθη ἀπίλυφεσσα θάνατον. Three
for one slain. σὺν τούτῳ γίγνονται Γαστολέων ζεῦς. Rex. οὐδὲ ποιῶντας λαθεῖ. Il. 1.

his life for his friends. It is expedient that one die for the people,
Joh. 10. 11. Christ hath died for the ungodly, Rom. 5. in their stead.
For the just, ver. 7. *אָמַר* for noteth most frequently vice, loco,
sceleratu, in the place and stead : As also, סִבְעָה 2 Sam. 18. 33. Would God
Joh. 15. 13 I had died for thee, Absalom. The LXX. the Syriack version,
and the Chalde paraphrase, *in thy stead, I would I had died, and*
 thou remained alive. Gen. 22. 13. A sacrifice for Isaac, in stead of
Joh. 11. 50. Isaac, Gen. 44. 33. I shall remain pledge (saith Reuben) for
the lad, וְלֹא תִּנְצַחֵן in paund for the lad. Num. 3. 12. I have ta-
ken the Levites for all the first born, in stead of the first born. So
LXX. *אָמַר* *אֶתְנָסֵת* *אֶתְנָסֵת*.

Rom. 5.6. 2. When a ransom is given for another in point of justice, Mar.
v. 10. 10.45. Christ gives his life a ransom for many, Matth. 20. 28.
Gav. He came to give his (dear precious) life a ransom in stead of
v. 7. v. 8. many, 1 Tim. 2.6. ἀντίτελον, a counter ransom for all. Matth.
Simeon. 5.38. Eye for eye, tooth for tooth. Exod. 21. 24. 23. Thou shall
L X X. give life for life. Give that pecc of money for thee and me, Mat.
v. 11. v. 12. 2 Sam. 18. 17. Isa 43.4. I will give men for thee, and people for thy life.
Syria. versio 3. It is used thus, when a man is given in place of another, Pro.
Quis dabit 11.8. The righteous is delivered out of trouble, and the wicked co-
me mori meth in his stead. Job 34.24. and he makes others to stand in their
loco cuius place, Heb. as before, Pial.45.16. in stead of fathers shall be sons
Chalde. Pd. rab. Vcl. Job 16.4. Oh ! if your soul were in my souls stead.

lem quod 4. It is when the son comes in the room and stead of the father, mortuus or one kills another, which is a sad exchanging of one person for another, & tu manifistis nōther, and though the following King does not act in the person of his father, or by the nāe & authority of him who went before, yet there is one person changed, and another reigns in his place and room. 1Chron. mi. Ge. 22.

LXX. ἀντὶ τῆς ματθίας. Mar. 10. λυτρέν αὐτοῦ πολλάν. Mat. 10. 18. καὶ σὺν τῷ
τελευταῖον αὐτῷ λύτρεν αὐτὸις σωτήρα ὁ θεός αὐτῶν διδίκαιος καὶ ὁδοποιὸς τοῖς
LXX. ἀντὶ ὁφθαλμῶν. Ιησοῦς Ιησοῦς 23. διδίκαιος ποιῶν αὐτῷ LXX.
μυχήν ὄφει μυχήν. Dabir. Ιησοῦς Ιησοῦς LXX. ἀντι. Prov. 11. 8. LXX. ἀν-
τεῖ γε προσδιδοταισισεν. Job 24. 24 Heb. as before. Ps. 45. 16 LXX. ἀντὶ τῶν
πατέρων. Job 16. 4 LXX. ἀντὶ των ἐψιν Mat. 2. 22. δὲ τὴν Ηρακλεῖ τὸ Πλατεῖον ἀντ-

Abijah reigned in his stead, ver. 17. Joram reigned in his stead, LXX. ver. 17. Baasha slew him and reigned, ver. 17. 2 Kin. 15. 28. and Hazael reigned, ver. 17. 2 Kin. 15. 10. Shallum slew him and reigned in his stead, ver. 17. Menahem slew him and reigned, ver. 17. ver. 30. Hoshea smote him, and reigned, ver. 17. So Esth. 2. 4. Eccl. 4. 15. 2 Sam. 17. 25. Gen. 30. 2. 1 King. 16. 10. Zimri reigned, ver. 17. Ezek. 16. 32.

Joseph heard that Archelaus did reign in the room of Herod his father, Mat. 2.22. Tremellius, and Trostius both turn it, loco Herodis, Mat. 5.38. eye for eye: Its the same word חֵנָה Mat. 5.27. give it for me and thee. The same word, Luk. 11.11. If his son aske a fish, for a fish instead of a fish. Tremellius and Trostius, in place of a fish, loco pisces, he will not give him a serpent. Rom. 12.17. neither render evill for evill: So the same in both Languages is, 1 Thes. 5.15. ὅπαλε μὲν τὸ καρόντι αἴσθησθαι, and 1 Pet. 3.19. and 1 Cor. 11.16. Her hair is given her in stead of a vice pitch, covering. The same word in the Syriack is, 1 Pet. 3.18. The μὴ ζήσεις Χ- Lord Christ died, the just for the unjust: instead of the unjust, οὐ ζήσεις Christ is, Gal. 3.13. made a curse for us, in our stead. Matth. 20.28. Syriack, that he might give his life a redemption for many, Ro. 12.17. vice multorum. And the same is, Mar. 10.45. and Rom. 5. xanov eis: 6. in due time Christ died for the wicked, υπὲ αἰτῶν. Syriack, κακοῖς. נִירַת לְלֹא pro, vel vice improborum. 8. While we was sinners Christ died for us. וְיָדָה עַמּוֹת יָמָן in our place, 2 Cor. 5. αὐτὶς οὐδὲν. 15. If one died in place of all men, all were dead. Mark 14.24. Tremellius This is my blood of the New Testament which is shed חֵנָה for Trostius, many, loco multorum, Luk. 22.20. This cup is the New Testament αἴσθησθαι in my blood, which is shed in place of you. Joh. 10.11. The good sheep heard layes down his life for his sheep, in place of his sheep: חֵנָה The same word, Joh. 11.50. Know ye not that it is expedient that one man die in the place of the people, & that the whole people perish not. Mat. 2.22. Then the intrinsecall end of Christ's dying consisteth not with the perishing of these for whom he died: for he died that the whole וְיָמָן, vel vice omnis hominis. זְהַלְפִיכְוָן loco seu vice vestri. זְהַלְפִיכְוָן loco vestrum suarum. vice populi, Tim. 2.6. בְּלָאָנָשָׁן loco omnis hominis, 1 Pet. 1.11. pro nobis, vice nostris.

people should not perish. 1 Tim. 2. 6. Who gave himself a redemption for every man. Tit. 2. 14. Who gave his soul in stead of us. Heb. 2. 9. Who tasted death in the place of every man. 1 Pet.

(In stead) 2. 21. Christ died in stead of us, 1 Pet. 4. 1. Rom. 9. 3. I pray that or (or) a- I were separated from Christ in stead of my brethren. The same norther can- word so constantly used can hardly signifie, for the good and profit not note either of things or persons: As Luk. 11. 11. will the father give always, for the pro- the son a serpent instead of a fish, for the good and profit of a fish? fit and good 1 Thes. 5. 15. See that none of you render evill for evill, i.e. evil of another, but it must make non- for the good and profit of evill? a wild sense, and it is wilder in the case of persons, when it is said, the son reigns, οντι κατεστησεν αυτον, so often by the Seventy Translators, in stead of his father, that must be for the good and profit of the dead father. But nothing can be wilder, then to say Jehu killed Ahab's seed, and Zimri slew his Master Elah, Hosaia slew the King, and he reigned in his stead (as the Seventy say not once) that is, he reigned for the good and profit of the King whom he slew, and so slaying of Kings, and rooting out the race and posterity of Kings, shall be their good and profit.

Socinus
de Servio.
l. 2. c. 8.

Catech.

Racovitiens. Socinus, and the Catechism of Raccovia, saith, if to die for sinners be as much as to die in the place and stead of sinners, then to c. 8. pa. die for sinnes must be to die in the place and stead of sinnes. Ans. 18. 3. 18. 4. These and the like argue much the vanity of Socinus, if this be reason of tortured, as justly it may. Then as Christs dying for sinners, is for Socinians, the good, profit, living, believing, and confirming of the faith, that Christ establishing the comfort of sinners, then by the like Christs dying died not in the place for sins, must be to save sins from hell, to bring sins to God, that and room sins should not live to themselves, and to establish the faith, the of sinners, consolation of sins; whereas Christ died not for sins as for sinners, because he that he might save sins, but to dissolve the works of the devill, to died not in take away sin, 1 Job. 3. 9. Job. 1. 29. Christ dies one way for sins, the place and another way for sinners: The Physician one way cures the of sinnes disease that it may be rooted out, and be no more, and another and trans- way the diseased person, that he may live and be in health.

gressions;
retorted &
answered.

CHAP. IV.

Now we are in Christ dying, and crucified in him. 2. A twofold crucifying of us with Christ. 3. A discourse of mortification. 4. The actings of the mortified. 5. That we are to be mortified in our affections to every thing that is not God, &c.

[It is objected, that we was not born, nor had we any being, when Christ died, then we died not in Christ, nor could we rise, ascend to heaven, nor sit in heavenly places with him? Ans. But in Physical actions there is required the reall existence of the worker. Not so in legall actions, for as we had no being, who now beleieve, when Christ died, so our sins had no being; How We legal- then could our sins, that were not, deserve punishment? Yet I ly died & suffered for sin in Christ, altho many of us for Isai. 53. 5. and they cannot deny this, who teach that CHRIST died, were not then in the womb, when the father is absolved from treason is really and born, and in Law restored to his fathers inheritance: And the sucking child may be Crowned a King, and take possession of a Kingdom, and take the oath of loyalty of the subject in the person of another, though physically he neither do, nor know what is done, but sleep in the arms of the nurse. So we legally in CHRIST satisfied, our nature in Christ was crucified, and we, though not born, did satisfie and suffer satisfactory punishment in Christ. Heb. 1. 3. Having by himself purged our sins, he sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high. Heb. 9. 28. So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many. And in him we were (legally) crucified, and dead to the Law: As Gal. 2. 19. so as Christ once being dead and crucified, the head and members, whole Mystical Christ is dead to the Law, and Christ can die no more, for he cannot satisfie and pay the debt twice: And so are we in him dead to hell, to wrath, to Law-vengeance. Sathan raises a discussed plea against

CHRIST against the conscience, thou art a sinner, and under the curse of the Law. There is no answer to that, but by believeth I was with Christ, crucified, and am dead to the Law and died to death first and second. For Christ suffered mysticall, Christ legally satisfied and so did I in him (I speak not now of personall suffering with, or for Christ) and therefore that is a plea of Sathan forging, and taken away. And unjust summonds may be answered by non-compliance; and by the appeal of faith to Christ who having payed the debt sits Judge upon his own debts, which he himself payed, and therefore cannot suffer these for whom he died to suffer for his proper debt, which once he payed. The husband cannot endure the wife to be imprisoned for the debts which he made his own and fully satisfied.

Obj. 2. All men must die and return to dust, and so must sinners, as the Law requires, therefore Christ died not for thee?

Ans. Socinus, and Crellius object the same, which Sathan doth. For that death in the hew and colour of Law-wrath is holden before a beleever now and then underdoubting as a temptation. For we suffer not death such as Christ suffered, to wit, for vice sin, watered and affected with the curse of the Law; nor must we igitur vice sin, measure death from body or bulk of departing, but from the falso & loco mortis Christus and worst of death, which is the curse, and that being removed, est moriens, we never die, Job. 11. 26. Job. 5. 24. no more look upon death in perpetuo ei. the Law, for there it reigns, but in Christ, and in him death is dem. mortis dead and removed; the formall demeriting power is removed, generi expo. when the Law is satisfied: And a beleever being dead to the Law sibi sumus? is dead to the curse and to the worst of death, as Christ is dead to it Crellius, now.

Grotium, c. 9. par. 9.
How wee die, though Christ have died for us.

Obj. 3. But the conscience of the beleever, suppose there were no devill, challenges him of sin, and therefore that he is under a curse?

Ans. The conscience may be the factor and deputie of Sathan in that also, for it is the depositing of Christ from his Office of Mediator (with reverence to his holines) from his office of Mediator, when we embark having once believeth in him, in a new plea with the Law.

diator in satisfying and answering by his death all the demands of the Law, there is none but Christ, when the Law demands blood and the torments of the second death, can plead any thing on the contrair. Rom. 3. 19. We know that what things soever the Law speaks, it speaks to these that are under the Law: but the Law speaks not then to a beleever, for he is under grace, and so is not in tears of treating or parleying with the Law. Christ was crucified and the beleever is legally crucified with Christ, buried and risen again with Christ. 1. Then the Law is not his judge, it spake to Christ and condemned him and put him to death, when he was under the Law, and condemned you in him, now you say, Christ is not condemned and crucified, when ye enter in a new treatie with the Law to receive a new sentence from it, and thus ye undo what Christ hath perfectly done. 2. To hearken to conscience compounding and making another paction with the Law then Christ hath made, is to take the plea that Christ hath embarked in, off his hand; ye are to stand still and be silent, and beleeve that Christs dying, and your dying in him, is a closing of a satisfactory bargain with the Law. Christ condemned sin in the flesh, by taking on his flesh the curse due to us for sin, & for sin, that is, for sins cause, that it might be taken away, he sent his Son to die, Rom. 8. 3. and judge and condemn sin. 3. This is to mistate a question well debated and discussed by Christ; for he being the end and perfection of the Law, hath silenced, and satisfied the Law, and to what use can it serve to make a new plea and a bastard controversie with a satisfied party, or to hearken to conscience which craves in the name of mistaken Law well payed debts, and this is but Sathan abusing the Law, and feigning Letters of Caption in the name of the Law, to trouble the quieted conscience of a beleever. But its safest to say, I stand to what Christ hath done and suffered to fulfill the Law, and I believe I was crucified in him, judged, and condemned legally in Christ: and what can you seek more of an ill-doer? He is condemned, crucified, hanged on a tree, and so is justice quieted. Some raise the devill and a storm in the soul and cannot calm it again: It is not good to provoke, irritate, and waken a sleeping dogge. There is quietnesse and peace of believing what Christ hath done as well done, and comfortably to rest on his deed by faith. Hence a case

We died legally

We are not fire a wakening of conscience, and Sathan hath taught some to desire a Law-way which is not Gods way, as to commit some hainous guiltinesse, that they may fall in the hand of kening un-justice, and so be wakened, and Sathan gives them their fill of it. Hence, we had rather take a Law-way which is not Gods way, as under Gospel. Hence, we had rather take a Law-way which is not Gods way, as deadnesse. ly under deadnesse ; there may be a legall looking upon deadnesse, whereas it is a Gospel-sin that we should be humbled for, and in which we should not please our selves ; but no man freed from the Law and brought out of prison, should be willing or desirous to return to the dungeon again. We should let God guide us under a feaver, and not be our own Physicians, but be quiet at Christs part, if he be pleased to cure by contrais, and to quicken me by deadening me, or to make a soul humble by smiting with a spirit of pride : its good, we are to submit.

Obj. How could we be in Christ as in our Surety (for faith Arminius) we did not give nor appoint Christ to be our Cautioner or Surety ?

Ans. Its evill arguing of Arminius or Sathan, who would make the union either naturall or legall betwixt us and Christ. We sin-weak, far off, generall, and such as is betwixt Christ and Pagans, and all the world : But this reason is nought, for we sinners were not born and very nothing, when God made the first Adam our father and head in Law as in nature, nor had we any hand or action in substituting the first Adam in his place, and yet we sinned in making in Adam, and his sin is ours, by divine imputation. But can any deny but Christ on the Crosse did act the cause of many believers not born ? This is peculiar to this dispensation, that the creditor, not the debtor, appoint both the Law-head, and the Evangelist we gelick Surety. The Surety had from us a Cautionary, sponsorie, be legally and deputed nature, but no subscribed commission from us, it was crucified with Christ in the heart of the Creditor by grace efficacious to obtain our consent, and to make a sort of legall marriage assuming our nature before we either knew our husband, or gave consent to the marriage-Covenant. As the Advocat speaks in the person of the Client absent and sleeping, and when the Client hears and sees how his cause is promoted, he both assents unto, and renders thanks and praises our surety, to the Advocat : and so the absent and far off Client not knowing

any

*PART.II.**in Christ, when he died.*

any thing does act in the Advocat. And how many answers doth our Advocat in Heaven make for sinners on earth in his pleadings, of which we know not in particular any thing ? Nor doth Christ speak or plead for beleivers as a privat man, nor appear in his Name as it were, but in our person.

Neither is there a faining of a person here, or a borrowed and All the refained redemption, there be these five here. 1. A Redeemer quisits to a Christ. 2. Persons redeemed, sinners. 3. A Lord from whom real satisfaction are we are redeemed, the Lord Jehovah, not simply, as God, he is in Christs the partie from whom we are redeemed, but God as the offended Law-giver, who had us lyable to eternall punishment. 4. There was a price, the life and blood of God, which though not profitable to God (for that is extrinsecall to satisfaction real) yet an abundant compensation to justice for declarative glory taken from God which is the nature of real satisfaction. 5. There is here a God just, true, holy, unchangeable, to whom the price is payed. Nor does Christ sustain the person of the enemy Satan from whom we are redeemed, for he is but the *lifor* who then had no right to detain us, we are redeemed from evils of sin and punishment : Nor doth Christ in suffering sustain the person of God. Hence, from our being crucified with Christ crucified, something is to be said in a practicall way of our mortification ; for mortification flows originally from Christs death, we being crucified in him and with him, Gal.2.20.

Q. What is mortification ?

A. It is a deadning of the whole powers and inclinations of the foul in their bentnesse and operations, in order to things forbidden by the Law of God, or in things indifferent and commanded. Hence, not the affections only, but the understanding and mind must be deadned. And therefore this is no mortification untill sin originally be subdued in its damnation by Christs death, and in its dominion by the Spirit of Sanctification. A tree is not withered while standing on its root, bulk and branches are green and flourishing : Its much to know the withdrawing of sap and life from the root and the vital parts of old Adam. The ebbing of a River is not the drying up of it ; the new birth only is mortification.

Q. 2. Since mortification comes only from Christs death, what is the influence of Christs death herein ?

Ans.

The actings of

Morall Arguments. *Ansf.* The influence is reall, *ad modum cause physicae*, the mention comes from Christ's *Christ* dying doth merit by blood the Spirit, and infused grace, death as from a real which deadens the whole life of sin. *Evangelick Arguments* from a real swasory way, cannot more work mortification then touching can new principle pro-cured by the death born then: But in the infusing of the life of God, Christ applies of Christ. the reall principle of mortification. Now the redemption from a vain conversation, 1 Pet. 1.18. from the present evil world, Gal. 1.4. is as reall and proper a bargain, except we follow Socinus, as redemption from the wrath to come. 2. Christ's death hath an influence morall and swasorie to work mortification: As 1 Pet. 1.16. Be holy. 17. *Passe the time of your sojourning in fear. For ye are bought with his blood from your vain conversation.* And 1 Pet. 5.1,2. *Christ hath suffered in the flesh, therefore be mortified to your lusts, and serve them not, as the Gentiles do:* So Col. 3.1,5. But the action morall of the Gospel doth not work upon the naturall man: for like works upon the like; carnall reason upon a carnall spirit; and spirituall Arguments upon a renewed man; as an Argument from a painted feather works upon a child, more then they work. An Argument from an inheritance, which no doubt will work upon a man come to age, and yet neither the one nor the other works upon a renewed mind to remove him off Christ his rock. Hence it is, 3. that Acts of Omnipotency are used as Morall Arguments: also, *God works in you to will and to do, therefore work out your salvation.* And choosing, redeeming, calling, justifying, quickening, converting, are brought in as causes in Scripture, both reall and morall; but they work morally on reason, where there is an impression of faith and principle of life. The Gospel works on an unrenewed man to perswade him almost to be a Christian: When reason is green, Ye may perswade a youth to a course, and get his word, consent, adherence to a course by perswasion. It is un-stable.

PART.II.

a mortified child of God.

Quest. What are the actings of a mortified man?

Ansf. No actings. 2. Slow actings and lent. 3. Actings in-

263

Four sorts
of confide-
table act-
ings in one
mortified.

different. 4. Closing with contrair providences, reproaches, work not on mortification to fire the man. Psal. 35.12. *They speak mis-chievous things.* 13. *But I as a deaf man, heard not.* David feared to be the reproach of the foolish: Such a case, though from God, would raise a cry in a child of this world. Psal. 39. 9. *I was dumb, I opened not my mouth, because thou did it.* A mortified

man is dead to the voice of men-singers and women-singers, and musicall instruments of all sorts, Eccles. 2.8. and houses, gardens, vineyards, orchards, great possessions, cattell, treasures, gold, silver, are all as musick to a dead man: and repenting Solomon now tisified at

mortified, looks on them as a wise man upon experienced vanitie most mo-and vexation of spirit. Will he sing and dance at a shidow? Except a mad man, none will do that. 2. If any thing, without a

child of God, work upon him, they move him not much: Psal.

131.2. *Surely I have behaved and quieted my self, as a child*

that is weaned of his mother, my soul is even as a weaned child.

Acts 20.24. *None of these things move me:* I make not much reckoning of bands. Peter, 1 Pet. 4.12. *will have the saints not to think burning quick,* strange graces motions are quiet, slow, modest, there is not much fire in the spirit of a weaned child: A mor-

tified soul is as a sea that hath no winds, nor low ebings, nor high spring tides. Grace stirres leasurely and lentely toward all things, except to God: were there ten Paradices offered to it, it cryes not, a dying mans pulse beats weakly. Grace shouts at nothing, wonders at, and admires nothing; weeps slowly, laughs slowly, mortified sings weakly, eats slowly, drinks not wantonly, fealts, and yet min in or-trembles and fears, whether it be the outward or the inward man. David sayes it well, Ps. 62.2. *It only is my Rock — I shall not*

be created things, are greatly be moved. The beleever sings, and yet he is not wanton; indifferent, and weeps, and yet is not sad; dies, and yet lives; is fervent in not perem- the cause of God, and yet stayed and composed in spirit. 3. The pory, not actings of mortification are indifferent, not fixedly bent upon any so absolute thing but God, no not upon the Ark and spirituall comforts. Wee- hee inquire ping David, 2 Sam. 16.13. saith to Zadok, *carry back the Ark of their God into the City* (better I want my comfort, then the Ark be God taken)

The orderly actings of a

taken) if I shall find favour in the eyes of the Lord, he will bring me again and shew me both it and his habitation. 26. But if he say, I have no delight in thee, here am I, let him do to me as seemeth good unto him. O how sweet, when for God, Moses can lay down his personall satisfaction in a share of life eternall. What if he tramp upon my eternall Crown, I should lay it down at his feet; and is not this mortification? Should he hide his face, for eternity, from me, and I never see him in his manifestations, so his glory shine in my everlasting sad desertion; there is required an indifference to all created things without; no peremptory and absolute fixedneisse of the affection to any good, God excepted, is good: the contrair of this is an ingadging of the heart more then is right to any thing, give me children, or then I die, there should be a contented living without children, if God so will: love the creature, as if ye loved not, the Lord would have us hungering for the creature, and yet not eagerly desiring, and thirsting, and yet have a lent and well ordered appetite to drink: love the child, but let the heart cleave leasurely to the child. Plowing, and no heart-labouring, buying and selling, and no heart-ingadging to the bargain is best here. 1 Cor. 7. They that have wives should be as if they had none. 30. And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and they that buy, as though they possessed not. In the acting of affections toward the things of this life, as father, mother, husband, wife, children, houses, gain, beauty, honour, and new bought farme, there would be a godly distance of the heart from the thing ye do: Loving, and no loving; rejoicing, and no rejoicing; weeping, and no weeping; speaks most mortification. We cannot do here, except sinfully we over-doe, and the out-goings of the heart to the creature must be fierie, which is childish, whereas mortification is a gracious well composed grave temper of the aged in Christ. There is a fire-edge and a fervour or feaver of affections even to spirituall objects that are created at the first conversion, for mortification does not so soon begin as the new heart. As for God, love as one that loves, desire and desire, and when he hides himself, weep as if you weeped, so the weeping be terminated upon God, not upon his dispensations, to quarrell at, and censure

*Actings
terminated
on God may
be fierie.*

PART.II.

mortified child of God.

sure his wayes, but let the out-goings of the heart to God, and to Christ loved and longed for, be with fire, and full strength, Cant. 3.1,2,3,4. Cant. 2,5. Ps. 42,1,2,3. Ps. 84,1,2. Job. 20,13. Luk. 7,38. Rev. 1,17. 4. Its mortification to have a heart closing with all providences. Phil. 1,21. To me to live is Christ, and to die is gain: To live is good, to die is good, because the Lord so Mortifica-
wills, the Lords giving is to Job praising, and the Lords taking a-
tion sweet-
way is to Job praising. Phil. 4,12. I know both how to be abased, with all
and how to abound: every where, and in all things I am instru-
- provider-
- ed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer
need. If I die, it is good; if I live, it is good; if I be full, and
rich, it is good; if I be hungry, and poor, it is good; if David
be on the Throne, it is good, and he sings Psalms; if he be chased
barefooted, and ashes on his head, by the ascent of Mount Oli-
vet, it is good; he also praises and sings Psalms, 2 Sam. 15, 30.
Ps. 3,1,2,3. If he be at home in his houle, it is good, he praises,
Ps. 30. Ps. 101. If he be banished in the wildernesse, and chased
from the house of God, its good, he praises, Psal. 42. Psal. 63.
Psal. 84. Nothing falls wrong to a mortified soul. The people
cry Hosanna, Christ bids them rejoice, their King comes, Zech.
9,9. The wicked spits on his face, and plucks off the hair, that is
good, Isa. 50,6. I gave them face and back to be doing their will.
Heat to a gracious spirit is good, cold is good, joy is good, sorrow
is good, health is good, sicknesse is good: Ezekiah gets a victo-
ry, the Assyrians are slain, that is good. Isaiah prophecies that
all that are in his house, and his treasures shall be spoiled, and his
children carried captive, good is the word of the Lord: Is spoil and
captivity and the sword good? Yea Ezekiah closes with it, Isa.
39,8. Grace wonders at nothing, laughs at nothing, weeps at
nothing but faintly, rejoices at nothing wantonly; closes with
all, says Amen to all: for Christ was crucified for me, and I am
crucified in, and with him.

Q. 3. What are the species or sorts of mortifications, that we may know the true mortification?

A. 1. Its hard to give the division of them logically: There is
i. a naturall mortification, there is no fire in the affections of suc-
king infants to Crowns, Kingdomes, to treasures of Gold and Sil-
ver,

Mortification, that is not mortification, but virtually there is as much fire in
tion or a flint stone, though formally it be cold, as may burn twenty
deadnesse Cities. Concupiscence driven away from the aged, Eccles. 12.
meerly na- the hearth-stone is cold, and there is in it such a deadnesse to lusts,
turall, only because the not because of deadnesse of sin Originall, it lives, as the souls of
Tools are the old men live, but because the tools are broken, the animal and
broken & vitall spirits are weakened, the man loves the journey, but the
the horse horse is crooked and laid by: there is nothing of Christ's death
wearied, here.
hath no-
thing to do

2. There is a compelled mortification, sicknesse and withered arms
with the and legs, and strong fetters in the prison, poverty and want, care
death of for bread, and the armed man poverty that hath a sharp sword,
CHRIST necessity blunts the affections in their second acts, the man hath

2. Compelled no mind of whooring: And many drinke water, who through
mortifica- Christ crucifying, are not mortified to wine and strong drink. 1.
tion is not There is often in this, an ignorance of C H R I S T crucified, and
from Christ's no faith. 2. A reluctance to divine dispensation, and no gracious
death. submission to God, which is in one crucified to the world.

3. Philoso- seen by the light of nature to be very nothing and most unsatisfac-
phick and bookish story to the naturall man: but there is no supernaturall deadnesse
mortifica- in the heart wrought by the death of Christ. Archimedes, and
tion not other great spirits, sick of love to know the nature, motion, and
from Christ influence of the starres, and pained with a speculative disease of
executed. books, and to know much, do contemn and despise honour, gain,
pleasure, the three idols, of ambitious, of covetous and voluptuous
men; but there is no deadnesse, no blunting of the operations
of the soul toward the idol world, flowing from the beleaved in
crucified Lord of Glory, except you say that Plato, and Aristotle,
and such, were crucified with Christ: Learning works not morti-
fication.

4. There is a religious or a madly superstitious mortification.
Superstition, The Monks (saith Luther) dreamed that the world was cru-
cified unto them, and they unto the world, when they entered unto
their Monasteries, but by this means Christ is crucified, not the
world: Yet the world is delivered from crucifying, and is the
com. on more quickened by that opinion of trust they had in their own ha-
Gal. 6.14.

sicknesse and righteousness. Col. 2.23. In will-worship, in humili-
city, and neglecting of the body; not in any honour to the satis-
fying of the flesh. There is much vain and counterfeit mortifica-
tion; and Papists have as good warrant to sacrifice their lives to
God, and to offer a bloodie sacrifice unto God, under the New Te-
ment, as to shed their own blood in whipping and scourging,
and such bloody worship, bath the grouud of mortification that
Baals Priests had to lance themselves with knives to the effusion
of blood. And the same may be said of pilgrimages, of voluntary
poverty, in which (as Luther said) the world and all their lusts are
quickened.

5. Not unlike to this is the Pharisees mortification, in which they
are not crucified with C H R I S T, but alive and vigorously strong to
self-righteousnesse, to merits, to dead works.

6. There is a civill or morall mortification which hath diverse
branches. As 1. Seneca teacheth that nature is satisfied with wa-
ter for drink, and a turfe for a house, yet he was a covetous man
himself. And shall Horatius Cocles be a mortified man, because
he defended the Romans against the three Curiatii alone? Though
the bloody Gallant killed his own sister? And was the state morti-
fied who pardoned him that bloody fact, for his gallant service?
And Decius father and son who suffered so much for their Coun-
try, and loved it more then their own blood? And must Afric-
anus Major, and Cato, who suffered for the liberty of the pu-
blick, and Diogenes, who lived on herbs, be mortified men to the
world? But what avails it to be dead to the bulk of a bit body of
clay, and yet be alive to vain glory? 2. There is an occasionall
deadnesse rising from the sight of a father, a brother, a friend dead,
not from the death of Christ. An unbeliever dies with this word,
*I would not live for all the world, and we are like water spilt on
the ground.* The house is burnt, all spoiled, treasures, and the
stock, by land and sea-robbers, are plucked away; and riches have
wings. Hence, mortification transient for a time: but lusts fal-
len in a sown, are not dead, they rise again and live. 3. There is
another transient mortification, as D. Preston observes, when the
conscience is affrighted with Judgement, and some fire-slaught of D. Preston
restraining grace is up. 4. A good calm nature naturally either mortificati-
on, and stupid, or some clement and meek disposition, and free of on p.8. p.9.
Serm. i. of

Mortification to all

the fire that often follows the complexion, and hampered in with teachers, parents, company, education, learning, seems a mortified nature. But that is true mortification, that flows from faith in a humbled crucified Saviour, and it is not to be believe that Christ was mortified in our room and place, as Saltmarsh and Antinomians would say. Faith in Christ crucified is our mortification causatively, *in radice*, not formally.

Q. 4. To what things must we be crucified?

*Ans*w. Gal. 6.14. To all things created, to the world; we condemn and despise and hate the world, and the world does value us nothing.

1. There is a deadnesse to self which was in Christ our samplar of Mortification, Ro. 15. 1. *Let us not please our selves, but bear the infirmities of others.* 3. For even Christ pleased not himself. Self loved and adored, and mortification do not consist, too much life in apprehension, and admiring self, argues deadnesse of deadnesse and of mortification. Was not Christ a noble self? Yet for the Lord, and his ransomed ones, Christ got above noble excellency self. It is true, there is a renewed spirituall self, a new I in the Saints, *out of eyd*, Rom. 7. 17. Now it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwells in me. Gal. 2.20. It is not I that lives, but Christ lives in me. Mortification sets us above new syd renewed self, and regenerated and crucified I; it being a created excellency that we are not to adore.

2. Mortification requires a deadnesse to the will, as in Christ, *not my will, but thy will be done*: Much life in the will to created things, speaks little or no mortification. Christ excelled in this, Joh. 5. 30. *I seek not mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.* Of what court, and power, and life hath our will? And how soon the will is broken and dead, then is the man broken, dead and crucified with Christ. Much will, much life of sin: See Joh. 5. 40. *Ye Much will, will not come.* Luk. 19. 14. *We will not have this man to reign over us.* See Mark 6. 25. Mat. 1.19. Mark 15. 15. Act. 24. 27. all will is *Act. 25. 9. Luk. 10. 29. Rev. 22. 17.* All will, argues no mortification.

3. There is required deadnesse to our life, which was eminent-
Mortifica- ly in Christ, Mat. 20.28. 1 Tim. 2.6. Joh. 10.11. So Paul, Act. 14.10. life.

PART. II.

PART. II.

created things.

20.24. Ye speak of bonds and affliction, *But none of thase things move me, neither count I my life dear to my self, so that I may finish my course with joy.* To be mortified to life, is to hate the life, Luk. 14.26. for Christ. And Revel. 12. they overcame: mortification was their victory. v. 11. They overcame, *for they loved not their lives unto death:* Love of life is the life of sin when its not loved in God.

4. We must be dead to wisedome, and to all the gifts of the mind, for the wisedome of the world is foolrie, and God hath been fooled it, when it comes in competition with the wisedom of the Gospel, 1 Cor. 1.18,19. except we be dead to it, we cannot glory in the Lord. 27,28,29. Compared with v. 31.

2. There must be a deadnesse to learning, to books, and book-vanity, Eccles. 12. 12. *There is no end of making many books, and much study is a weariness of the flesh.* Eccles. 1.17. And I gave my heart to know wisedome, and to know madnesse and folly: I perceived that this also is a vexation of spirit. 18. For in much wisedom is much grief, and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow. Paul spake more with Tongues then they all, 1 Cor. 14. 18. but he was dead to that gift, he had rather have brought them nearer to Christ. 1 Cor. 4.10. We are fools, and hardly we can away with that; but we are fools for Christs sake, and for the interest of Christ and the Gospel, let us so be counted. Its nearnesse to Christ that maks us for him to be willing that what is most eminent in us be trampled upon, even shining wisedome, sciences, acts, eloquence, knowledge which puffeth up. Ye there is (3.) required a deadnesse of the knowledge of Gospel-mysteries, 1 Cor. 13.2. Paul was not rude in knowledge, but he was dead to that, and would not glory in that. And (4.) they are not crucified with Christ, not dead to opinions and sides, and to lead factions: I am of Paul, I am of Apollo, was no honour to Paul in his own esteem, 1 Cor. 1. What? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptizied in the name of Paul? Who excells in learning, who ad-

4. Mortification to wisedome there is a paper sicknes for may books

5. Mortification to learning & books.

Ptolemaeus
Philadelphi
us King of
Egypt gathered in
the Biblio
thec of
Alexandria

40000.
books.

ad luxuriam
non ad utilitatem, ait
Livius, and
they were
all burnt
Serenus
Sammonicus
left in Testa
ment to

Gordianus junior three score and two thousand books.

Petrarcha, Librorum larga copia est operosa sed delectabilis sarcina, & animi jucunda distractio
libri quoq; lam ad scientiam, quoq; lam ad insaniam deduxere, dum plus huius, quam dignunt: Ut stet
mabis, sicingenitis nauca sepius nocuit, quam fimes.

Mortification to all

mires not his own, the birth of his own mind? If it were but to hold there be ten new worlds in the Moon, and millions of worlds in the other side of this world? *My brethren, be not many masters.* Ah! we are not dead to the Chair, the Pulpit, every one loves to be counted and called *Rabbi*. The blessed Man Christ confesses that he knows neither the day nor the hour of the Son of Mans coming; yet there are who darre define the time of his coming, and the day. The mind is a proud and haughty thing, and we are not dead to it; the mind is not mortified to the mind, *1 Cor. 8. 1, 2.*

6. 5. We are not dead to *Mammon*: O who is like *Christ* and refuses to be a rich King, *Job. 6?* *Paul*, *2 Cor. 8. 9.* For ye know to riches the grace of our Lord *Jesus Christ*, that though he was rich, yet for your sake he became poor: He had a greater mind then that he could live to riches. *Paul*, *Acts 20. 33.* saith not I have sought neither silver nor gold, as the Godly judge, *Whose ox have I taken*, *1 Sam. 12. 3.* but I have coveted no mans silver or gold, or apparel: The life of lust to riches is in the trusting in it. *Job 31. 24.* If I have made gold my hope, or have said to the fine gold, thou art my confidence; Or, *25.* have rejoiced because my wealth was great. Its true, a beggar and an extream poor man that cannot have bread, is not troubled nor much tempted to seek a Kingdom and the millions and tunnes of gold that many rich ones have; but yet there are speculative desires and rolling waves and floods of wishes in the heart for these: and because hunger and want of bread is his doore enemy lying between him and the hope of great riches, the man is neither mortified to the love of bread nor to the millions of gold that the heart is sick after. And as there be diverse kinds and species of pests, and they are not all of one kind, yet all contrair to the blood and the heat of life: So are there sundry kinds of unmortified lusts about riches according to the sicknesse of the desire.

The simple desire of riches is not the sin. Obj. But is not the desire of food and raiment naturall, how then is it faulty?

Anf. The desire simply is naturall, and the Ants and the Conies do desire. But the desire 1. beyond measure. 2. With a sinfull doubting that they shall not have it, which reproacheth Omnipotency. 3. A desire wider then that of Ants and Conies, of that

*PART. II.**created things.*

that which is more nor sufficient, which would destroy and not feed but over-feed, is the faulty desire; as sicknesse desires drink more then sufficient, not for health, but to feed the disease, it is the desire of the disease rather then of the man diseased; and the forbidden desire is the sin.

Obj. 2. *May not a child of God desire more then enough, how then is he mortified?*

Ans. If the desire of more then enough come from the habit of covetousnesse, the man is not mortified to *Mammon*: all sinfull habits in the child of God are broken, and lessened, and chased into inclinations, or to the habit of Originall corruption slackened and by grace subdued; but in every child of God there is sin dwelling and the flesh, *Heb. 12. 1.* *Rom. 7. 17, 18.* *1 Job. 1. 8, 10.* *James 4. 5.* *Gal. 5. 17.* and the old man, which is put off by degrees, *Eph. 4. 24.* *Col. 3. 5. 10.* which is a habit of corruption not in full vigor, but and how sickening, decaying, and a dying daily, but even a grown child of God from this broken and sick habit may, temptation invading, and the Lord withdrawing his influence of grace, may break out into grosse acts of covetousnesse, adultery, murther, as is clear in *David*, *Lot*, *Peter*, *Asa*, and that saith that mortification is compleat in none. And there is too oft a sort of sinfull resurrection of the habit of sin and the flesh, so that *David* seems not to be *David*, but an adulterer, a murtherer: As we see it is the same River that swells over its banks, that it was before, but the overflowing is from without, from the clouds and from excessive rain, the river also hath a receptive capacity in it self to exceed its banks and channel: So hath a child of God from strong temptation from without, and broken corruption from within, a more then his own ordinary quantity and swelling over his channel; To teach us that our mortification is a work not of day, but of our whole life. Neither would the wise *Agur* pray against riches, *Prov. 30.* if temptations contrair to mortification did not follow them.

6. There is a necessity of deadnesse to honour, and to learn the noble and excellent arte of self-contempt, that the Spirit Deadnesse shall teach us that spirituall lesson to be willingly tramped on, and to honour the face spitted on, and the hair plucked off the cheeks, as our Blessed Lord went out and in the way met with spitting and shame,

Isa. 50. 6.

Mortification to all

Isai. 50.6. Mat. 26.67. Mat. 27.26. O great word ! Phil. 4.12. *I do now everyday, I have learned to be abased.* 1 Cor. 4.12. Being reviled we bless, being persecuted we suffer, being defamed we intreat, we are made as the filth of the world, and are as the off-scouring of all things unto this day. *Verba misera, the sweepings of the house.* Erasmus, the filth wiped off any thing. *Valla,* the filth that sticks to the shoes. The *Syriack* hath a word that noteth the dung of the belly. As the condemned man tumbled into the sea as a sacrifice to *Neptune* from a steep place was called *sis pro no bis peripsema.* So *Budens* thinks *Paul* alludes to heathen expiations. And when they reproached me, *David*, Psal. 38.13. But I was ^{an} a deaf man that heareth not, as a dumb man that opened not his mouth. The sense and discerning of heat and cold, of railings, and applause, would be dead : That is mortification, when the sense of hearing is dead to sounds, to musick, and to pleasant songs, these are not delightfull to a crucified or hanged man, when the life is out : Nor can all the sweet smells, flowers, roses, precious ointments, affect the smelling of a crucified man, nor all the fair and magnifick pallaces, meadows, gardens, rivers, mountains, hangings, painted pictures, work upon the sight or eyes of a crucified man. When the heart is ravished with honour, as the man who said the glory of *Themistocles* hindered him to sleep in the night, as little mortified as *Themistocles* who said sleep was taken from him, and he was raised out of his bed in the night by reason of the brave trophie and renown of the victory of *Miltiades*, that renowned man of *Athens*, who, as is known, with a 10000. Greeks, sibi *Milia* put to flight 60000. Persians. And *Alexander the Great*, his heart must have been waking at the sound of honour, who, when a messenger came running to him full of joy, said what should thou tell me, but that *Homer* is living again ? for he thirsted for nothing so much as honour : And how soft and very nothing is the spirit that is broken with riches or honour and pleasure ? And often men judge themselves mortified, because they are dead, it may be to riches, but alive to ambition and desire of honour. *Nebuchadnezzar* spared no charges for his gods, his pleasure, but he was alive to honour, Dan. 4.30. Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the Kingdom, by the might of my power

Plutarchus De projectu virtutum lib. 11.5. When the heart is ravished with honour, as the man who said the glory of *Themistocles* hindered him to sleep in the night, as little mortified as *Themistocles* who said sleep was taken from him, and he was raised out of his bed in the night by reason of the brave trophie and renown of the victory of *Miltiades*, that renowned man of *Athens*, who, as is known, with a 10000. Greeks, sibi *Milia* put to flight 60000. Persians. And *Alexander the Great*, his heart must have been waking at the sound of honour, who, when a messenger came running to him full of joy, said what should thou tell me, but that *Homer* is living again ? for he thirsted for nothing so much as honour : And how soft and very nothing is the spirit that is broken with riches or honour and pleasure ? And often men judge themselves mortified, because they are dead, it may be to riches, but alive to ambition and desire of honour. *Nebuchadnezzar* spared no charges for his gods, his pleasure, but he was alive to honour, Dan. 4.30. Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the Kingdom, by the might of my power

PART.II.

PART.II.

created things.

power, and the honour of my majesty ? Sathan doth often change Men may post-horses, and can seemingly deaden men to riches, when they ^{are} not mortified, and yet the heart is strongly vigorous to honour. When it was told *Zeno* that his ship, which he did trade withall, was broken : *Well done, Fortune,* (saith he) thou compells us to cause they go within our cloak ; he meant, To live upon the glory of vertue are dead and learning, when riches are spent and gone, was well done. But mortification, in the habite and root, is like the works of nature. The Sun equally enlightens the whole Air from the East to the West : Life comes in equally upon the whole *Embryo* and birth.

Saving mortification goes through the whole soul. Christ merited Plutarch. by his death deadnesse to honour as well as to riches ; Though in *de capienda ex hostibus militare, ill-* the actuall subduing of lusts D. Preston does well observe that there is not that labour required in subduing and mortifying all sins. bel. n. 35. For love of sin being the dominion, life and castle of sin, the more *pig. 241.* love to the heart-idol and to the right eye, the harder it is to be mortified. Some sins cleave to us as our hair and nails, as a custome *Z. no. cum nunciaretur navim ipsius quis negotia. batur, frac-* of some sinfull words, these are sooner mortified ; and yet if mortification be not in the heart, these take life again, as hairs and nails cutted and shaven grow again. The trees in Winter are not *tum : Bene dead : but there be master-devils and strongly rooted heart-dar- facis, inquit, fortuna, que nos intrasp. liolum com- pellis.*

7. We are not soon dead to injuries. Our blessed Coppie in this excels : *Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.* And Steven, A& 7. 60. *Lord lay not this sin to their charge,* Colos. 3. 13. *Forgiving one another.* Yea, but he wronged me, and injuries have a strong impulsion upon our spirits. I cannot forget it. If any man have a quarrell at any (saith he) let it fall even as Christ forgave you, so do ye also. Shall not Socrates witness against us, who answered his friends, willing him to accuse before the Judge a vain youth who did smite him with his foot, If an Asse lift his heels against me, shall I lift my heels against the Asse ? and the youth was so convinced that he hanged himself.

And he said nothing to a multitude of reproaches casten upon him in the Theater, but, *I am vexed with words in the Theater as in a*

Plutarch. in a great banquet. But naturall reason mortifies men to injuries, lib. de li- as cold water allayes and for a time softens the pain of the child beris edu- burnt finger, but the pain is the greater when the water is remo- candis, mo- ral. i. n. 15. ved; Or as want of money mortifies a man to drunkennesse, he 20. pag. 17. drinks not excessively, not because the heart will not dare to sin, *Axime A-* but because he cannot. The Word backed with influences from the finus calce death of Christ strongly mortifies to all sins. feriijset jus-

suri eratis, ut contra eum calcem impingerem? Omibus hoc ei exprobrantibus & calcitronem (a. adolescentem) appellatibus, suspensio vita se exxit. Nequaquam agre fero (inquit Socrates) nam in Theairo, veluti in magno convivio, verbis vexor.

9. 8. And the soul is not easily deadned to an office or place of a Deadnesse Prince, a Ruler, a Master, a Prophet, a Teacher. *Abishai, 2Sam. 16. 9. Why should this dead dog curse my lord the King? Let me go over, I pray thee, and take off his head.* David standeth not

much upon cursing the lord the King. He is so mortified to that stile as he forgets it, and, v. 10. he saith, *Let him curse, because the Lord hath said unto him, Curse David.* He saith not, the Lord hath bidden him curse the lord King David. Answers the high Priest so? Its a great word. Christ was the Messiah, that is a great office of King, Priest and Prophet: but he was willing to forget his office, by way of taking much on him, that he might fulfill his office by way of suffering. As Rulers and such as are in place must so far be dead to their office and place, as they must be willing to bear in their bosome the reproaches of all the mighty people, and to have their footsteps, even as Rulers, reproached, Psal. 89. v. 50, 51. Places and office too often have an influence and strong enough on our unmortified hearts. But there are some providential sufferings that befall Rulers, as Rulers, against which they should be hardned, knowing that the Lord suffers in them.

10. 9. It should be our work to be deadned to pleasure. I have Deadnesse married a wife, and therefore, *et d'ye que le day, I can not come to pleasure.* This is the most lively lust. There is a mortified eye, Job 31. 1. I have made a covenant with mine eye, why then should I look on a maid? Mortified eye looks call for mortified heart-looks. Its an old sin, Gen. 3. 6. And when the woman saw the tree that it was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, — She did eat

Mortifi-

Mortified Joseph saw sin engraven on pleasure, Gen. 39. 9. How then can I do this great wickednesse, and sin against God?

10. There must be a deadned heart to all the three, to the world, 11. *Job. 2. 15. Love not the world, nor the things of the world. If Deadnesse any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.* 16. *to all the For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eye, world.* and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world, Jam. 4. 4. There is some life between the friends of the world and the world, and James doubteth not to call that enmity with God, and the three great Idols of the world, gain, glory and pleasure, cannot make any happy, which Heathens, Plutarch, Cicero, Seneca saw: and therefore they pressed a contempt of the world. For strength is the glory of the Elephant or the Bull rather then of man, and plucked away by age and time; And beauty is no lesse uncertain, being made up of quantity and colour, and the Rose and the Lilly hath more of it then man. Riches have wings, and tender not the owner happy: Nobility is a borrowed good, and the Parents glory not ours: And honour is the opinion and esteem of men, and we yet cannot be dead to nothings, to shadows, to emptiness and to vanity: and fair buildings are well ordered dead bones.

11. They are not rightly mortified who are not deadned to creature-comforts, to father and mother, for they forsake, and the mother may forget the fruit of her own womb, but the Lord cannot forget his own, Psal. 27. 10. Isa. 49. 15. My friends, Job 19. 19. 2. All my friends, 3. All my inward (and dearest) friends, multitude,

4. Abhorre me. Forsaking is hard, but abhorring is most sad. Yea friends, even in the Cause of God Paul is put to this, 2 Tim. 4. 16. At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me. 2. So must the Church be dead to forraign forces, Hos. 14. 3. Absur shall not save us, we will not ride upon horses, and the people must be dead and sit still from help from Egypt, Isai. 30. 7. For the Egyptians shall help in vain, and to no purpose: therefore have I cryed concerning this, Your strength is to sit still. Sitting still is a ceasing from relying upon the Chariots and strength of Egypt, as being dead to them: For thus saith the Lord, the holy One of Israel, in returning and rest shall ye be saved, in quietnesse and in confidence

11.

12.

Mortifica-
tion to cre-
ature-com-
forts to

multitude,

abhor-
rion,

for-
saking,

dead-
ness,

de-
ad-

dead-
ness,

Mortification to all

confidence shall be your strength: and ye would not. And 4. his people must cease from man whose breath is in his nostrils: for wherein is he to be accounted of? *Isai.* 2. 22. and be dead to multitude: for, *Psal.* 33. 16. No King is saved by an host, a mighty man is not delivered by much strength. 17. An horse is a vain thing for safety. The help of the creature substitute in the room of God, having the lustre of blue and purple, or cloathed in scarlet, riding upon horses. Young men of desire, *Ezek.* 23. 23. doe easily dazzle our eyes, and when we are not renewed in the spirit of our mind, unsanctified hearts are weak in apprehending, and more weak in discerning of things. 5. So must there be a deadning of the husband to the wife, *Job.* 19. 17. to servants, *Job.* 15. 16. to sons, *2 Sam.* 16. v. 11. of the mother to the daughter, of the daughter in law to the mother intaw, *Mic.* 7. 6. to blood-friends.

12. All the godly and zealous Prophets said *Amen* to the word of the Lord, even Christ with sighs and tears, to the extrem desolation and ruine of *Jerusalem*, *Luk.* 19. 41. *Math.* 23. 37, 38. and *Jeremiah*, *Ezekiel*, *Isaiah*, *Micah*, *Hosea*, &c. to the plowing of Zion as a field, to the sword, captivity, to the laying waste of the land without inhabitants, *Isa.* 5. 9. *Isa.* 6. 10, 11, 12. *Jer.* 9. 1, 2, 3, 4. *Jer.* 16. 1, 2, 3. &c. *Mic.* 3. 12. *Hos.* 4. 3. *Hos.* 5. 6, 9, &c. There must be a deadning to our Country and Mother-Church, that the glory of justice may shine; yea to our fathers grave, our own bed, our own fireside.

13. The Lord will have *Isaiah* and the godly dead to Lawes and Government, to vision and prophecyng, when Judge and Prophet shall be taken away, *Isa.* 3. 2. and children shall be their Princess, and babes shall rule over them, v. 4. and the vineyard broken, and the hedge spoiled. And he will have the godly dead to King and Priest and Law, *2 Chron.* 15. 3. Now for a long season Israel had been without the true G O D, and without a teaching Priest, and without Law. *Hos.* 3. 4. *Hos.* 10. 3. And now shall they say, we have no King, because we feared not the Lord; what shall then a King do to us? Hence we must be mortified to every thing created which the Lord may take from us.

14. And upon this account there is required a deadning of our hearts to shipping and trading with diverse mighty Nations, as we

see

*PART. II.**created things.*

see in the case of *Tyre*, *Ezek.* 27. of *Babylon*, *Rev.* 18. 11, 12, 13. *Jer.* 51. so are we to be mortified to fair houses, *Isa.* 5. 8. stately cities, *Isa.* 14. to all the Cedars of Lebanon, that are high and lifted up: to all the Oaks of Bashan, to all the high mountains, to every high tower, to every fenced wall, to all the ships of Tarshish, to all the fenced cities: for the day of the Lord may be upon these, *Esai.* 2. to all fair Rivers, to Oxen, Horses, Chariots, fair acres of land, to Vineyards, to Olive trees, *Ezek.* 29. 4, 5. *Isa.* 50. 2. *Exo.* 7. 19. *Deut.* 28. 31, 40, 41, 51. to seed time and harvest, *Deut.* 28. 38. *Hag.* 1. 6. to corn, wine, oyl, to cattell, increase of kine and flocks of sheep, *Deut.* 28. 51, *Amos* 4. 9. to Wine-trees, to Fig-trees, to seasonable rains, grasse and fruitfull fields, *Joel* 1. 4, 5, 7, 10. *Jer.* 14. 3, 4, 5, 6. to peace, safe down-lying and safe rising, *Lev.* 26. 36. for in all the hand of the Lords anger is stretched out.

15. The Lord would have us dead to valiant and to mighty men, to Captains, *Isa.* 3. 1, 3, 4. Yea he makes true, *Ps.* 76. 5. A deadnes The stout-hearted are spoiled, they haue slept their sleep, and to Captains none of the men of might have found their hands. 6. At thy rebuke, O God of Jacob, both the chariot and the horse are cast into stouneſſe and valour in warre, a dead sleep: And therefore he will have us dead to courage in to birth. Who brings on faintnesse and terror upon the spirit, when the sound of a shaking leaf shall chase men, *Levit.* 26. 36. And wthen the Lord sends a trembling of heart, and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind, *Deut.* 38. 65?

16. We are called to be dead to honourable birth, blood, and noble Families, when Princes are filled with contempt, and these that were cloathed in scarlet, imbrace the dung-hill, *Lam.* 5. 12. *Isa.* 40. 23, 20.

17. And we must be dead to the vigorousnesse of youth, When we read *Eccl.* 12. 1, 2, 3, &c. And Barzillai his complaint, *2 Sam.* 19. 35. Can I taste what I eat? Can I hear any more the voice of singing men and singing women? And why but this should make us dead to sports, pastime, dicing, gaming, dancing, feasting, chambering, wantonnesse, to all plenty and fulnesse, when God can remove the appetite, and give bread, or remove bread, and give the appetite. So as the Lord leaves that doom on you,

Lev.

Mortification to all

Lev. 26.26. And when I have broken the staffe of bread, ten women shall bake your bread in one oven, and they shall deliver you your bread again by weight, and ye shall eat and not be satisfied. So is Solomon dead to laughter, Eccles.2.2. I said of laughter it is mad.

15.
A deadnes
to Ordin-
ances.

18. There is required a deadnesse to Ordinances, the Tabernacle is not God: David may be banished from it. The Temple is a Type of Christ, yet it is burnt with fire, and the Sanctuary profaned: And the Lord required a sort of lentenesse or leasurlinesse of motion of the heart toward these, and will have his people in their exile resting upon this, Ezek.11.16. Therefore say, thus saith the Lord God, although I have cast them far off from the heathen, and although I have scattered them among the countreys, yet will I be to them as a little Sanctuary in the countreys where they shall come. And they who remained still at Jerusalem reproached their poor captivated brethren, as hated of God, and gloried in themselves as Citizens and Inhabitants of Jerusalem, saying, v. 15. to the exiled brethren, Get you far from the Lord, unto us is this Land given in possession. They were not mortified in looking upon the Holy Land and City, but vainly gloried in it. And there-

There before there are two things in Ordinances. 1. God that fills the Ordinances. 2. The externall bulke of them. Mortification to God and his presence in Ordinances, is not that we here require, for the affections cannot be vigorous enough in following God. There may be a limiting and binding of God to means, to the Temple, Sanctuary, hearing, Seals, and a fleshly heat and liveliness to means, and bare and naked Ordinances; and in both these there is so far required a deadnesse, as there would be an holy submission to all these, when the Lord deprives us of Ordinances, and a retiring in to the fountain, to the Lord himself, that he may be all in all. So some cannot sleep except the Bible be under the head in the night: Some tye their faith and comfort so to one man, if he be not their Pastor nothing is right. But so much of CHRIST, or the substance of Gospel-promises must be neglected, as means and instruments. and Ordinances are Idolized: In a word, mortification calls for liveliness of affection to God in Christ, and a holy deadnesse to all things that are not God.

19. There

PART. II.

created things.

19. There is necessary here a deadnelle to works, for there be these defects in them. 1. They cannot save, Eph.2. (2.) They were not crucified for you, let them not have the place and Chair of Christ. 3. They cannot quiet the conscience, because they cannot justify. Paul Preached from Jerusalem to Illyricum, laboured more abundantly then they all, was unrebutable, was conscious to himself of nothing, yet was he as dead to these as to very nothing, 1 Cor.4.4. and to losse and dung, Phil.3.8. Hence must we be dead to the idol of Godliness, for its not God.

20. And dead to Godly men, in poynt of confidence, we must not know the Man Christ after the flesh, 2 Cor.5.16. nor any mere man, to cry man up as God, (every man is a liar) is contrair to Gospel-mortification.

21. It were good to pray much, and to be dead to prayer: One of the main causes why we cry and pray much and are not heard, Deadnesse Psal. 22.2. Psal. 69.1, 2, 3, is, because that which is proper to God the hearer of prayer, to wit, confidence and hope, we give to prayer which is not God. We pray to our own prayers and to our own wrestling often, rather then to God: and we beleeve praying does the businesse and works the charm, as if prayer were Omnipotency it self.

22. Nor are we dead to faith and hope, but we beleeve in faith and in beleeving, and we hope in our own hoping in God. But To faith was faith crucified for you? How many fetch peace, pardon and hope righteousesse, not from Christ, but from their act of beleeving? we pray to Hence a case, whether some may not fervently pray and beleeve our owne strongly, and yet be disappointed in the particular they pray for and beleieve they shall have? Certain it may be, especially when we are dead to Omnipotency and alive to praying and beleeving; and lay more weight on faith in God then on God, and on praying to God then on God himself. What Antioxomians say unjustly we give to works, to wit, our peace with God, they and many anduely give to faith, not to Christ.

23. We fail in being more alive to comforts then to God the comforter: the infant may at once both suck the breasts, and also Deadnesse sleep. And is one flower more to be smelled then the whole Garden? And shall feelings and raptures, and manifestations of God, and feeling

16.
Deadnesse
to prayer.

17.
To faith
and hope
we pray to
our owne
prayers.

18.
Deadnesse
to comfor-
ts and
feelings

Mortification to all

How farre we may be taken with

in his out-goings be courted and over-courted by us beyond the God of all comforts ? There is need that the heart be deadened to sense, for feeling and sense is fiery and idolatrous ; and were sense more mortified at the out-goings of faith, hope, love, it were good, for our faith should be the more lively and vigorous to lay hold on God. Q. Is it not lawfull to be taken and feelingly dead lighted with the influences of God ? Ans. Sure, feeling of it self is not faulty, the sieriness and excessive fervour of feeling is faulty, especially when terminated upon created actings of love, faith, joy, desire, hope, and not upon influences as coming from the free Grace of God, otherwise, we are but sick and pained of love of our own gracious actings, because they are our own ; and this is the sicknesse of selfishnesse. Ah ! a Godhead, a Godhead is not known.

19. Nor must we be, in a too lively way, taken with our own Deadnesse stock, nor trust in the habit of grace or the new heart : for grace to the habit & stock in us is a created rose that spreads fair and broad and smels well, but it is not God nor Christ, that we may learn not to trust in our created selves, *ἐπ' ἐαυτοῖς*, 2Cor. 1. 9. But why but we may trust in our renued selves now furnished with a stock and infused habits, the excellent blossoms and blooms of heaven ? Nay, *not in our selves* thus fitted, but in God who raises the dead : for its not possible both to trust in renewed self and in God : And Paul never meant that any that professeth CHRIST, is to lean upon sinfull self or upon lost and condemned self. And sure it is as selfy to be alive to infused habits, as to misken Christ, and think, being once a convert, we can fend our selves all the rest of the way to heaven without Christ, we need not Christ for a Guide or a Tutor, its within us may save us. And nothing can be more contrair to a living the noble and sure life of continuall dependencie by faith on the given Leader of the people, Jesus Christ, then to trust on habbits of grace, they are not Christ.

20. Ah ! who is that mortified as to be dead to the created sweetenesse of joy, and the right hand pleasures of God, and the formall beatitude of glory, and alive to the only pure objective happiness of glory ? And yet that is mortification, to love and be sick and thirsty for heaven, not for the pleasures of the Garden, and the Streets

PART. II.

created things.

Streets of Gold, and the Tree of Life, and the River of Water of life, but for only only God, the heaven of heavens : And therefore we cannot be alive to pure and the only abstracted and unmixed Godhead, except we be thus dead to heaven.

26. There is a deadnesse to the letter of the promise : The promise (saith M. Ambrose) is but the Casket, and Christ the Jewell in it, the promise is but the field, Christ is the Pearle promises bid in it. Christ removed, the promise is no promise, or but sap- M. Isaac Ambrose, esse signes.

27. We must also be dead to the rayes, out-shinings and mani- prima, me- festations of God to the soul here, and must transchange God in all dia, ultima. presence and all love-embracements, and no more : but be dead to c. 9. Sect. 2. the house of wine, to the lifted up banner of love, to love-kisses p. 231. of Christ, to the love-banquets, and to the felt lying, as the be- 22. loved, all the night between the breasts : for these nearest commun- Deadnesse. ions are not God himself. There is required a godly hardnesse for to the out- receiving sparkles of hell and some draughts of sore trying wrath, God, to shinings of the hell of his most wise and righteous frownings, and necessa- take a right ty absence and night of hiding himself.

28. And should not the Church be dead to providences of fair weather, and Court, or the blessing of a godly King David, E- 23. zekiah, and mortified to miraculous deliverances, dividing of the Deadnesse red sea, defeat of enemies, to confirmation of the truth by Mar- fair provi- tydome and sufferings to blood ? He who is dead to himself and dences of his body and ease, and hardned against contradictions of sinners, a- court, God, gainst torment of body, cold, imprisonment, sickness, death, miracles, and can in patience submit to all providences, is crucified with Christ, if God give or withdraw, he is dead to both.

28. All who are dead with Christ, are dead to all dead worship, 24. saplesse ceremonies, and formall worship, Col. 2. 20. Gal. 4. 9. and To saplesse wil-wor- are lively in the serving of God, and fervent in spirit, serving the ship. Lord : And rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh, Phil. 3. 3. Rom. 12.

CHAP. V.

Of the Covenant of Redemption between God and the Mediator Christ. 2. Christ is not a bare witness to confirm the Covenant, but the Author of the Covenant. 3. The Socinian way of works cannot quiet the conscience. 4. Christ is upon both sides of the Covenant. 5. Justice mediates not. 6. Reasons of the entrance of sin.

Isa. 49. 8. *I will preserve thee. (saith the Lord to Christ) and give thee for a Covenant of the people.*

Q. 1. How Hence, the 1. Question: How is Christ said to be given as a Covenant of the people?

Ans. As Isa. 49. 6. he saith, *I have given thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be my salvation unto the end of the earth: that is, as Act. 13. 46, 47. I have thee, O Christ, to be the Preached Light, and Guide of the Gentiles, and the Preached Saviour, declared and proclaimed by the Preaching of Paul, Barnabas, and the Apostles, and Pastors. So I will give thee for the Covenant; that is, the Preached surety and Mediator of the Covenant, Heb. 7. 22. Heb. 8. 6. When the first Covenant was broken, he makes with us an everlasting Covenant, even the sure mercies of David, Isa. 59. 3. 2. I will give thee as the only one who is the subject of the Gospel and Covenant of Grace: For to Preach Christ and to Preach the Gospel and New Covenant are all one. 3. I have given thee to be the confirmer of the promises, they are all yea, and Amen, in thee, 2 Cor. 1. 20. Gal. 3. 16. And 4. by thy death thou confirmes the Covenant, and seals it with thy blood, Heb. 9. 15, 16, 17, 22, 23, 24. Heb. 13. 20.*

Socinus de Servato. l. 2. c. 16. **Q. 2. But Socinus** denies that Christ is the purchaser or the obtainer by his blood (as it were) of the New Covenant, for he did not by his death procure or merit pardon to us, he is only the surety or Mediator of the Covenant. And Crellius and he say, the cause why the confirming of the Covenant is ascribed to the death of Christ, is because as by a slain beast and divided into two parts, Covenants of old were established, so by the death of Christ the Covenant of Grace was solemnly confirmed and sealed? **Ans.**

PART. II. or of Redemption.

Ans. Christ is so the Surety as Mediator, as he is also the Author of this Covenant, as God, Exod. 3. 6. It was he who said, Christ is not the co. I am the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. 1 Cor. 10. 9. Let us not tempt Christ, as some of them tempted him, and were destroyed of the Serpents. And this is he who led them, and brought them thor of the out of Egypt, Numb. 21. 6, 7. whom they tempted in the Wilderness, 5, 6, 7. And he ascribes to himself the Covenant, Heb. 8. 9. Not according to the Covenant that I made with their fathers, &c. And it is clear, that the pardon of sin promised in the Covenant, Jer. 31. Heb. 8. is never ascribed to the blood of Martyrs, but every where to Christs blood, Eph. 1. 7. Col. 1. 14. Rom. 3. 25. Rev. 1. 5. 1 Joh. 1. 8. Heb. 9. 14, 14, 15, 22. Heb. 10. 16, 17, 18.

2. That he is the Surety also of the Covenant, is expressly said, Heb. 7. 22. and the Mediator thereof, Heb. 8. Nor can it be said that the death of the Testator does properly give faith and authority to the Testament, for the authority and justice of the just or of the Testator, addeth unto, or diminisheth from the Testator how unjust will of the Testator, is. The death of the man is only a necessary cause of the Testament, the death of the man is only a necessary condition, by which the right of the Testator to these goods is transferred from him (who now being dead, needs them not) in to friends, to whom they are left in Legacie; and so death that the dying to bear witness to his own Gospel is only the secondary end of his death, in so far as seconarily remission of sins is made known to us after the principall end of his death, to wit, reconciliation, remission, pardon, redemption, and life is purchased to us by way more than of merit: And sure the truth of pardon and redemption is hugely confirmed and sealed by the whole company of the Martyrs, and made known to the sons of men, then by the death of one single man, even Maries Son: Nor does the Scripture ever commend Christ's love to us in sealing the Gospel with his blood as the only way to life, or making this the most strong Argument to move us to life, remission, &c. but this it does not as the death of a Testator and dying friend, but as such a so excellent, so satisfactory a death, which no Martyrs death can do.

There is a far other thing in Christs blood then power of sealing and witnessing the truth which is in the Martyrs blood.

*The Covenant of suretyship,**PART. II.*

to beleieve in God, and obey Christ, because Christ died for sinners, and rose again to make the Gospel true like, and worthy to be beleieved, as the Martyres do : but love shined in this, that in dying we have redemption and forgivenesse and life in his blood ; And since Godly and sound beleeving Martyrs died for this end, especially to glorifie God, and seal the truth, *Job. 21. 19. Rev. 2. 13. Mat. 10. 32. Luk. 12. 8. Mar. 8. 38. Luk. 9. 26. 2 Tim. 1. 12. Rev. 12. 11.* we must have most properly forgivenesse of sins in the blood of Steven, and Antipas, and the rest of the Martyres. And miracles do abundantly seal the truth of the Gospels. And so doth the holinesse of profession, *Job. 20. 32. Mar. 16. 20. Job. 5. 35, 36. Marth. 5. 16.* but never are we redeemed, justified, saved by Christs and the Apostles miracles and holy life, for any thing we read in Scripture ; but we have life by Christs blood as by a ransome, a price to buy us.

Q. Hence, 1. case : May not the conscience be quiet by the way

The Socie of Secinns, which lays aside a ransome given to Justice ?
nian way Ans. The experience of the Godly man wakened in conscience
queters not the wake- faith to this, when he is chaffened with pain in his bed, and the
ned con- multitude of his bones with strong pain, and the mans soul draws
science by near to the grave, and his life unto the destroyers, and the man
måsworks, stands in need of an Interpreter, one among a thousand to shew un-
but by the to man his righteousness, Job 33. 19, 20, 21, 22, 23. Then God is
blood of Christ ap- gracious to him, and saith, deliver him from going down to the
prehended pit, I have found him a ransome : He is not quiet while God say,
by faith, my Prophet, deliver him from hell and the pit, which he so much
this is done fears, for my offended Justice hath found a ransome in Christ, and
I am pacified with him. Yea, and the conscience must be purged
from dead works, by his blood who offered himself without spot to
God through the eternall Spirit, Heb. 9. 14. Yea, and there is no
remission of sins without shedding of blood, v. 22. Not of Bulls or
Goats, for the blood of beasts leaves still conscience of sin, Heb.
10. 1, 2. Then it must be the blood of Christ, v. 5. 10. who was cru-
cified and made a curse for us, Gal. 3. 10. such a curse as we must
have eternally, according to Divine Justice, suffered. Yea, if
works done by the exemplary grace of a Martyr, such a holy man
as Christ, who was never wounded for our transgressions, nor
bruised

or of Redemption.

bruised for our iniquities, then Christ died in vain, and there was
no ransome of blood given for our sins, only God of free-will made
an innocent man a curse, and would have him crucified neither for
his own sin, nor for ours ; well then, may good works without the
blood of sinner or surety, take away sin : And the conscience sprinkled
with good works may well calm a guilty conscience, yea, and
according to the measure of good works is the measure of assurance
of peace with God. Now we see the most tender David, Job,
Hezekiah, Heman, who walked most with God, have not al-
way most assurance of peace and righteousness with God, but most
dreadfull doubtings of conscience, according as by faith they ap-
prehend the ransome of full satisfaction, or were dazzled and darke-
ned in their apprehension ; yea sure, without the ransome of blood,
of free-will, all receive a dry and unbloody pardon by doing the
Commandements of Jesus Christ. The Socinian faith which
looks to an exemplary Martyr whom God of no justice, but in vain,
and for no cause, delivered to death, but of meer free pleasure,
whereas there might be, and is forgivenesse without shedding of
blood : contrair to Heb. 9. 22. Rom. 3. 24. 25, &c. even good works
done in imitation of Christ.

Q. 2. Another case is here : Is Christ on our side of the Cove-
rant, and on the Lords side ? This would seem no satisfying of ju-
on both the
Lords side
of the Co-
venant, &
upon our
side, & the
satisfacti
most real
Christ is ap-
part. Christ God were not the same offended God, who
out of soveraignty of free grace doth condescend to make a Cove-
nant of grace, and so is upon Gods side. 2. If Christ were not a
Person different from offended God, as the Godhead is common
to all the three, so in a voluntary and admirable dispensation and
Oeconomie the Kings Son, a Person different from the Father, ta-
keth upon him our nature ; And 3. having mans niture which of-
fended, and so being fit therein to satisfie wrath, and fit therein to
merit, to sanctifie the people with his own blood, might well be up-
on our side : and there's no scenick, no seeming, but a most reall
satisfaction here, in that there is a most full and reall compensation
made to offended justice, and our faith laying hold on this, the
conscience is quieted. As I sinned in the first Adam legally, so I
was satisfied in the second Adam. Obj. But justice saith, The same
person

*The Covenant of suretyship,**PART. II.*

person that sinned, the same must suffer and satisfie, and no other.

Ans. Justice saith so, but that part of justice by the graciousnesse

Justice as and mercifulnesse of the Just God is, and may be dispensed withall: Justice seeks So as Justice as Justice seeks payment, the Creditor as the Creditor satisfactio, seeks recompence and restitution: But by whom, Justice deter- but Sov- ralgnyt of free-grace, very person who offended, or by a fit surety in the person and place not justice, of the offender, as it determines not whether as much or far more determines be restored then was taken away, so there be a compact and voluntary agreement between the satisfier and the satisfied. Hence, how, and who shall pay.

Justice is and mercy interposeth. 2. Justice may seek payment from the not the me only offending partie, and from no other, from Adam and his posterity only; but Justice doth not indispensably, and by necessity attribute, of nature exact payment from the only offender and from no other. but free- grace.

3. The conscience of the beleever may with sweetnesse of admiration and peace rest upon satisfied justice, and adore interposing grace, and be quickened from looking unto, and loving interposing grace, to obey and take on the labour of Gospel love to run the wayes of his Commandements. 4. It is not an act of Law, nor of Justice, to give, or find out a satisfier, but an act of love, grace, and infinite wisedom.

Q. 3. A third case is, how can the beleever look upon life eternall as a gift, if it be sold at so condign a price as Christs blood?

Ans. It is not fit to speak of this mysterie, but with holy reverence, life eternall is bought to us, and we are said to be bought to Christ, with a price, 1 Cor.6.19. 1 Pet.1.18. 1 Tim.2.6. Matth.20.28. but of free grace to us, only grace, not glory, and such a grase as is lubrick, uncertain, we bought it not.

renders us indifferent, but much weaker to beleeve or not believe, that is, as *Socinians* say, to earne and win the wager of Glory by a new Gospel-working, which is our righteousness, and merit to glory: For sure Pagans are more sinfully weak in the Second Adam who died for them, as *Socinus* will, then mankind were in the first Adam. The Scripture saith that Christ gave himself for his Church, that he might present her a glorious Church, Eph.5.

*PART. II.**or of Redemption.*

25. 27. 1 Thes. 5.9. For God hath not appointed us for wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ. 10. Who died for us. 2 Tim.2.10. Therefore I endure all things for the elects sake, that they also may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternall glory. Jude 21. Looking for the mercy of the Lord Jesus Christ unto eternall life. Rev.5.9. Thou hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, &c. Act.20.28. Feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. Eph. 1.7. In whom we have redemption through his blood. 11. In whom also we have obtained an inheritance. We are not afraid to call eternall life a fruit of Christs death, that is, of the merit of his death: See Job.10.12,11.28. Job.3.14,15,16.

Q. 4. A fourth case: Many stumble, some in that God permitted sin to enter, which he might have hindered, knowing he should be thereby under a necessity either to torment men in hell, or torment on earth his most innocent Son Christ?

Ans. *Socinians*, *Arminians*, yea *Pagans*, and all enemies to Christian Religion, are burdened with the same seeming reason: for if God, or their gods may hinder wickednesse, and yet do not hinder it, they bring themselves, or the true God, that they must be necessitated to torment the sinners.

2. There be reasons unanswerable, why if we yeeld (and it is a shame to deny) that God is able to hinder sin to enter in the world, or that he is not infinitely wise, and so that he hath not most weigh- Deep rea- sons in the depth of son's in the world without the will of God, either the Lords dominion over unfathomable unsearch- sin must be none at all; or the creatures dominion of free-will must be dependent upon the dominion of grace and Sovereignty. 2. The dom, why out-goings of free-grace must eternally be hid, if sin had never been. As there had been no field for the expressions and blossoms of eternall flourishing revenging justice: As also, the creatures times are short, and could not reach the eminent degree of man- the world, setting the glory of free-grace and pardoning mercy, but the Lord thought fit timed at this. And 1. the relation of a Saviour and a sinner, of the Physician and the sick must be known; Now a Physician hath relation actuall to all sick, all the world over, but only to his own patients, his own sick ones, who by Covenant, feeling their danger,

None sick danger, have laid the weight of life and death, of righteousness, speaks no of salvation over upon that one only Saviour, and live, dyet, apostol, no Saviour, no Physi-
cian, do receive medicine and receipts from no other.

2. Infinite wisedom made choise, beside other infinite possible ways, of this only way of redeeming: and here glorious Sov-
eraignt shines, he wailles out, *Judas, Magus, Pharaob*, to be same men fire-wood and coal to the River of fire and brimstone, and made that now so many sinfull peeces of sick, brittle clay, overgilded with the ha-
bit of grace, of free righteousness, of glory, to be the eternall harpers and proclaimers of the glory of his grace; whereas he might
nally in the lake of have made these stones, and worms, for he created Angels and brimstone, worms, and all out of the *Mother Nothing*, by his good pleasure.
might have And it must be a wonder of unsearchable Sovereignty, that should been (if so not for eternity have been concealed, such a number of Angels It had pleased God) and men whom he set up in the heaven of heavens as heirs of glory, proclai-
mers of the grace and mercy, might have been, if so it had pleased him, lump of his glory of everlasting vengeance in the eternall lack, and all that are con-
demned, and suffer the vengeance of eternall fire, both devils and men are chips and peeces of beings hewen out of the same rock (if so we may speak) of that huge and vast *Nothing*, and might have been up before the Throne filling the Chairs and rooms of the now heirs of glory, thou beleever, might have been in the seat of *Iudas*, scorched in his furnace in hell, and *Iudas* might have bad thy Throne and thy Crown up with him eternally who sits on the Throne, and with the Lamb.

3. He might have kept all the sons of men, and all the Angels, God might in a sinlesse condition, to be courteours to proclaim the glory of have hol- Law-goodnesse, and of the never broken Covenant of Works, but then there should never have been such a thing known to the genera-
tion for rations to come, as that *Ark of glory*, that huge and boundlesse ever, but all fulnesse of the indwelling Godhead in the Man Christ. Sure then there had there been none sick, such a suffering Physician to heal us had should have never been, none lost would have said there is no Saviour, none dear been no in sin, would say, there is no need of such a Lord and Prince of life place for the Ark of *bj. Whose swelling Wounds we are healed*, Isa. 53. glory. J.C.

4. Nor was it fit that this should never be known to Angels and men, that the Lord honours so many redeemed sinners with a grant and licence to love so high, so precious a Redeemer, and as it were to marre and black his fairenesse and desirable excellency with our feeble and sinfully weak love, he being so far above our love or faith or praises.

5. The Gospel-wonders should not be an eternally sealed book The Gos-
to men and Angels, as, *Revel. 12. 1.* that wonder in heaven, *A pel-wōders woman cloathed with the Sun, and the Moon under her feet, and should net upon her head a crown of twelve Stars*, should be known. And eternallie what was shewed to John was to be shewn to the Churches, *Rev. 21. 10.* And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great City, the holy Hierusalem descending out of heaven from God. *11.* Having the glory of God. I mean here the wonders of grace, mercy, declared justice: as that the most High should empty Himself and the Godhead be united to clay: that there should be such a high Bridegroom, so low and sinfull a Spouse: that death should conquer death: that No-
things of clay should sing their debts, eternally cast down their crowns, being made of sinners glorified Kings, and not be ashamed to cast down their crowns before him that sits on the throne. Nor should the gifts and graces of God be hidden, *Rom. 8. 32.* He that spared not his own Son, — how should he not with him, *reparat*, give us all things, begrace to us all? How should he not make heaven and earth free grace to us, and all a masse of grace to us? *Eph. 1. 6.* *επειδην ειπεις*, He hath begraced us all over in Christ. *1 Tim. 1. 13.* But I obtained mercy, as dipped in a sea of mtry. *Luk. 1. 28.* Hail Virgine, *reparatōvōn*, filled with free grace. Let us forgive one another, *Col. 3. 13.* as Christ begraced pardon to us, *εχασταοvōvōn*. That we might know, *1 Cor. 2. 12.* *τὸ κερδίνα, the things that are freely given us.* And what a debt must that be, the forgiving of ten thousand talents, more then to forgive millions and tuns of gold?

Whether of the two be most excellent, Law-innocency and never sinning, or Gospel-repentance and rising again in Christ, be most excellent? It is answered, 1. Simply to us: It is better and morally more innocency, excellent never to fall, never to be sick, then to rise in Christ and or Gospel-
repentance.

There is a Covenant of suretyship, PART. II.
be healed by such a Physician. But sinning and falling being con-
sidered in relation to a more universal good, there is more excellen-
cy in Gospel-rising than in Law-standing: As, 1. There is more
feeling deeper sense in the woman which did wash Christ's feet with
her tears, and wipe them with the hair of her head, then in some
who never so fell. And Christ may hold forth something of this;
Luk. 15. 7. Likewise I say unto you (faith Christ) *there is more*
joy in heaven over one sinner that repented, more then over nine-
tyn and nine just persons that need no repentance. True it is our Sa-
viours scope is not to compare repentance and Law-innocency to-
gether, or to show that the Pharisees needed no repentance, as if
they were not in a lost condition: but to show what joy was in
heaven with the Lord the father of the forlorn son, and in the An-
gels, at the home coming of repenting sinners. And is not a Jewell
of ten thousand millions of more worth then a Diamond that is not
worth the eighth part of that summe? Adams innocence and ne-
ver sinning should have been by the common influences of Law-
love, and the same may be said of Angel-innocency. But Gospel-
repentance is the gift procured at a dearer rate, Christ was exalted
a Prince to give repentance, *Act. 5. 31.* Neither should there be
sense and such loving sense of free grace in the forlorn son, had he
never fled away from his father, and never been so received with a
welcome of grace which he beleeved, before he felt it.

CHAP. VI.

Q. II. Whether there be any such thing as a Covenant of
Suretyship or Redemption between JEHOVAH and the
Son of GOD? That there is such a Covenant, is proven by
II. Arguments.

*No doubt, Christ God-Man is in Covenant with God, being
a person designed from eternity, with his own consent; and
must be in Covenant with God, in time yeelding thereunto, and yet he stands not in that Covenant-
relation that we stand in: as we shall hear.*

1. Arg. What Argument does prove that there is a people in
Covenant with God, who call the Lord their God, as *Zech. 13. 9.*

Jer.

PART. II. between the Lord and the Son

Jer. 32. 38. Isai. 25. 9. the same shall prove Christ to be in Cova-
enant with God: As who can say, he is my God, he must be in Co. Covenant
with God. As *Jer. 31. 33.* I will be their God, and they of redemp-
tion b'caus shall be my people, *Ezek. 11. 20.* Ezek. 34. 24, 25, 30. Now this is Christ calls
clearly fud of Christ, *Psal. 89. 26.* He shall cry unto me, thou art the Lord
my Father, my God, and the Rock of my salvation: The Son, his God.
the only begotten of the Father faith, thou art my God, *Heb. 1. 5.*

And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son.
It is expounded of Christ, but was first spoken of Solomon, the
Type, *1 Sam. 7. 14.* My mercy, that is, my Covenant mercy to
the Son of David and his seed, shall stand sure as the dayes of
heaven, *Psal. 89. 28, 29, 34, 35, 36.* *1 Chron. 22. 10.* He shall build
a house for my Name, he shall be my Son, and I will be his father.
Then follows the Covenant-promise: And I will establish the
Throne of his Kingdom over Israel for ever; which is expounded,
Psal. 89. 28, 29, &c. of Christ, a Covenanted King as long as the
Sun and the Moon indures, 34, 35, 36. and cannot agree to David,
whole Kingdom is now gone. As also, Christ flees to this Cove-
nant in his extream suffering, my God, my God, why hast thou for-
saken me? *Psal. 22. 1.* *Mat. 27. 46.* So *Psal. 40.* it is Christ who
faith, v. 8. I delight to do thy will, O my God. And it is a Cove-
nant compellation, my God, and spoken by him, v. 6. Mine ears
thou hast opened, who removes all sacrifices, and offers himself a
sacrifice, *Heb. 10. 5.* A body thou hast prepared me. So also, Ps.
45. 7. Thou lovest righteousness and hatest wickednesse: There-
fore God, thy God (a Covenant word) hath anointed thee with
the oyl of gladnesse, above thy fellows. See glorified Christ glory-
ing in this, *Rev. 3. 12.* Him that overcometh will I make a pillar
in the house of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will
write upon him the Name of my God (which is) New Jerusa-
lem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: Four times
he calls him his God. The Lord speaks in his Type, *Psal. 118. 28.*
he who comes in the Name of the Lord, and is made the head of
the corner: Thou art my God, and I will praise thee, thou art
my God, I will exalt thee. Christ is a noble example in this tea-
ching us to ride at this anchor of hope; thou art my God by Cova-
enant. *Mic. 5. 4.* Christ shall feed in the Name of the Lord his
God, *Isa. 55. 4.*

2. Arg.

2. Arg. From the
Lords calling of his
Son to his
Office.

There is a Covenant of Suretyship, PART.II.

2. Arg. Is taken from the Lords way of calling of Christ to his Office of Mediator: So, he who is the Lords chosen, called, and sent servant, is either ingaged in the service, by necessity of nature, so that God cannot choose, but he must choose and call him, and he must, by the same necessity of nature, be chosen and called to that service, or he is the Lords chosen and called servant by free agreement and consent of the Lord who calls, and of the partie called, which is a Covenant between Master and Servant, the Lord and the sent Ambassador who is sent, the Lord, the Messenger who comes with such news. Now of Christ it is said, *Isai. 42.1.* Behold my servant whom I uphold, my chosen in whom my soul delights. And of meer grace and free-love, both God sent him, and he came, *Joh. 3.16.* *1 Tim. 1.15.* for by no necessity of nature was Christ sent to preach glad tidings to the meek, to bind up the broken-hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, *Isai. 61.1.* to say to the prisoners go forth, *Isai. 49.9.* For *Isai. 42.6.* I the Lord have called thee (faith he) in righteousness — 7. To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison-house. Nor can we say, that any thing, but the good will of the Lord did conclude or determine him to send: 1. To save men, not Angels, *Heb. 2.16.* 2. Some men, not others; *Joh. 15.13,14.* 3. So ill deserving men, as lost ones, *Luk. 19.10.* sinners, *1 Tim. 1.15.* *Rom. 5.6.8.* (3.) When the Lord speaks of the Covenant of grace, *Ezek. 37.23.* he addes a word of this Covenant, I will cleanse them, so shall they be my people, and I will be their God. 24. And David my servant (the son of David Christ, for David was dead) shall be King over them, and they all shall have one Shepherd. *Ezek. 34.23.* I will set up one Shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David, he shall feed them, and he shall be their Shepherd. 24. I the Lord will be their God. And *Zech. 13.7.* JEHOVAH ownes Christ as this Shepherd, as one of his hireing. *Mal. 3.1.* The Messenger of the Covenant, whom ye delight in, behold he shall come, saith the Lord of Hosts. Hence, this David is the Servant, Shepherd, and Messenger of the Lord, either by nature, which cannot be said, for the Man Christ is by Nature his servant, but

Christ

between the Lord and the Son of God.

Christ-Mediatour, God-Man, is not so his servant, or he is so by free consent, on the Lords part, who hires and sends him, and on Christs part, who graciously condescended to be hired, and undertook for us; which all along must be understood of no servile reward.

3. Arg. Christs voluntary yeelding to the work, proves this, if *Christ-God-Man* willing to empty himself and take on him our nature, did offer his service to God, saying, *Sacrifice and burnt-offering thou didst not desire, Psal. 40.6.* *Heb. 10.5.* a body thou hast prepared me. 7. Then said I, loe I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will. And if *Christ-God-Man* Covenant, did willingly lay down his life of his own goodnessse, and no man could take his life from him, against his will, *Joh. 10.11,18.* *Joh. 18.5.8.* *Joh. 14.31.* *Luk. 9.51.* Then is Christs free consent to be our surety and Redeemer, to seek and to save us, clear, *Matth. 20.28.* *Luk. 19.10.* And if it pleased the Lord to bruise him, *Isa. 53.10.* and of love to give him to the death for us, *Joh. 3.16.* *Rom. 8.3.32.* *Matth. 21.37.* then the Lords consent that he should be our Surety, Saviour, and Redeemer, is no lesse evident. Now a mutuall agreement between JEHOVAH and the Son for one and the same undertaking is a compact and Covenant, to have us saved.

4. Argument is, from the agreed upon giving and taking between the Father and the Son, where there is a free giving of some to the Son to be ransomed, and keepe, upon the Fathers part, and ^{The Fa-} ^{thers giving} a most free closing of the Son to own and answer for the given, and to Christ to lose none, but to raise them up at the last Day, There certainly is a Covenant gone before, as Jacobs reckoning with Laban, *Gen. 31.39.* That which was torn of beasts, I brought not unto thee: the Son his I bare the losse of it; of my hand didst thou require it, Whether cleving of stolen by day, or stolen by night. 40. (Thus) I was, in the day the proves the drought consumed me, and the frost by night; and my sleep departed from mine eyes. This evidently speaks a Covenant upon Labans part, delivering his flock to Jacob, as to a servant and shepherd, saying, I contract with thee, I deliver my flock to thee, answer for them: make an account to me of dead and living. And on Jacobs part, a taking burden Covenant-wayes to take care of them;

There is a Covenant of suretyship, PART.II.
them; and a Covenant-yielding, require thou at my hand old
and young, weak and strong of the flock: I bind myself to keep
them. So Christ hath delivered and given to him of the Father, so
many by head and name, Joh.17.2. As thou hast given him power
over all flesh, that he shoulde give eternall life to as many, & ~~as~~
~~old~~ as thou hast given him. 12. Those that thou gavest me, is
sewers *μη επιταξα*, I have kept, and none of them are lost. Joh.
6.37. All that the Father hath given me, shall come unto me, *εν*
ο διδων με επιταξα, and the comer to me, I will in no wise cast out.
39. And this is the Fathers (Covenant-) Will that sent me, that
every one which seeth the Son and believeth on him, may have
The persons everlasting life, and I will raise him up (by Covenant and Go-
being given spel-promise) at the last day. And what speaketh stronger con-
solation, then the Father gave me to the Son Christ to be saved,
ther to the Son speaks and the Son undertook for me, hath given a written band under
strong con- his hand to keep me? O what hippingesse! that I am not mine own
solation & keeper, but that Christ hath given it under his hand, and the Fa-
ther and the Son have Covenant-wise closed and stricken hands, the
one having given, and the other received me a-keeping. 2. My
soul enter thou not into their secrets who lay all peace, comfort,
assurance of salvation upon their own Socinian faith, that is, their
all to de- free-will, indifferent relying upon the Saviour Jesus and their own holiness,
pend upon watchfulness, obedience, love to God. Sure, the comfort, joy,
assurance subjective that they have in their conscience, can
be no stronger then the objective and fundamental certitude of
standing, persevering, overcoming, flowing from free-will, which is
woefully free and indifferent to persevere and stand, or not to per-
severe, not to stand, but to fall away. Its a stronger consolation
(and the strongest should be the Christians choise) that is founded
upon the Fathers giving, and the Sons receiving of sinners; and
the faith of salvation to me which relies and leans upon Christs un-
dertaking for me, that I shall not be lost, nor casten out, then upon
my undertaking for my self.

5. Arg. Christ's re-
ceiving of
the Seals of
the Old &
New Co-
venant, proves that
therelsuch
a covenant
sins of the flesh,
no

The fifth Argument is from Christs receiving the Seals, Who so
receives in his body the Seals of the Covenant of Grace, Circum-
cision, and Baptism, and yet needs no putting off of the body of the
covenant sins of the flesh, by Circumcision, and needs no forgiveness of sin,

PART.II. between the Lord and the Son of God.
no regeneration, no burying with Christ in Baptism, as Col. 2, 11,
12. Rom.6.3,4,5. and eats the Passeover, and needs not that the
Lamb of God take away his sins, as Job.1.29. since he is holy, and
without sin, he must be under the Covenant, and God must be
his God, in some other Covenant then sinners are, for these seals
are proper to a Covenanted people, strangers and Pagans might not
receive them, but these in Covenant only, Gen.17.7. Exod.12.48.
Matth.28.20. Col.2.11,12. and Christ must have received Seals
for other uses and ends, then sinners received them, to wit, to te-
stifie that he was the God of both Jews and Gentiles, and that he
was the undertaker for us, in a Covenant of suretyship for us, to
perfect a higher command then any mortall man was under, to wit,
to lay down his life for sinners, Job. 10. 18. and beside that, for
our cause he was made under the Law, to fulfill all righteousness,
and so was Circumcised, Luk. 2. 21. Baptized, Matth. 3.13, 16,
17. did eat the Passeover with the Disciples, Mat. 26.18 19,20.
Mar.14.18. Luk.22.13,14. he, in coming under that state in which
he must, because a man, fulfill the Law, and be under even Go-
spel-command: so far as they were futeable to his holy Nature, te-
stifieth in obeying all commands even of the Morall Law (and as
the Son of God he was under no such obligation) that he was un-
der a speciaill ingagement, and compact to God, for the work of
Redemption. And we are taught to feel what imbred delight and
sweetnesse of peace is in duties; when Christ Covenants with God
to come under the Law, and under the hardest of commands, to
lay down his life for sinners, because it was a Law and command by
Covenant, that hath most of obedience which hath most of a Law.

Q. Was Christ such an one, as needed seals to his speciaill Cov- Why Christ
eant with the Father?
received
the Seals.

Ans. He needed no seals at all to strengthen his faith of depen-
dency, for there was no sinfull weakness in his faith, yet he was
capable of growing, Luk.2.52: For the Law requires not the like
physicall intention and bendednesse of acts of obedience from the
young, as from the aged. 2. In that the receiving of the seals proves
Christ to be Surety of the Covenant of Grace, it makes good, that
he was under the other Covenant, and to perform the obedience
due to the speciaill command of dying, as to a command of Cov-

6. Arg.

There is a Covenant of suretyship,

6. Arg. 6. Argument, is from the Lords libertie: If God might in justice have prosecuted the Covenant of Works, and Adam and his posterity as pleased him, or not pleased him; and if Christ may refuse to undertake, or willingly agree, as pleased him, and Christ being God consubstantiall with the Father, might have stood to the Law-way of works: For who, or what could have hindered him to follow a course of justice against all men? then if both agreed to dispense with that Law-way to save man; Here is Covenant-consideration between JEHOVAH and the Son, of quieting Law, and pitching on a milde Gospel-way.

All the promises how they are made to Christ. 7. Argument, from the promises made to Christ: He to whom the promises are made, as to the seed, so as in him they are yea, and Amen, and he who is eminently the chief heir of the promises, as ingaged to make good the promises on the Lords part, to give forgiveness, Jer.31.34, Heb.8.12, perseverance, Jer.32.39,40. Isa.54.10. Isa.59.21. peace, Ezek.34.25. Lev.26.6. 11,12. yea, and a new heart, Jer.31.33. Ezek.11.19. Heb.8.10. life eternall, Job.10.28. and to make good the promises upon our part, by fulfilling the condition, and giving habituall grace, Jer. 31.33. Ezek.36.26. and actuall influences, Jer.31.34. to know the Lord, Jer.32.39,40. Ezek.36.27. to, and with him, God must strike a Covenant of suretyship, that he shall have the anointing in its fulnesse, above his fellows, without measure, to make good all these promises as Mediatour; for it is not simply grace and life that the Lord bestows upon his people, but grace out of the store-house of the Mediatour God-Man. Now this must be given to Christ by art, and lay down his life; then sure Christ is under a Covenant, promise, Gal.3.16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made, he faith not, and to seeds, as of many, but as of one, and to thy seed, which is Christ: He cannot well mean mystical Christ, that is, Christ and all his, for they are indeed many and numerous, as Isai.2.1,2. Isai.60.1,2,3,4,5,6. Psal.22.27. com-

pared with Rev.5.11. Rev.7.9. for the promises are made to Christ and Promises of him, as he, of whom such glorious promises God-Man eminently, not formally: For 2 Cor.1.20. All theretold, and may claim the thing promised, by faith, he

promise

PART.II. between the Lord and the Son of God.

promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen. For the promise is made to us for Christ, and through his grace, then the promise is made first to him, and more eminently, and to us for him: Propter quod unumquodque tale, id ipsum magis tale. 2. The promises are fulfilled and made good, not because we fulfill the condition, but for Christ, in whom, and by whose merit, both the grace promised, and the grace habituall and actuall to perform the condition, be it faith, repentance, humility, &c. is freely given to us. 3. Christ is he who makes the Covenant and all the promises, Act.7.31. Who said to Moses, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham — 34. I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them: And now come, I will send thee unto Egypt. And v. 35. Moses is made a Ruler and a deliverer by the hands of the Angel that appeared to him in the bush.

This is Christ, the Angel, 38. of the Covenant, Mal.3.1. Whom they tempted, 1 Cor.10.9. Of whom the Lord said, Exod.23.21. Beware of him, and obey his voice, and provoke him not: for he will not pardon your transgressions for my Name is upon him. And this Angel saith, I am the God of Abraham, the Omnipotent God that sees the afflictions of his people.

3. Hears their prayers. 4. Delivers them out of Egypt, Exod.20.1,2. and to the Author of the Covenant, and of all the promises. It is much for weak

believers that God stands ingaged in Christ by Covenant with him to give us to believe, and to believe to the end. Hath the Lord given himself Surety for the standing of a tottering believer? Is there not ground to believe that Christ shall make good his undertaking? Also, if all the promises be made to Christ who is the author of the Covenant, and upon condition that Christ do his ver.

8. As the former Argument is from the promise made unto Christ, and fulfilled to him, so this is from the Predictions, Prophecies and Promises of him, as he, of whom such glorious promises

hath

hath some word of promise for suiting these things : which is a Covenant, if he shall do what is required of him, and fulfill the Commandement, Job.1.c.18.

8. Arg.
From the
promises
concerning
Christ,

But such Prophecies and Promises there be of CHRIST,

Isa.22.22. *The key of the house of David will I lay upon his shoulder : so he shall open and none shall shut, and he shall shut and none shall open.* 23. *And I will fasten him as a nail in a sure place ; and he shall be for a glorious Throne to his fathers house.* 24. *And they shall hang upon him all the glory of his fathers house, the off-spring and the issue, all vessels of small quantity : from the vessels of cups, even to all the vessels of flagons.* Zech. 3.8. *For behold, I will bring forth my servant the BRANCH.* Zech. 6.12. *Speak unto Joshua, saying, Thus speaketh the Lord of Hosts, saying, Behold the man whose Name is the BRANCH, and he shall grow up out of his place, and he shall build the Temple of the Lord :* 13. *Even he shall build the Temple of the Lord, and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his Throne.* Mic. 5.4. *And he shall stand and feed in the strength of the Lord, in the Majesty of the Name of the Lord his God, and they shall abide : For now shall he be great unto the ends of the earth.* 5. *And this man shall be the peace, when the Assyrian shall come into our land.* So Psal.72.7. *In his dayes shall the righteous flourish, &c.* Hence, as Christ prayed in faith, Job.17.5. to be glorified with the glory he had with the Father before the world was, because he finished the work, though he was not yet crucified, but he had a mind fixed to suffer : So may Christ pray in faith to God, to bear right, and to bear the glory, and to feed in the strength of the Lord, and to have a conquered people, since he was to fulfill all the work that was laid upon him : And this supposes a Covenant.

9. Arg.
Christ. bid.

Hence, Arg. 9. from the suite he bids his Son, aske, which he will grant, Psal.2.8. *Aske of me and I will give thee the heathen shall prosper in hand : 11. He shall see of the travail of his soul, for thine inheritance, and the ends of the earth for thy possession, and be satisfied.* 12. *Therefore will I divide him (a portion) God & the people.* Psal.89.26. *He shall cry unto me, thou art my Father, my God with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong : that Lord pro- and the Rock of my salvation.* 27. *Also I will make him my firstborn, higher then the Kings of the earth.* 28. *My mercy will I keep his soul unto death, and he was numbered with the transgressours, he will bear for him for ever, &c.* If God say to us, call upon me in the day of trouble, and I will bear thee : This argues a Covenant that God

PART II. between the Lord and the Son of God. 299
shall hear, if we pray ; Then it sayes, if Christ the Mediatour shall pray, he shall be heard and prospered with successe in his work.

10. Argument from the work of Christ, and the wages, 10. Arg.
which a Covenant calls for : Christ complains, Isa. 49. 4. *Then the relation I said, I have laboured in vain, I have spent my strength for nothing, and in vain : there's work.* Shall he have nothing for his work ? He adds, *Yet surely my judgement is with the Lord, and the reward for his work : And he said, it is a light thing, that thou shouldest be my servant, to raise up the Tribes of Jacob, and to restore the preserved of Israel : I will also give thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayst be my salvation unto the end of the earth.*

Which words are cited true of Christ, by Luke, Act.13.47. when Christ is Preached to the Gentiles : And as one who laboured for us, so he craves his wages, though the Jews pay him unworthily.

Zech. 11.12. *Then I said, if ye think good, give (me) my price, and if not, forbear ; pay me, or pay me not : Yet the Lord payed him.* Phil. 2.7. *He made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, — and became obedient to the death, the death of the cross.* Here is work : followeth his wages, call it merit, or what else, its a reward and the end of his suffering, which Christ both desired and intended, as the fruit of his labours. v.9. *¶ ¶ ¶ Therefore God highly exalted him, and gave him a Name above every name.* Act. 5.21. *His hand God exalted with his right hand, to be a Prince and Saviour.*

Act.5.10. *When he shall make his soul an offering for sin (which was work hard enough) he shall see his seed (which was his souls*

desired wages) he shall prolong his days, the pleasure of the Lord

shall prosper in hand : 11. He shall see of the travail of his soul,

for thine inheritance, and the ends of the earth for thy possession, and be satisfied. 12. *Therefore will I divide him (a portion)*

God & the people. Psal.89.26. *He shall cry unto me, thou art my Father, my God with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong : that*

Lord pro- and the Rock of my salvation. 27. *Also I will make him my firstborn, higher then the Kings of the earth.* 28. *My mercy will I keep his soul unto death, and he was numbered with the transgressours,*

he will bear for him for ever, &c. If God say to us, call upon me in the day of

and bare the sins of many, and made intercession for the transgres-

sours. Hence, his care to finish the work of him that sent him,

and to do his will, Job.4.34. Job.17.4. Job.8.29. and as the Fa-

ther

The Covenant of suretyship, as P A R T . I I .
 ther loved, so he rewarded the obedience of his Son, not by necessity of nature, but by a voluntary compact, but he loves his obedience, Joh. 10. 17. Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. Joh. 15. 10. If ye keep my Commandments, ye shall abide in my love, even as I have kept my Fathers Commandments, and abide in his love. Nor can it be denied but a redeemed and saved people was much in the heart of Christ, and much in his desire and intention. Joh. 10. 10. I am come, that they may have life, and have it more abundantly. And if, to finish the work, especially of saving lost man, was his meat and drink, Joh. 4. 34. and he prayed for the ransomed ones, Joh. 17. to sanctifie them: 17. That they might be where he is, 24. There must be always in the heart of Christ a design of love, in that he made redeemed ones his end, his work, his souls satisfaction, Isa. 53. 11. And O how worthlesse were we! that the desire of God should be toward us: How far below the price of that love put on us? Was man a Crown and wager for God, for love in the God, for such a God to run for, to work for, and to win? Was there not a more fixed seat in Angels, then in clay, for so high a heart of Christ to ward low man, as his alme & end aime, as nothing could be the last and the least result of transcendent love, but great Immanuel, God with us? Reason might say, a lesse price may buy poor man, a lower design may compasse sinners. But love said no lesse could do it: and this love is not capable of a mistake, in buying, infinite love cannot erre in designes of free-love.

11. Arg. 11. Argument is from the Oath of God: Christ is made a High Priest, another way then other Priests: Heb. 7. 21. For those Oath to Priests were made without an oath: but this with an oath, by him Christ when he is made that said to him, the Lord hath sworn and will not repent, thou Priest, and art a Priest for ever, after the order of Melchizedec, Psal. 110. 4. King provs No man enters to an office by an oath to be faithfull, or to be forever in such an administration, but he enters also to the office by Covenant. And this oath is sworn by the Lord JEHOVAH, to Christ: The Lord hath sworn, — thou art a Priest. Its a more excellent Priesthood which is confirmed by an oath, then that of Aaron;

P A R T . I I . transacted from eternity.

Aaron, which is confirmed by no oath. Psal. 89. 35. Once have I sworn by my Holiness, that I will not lie unto David, (the Messiah my Anointed, the son of David.) 36. His seed shall endure for ever. Act. 2. 30. Therefore being a Prophet, and knowing that God with an oath had sworn to him, that of the fruit of his loins according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit upon his Throne. 31. He seeing this before spake of the Resurrection. Psal. 132. 11. The Lord hath sworn in truth unto David, he will not turn from it, of the fruit of thy body will I set upon thy Throne. 12. If thy children shall keep my Covenant, and my Testimony that I shall teach them, their children also shall sit upon thy Throne for evermore.

301

They shall sit so and so by Covenant blessed in Christ. And so the stability and certainty of the decree and oath is not to make the children of David secure, but watchfull in their duty: But this is not a condition without the which the Messiah should not reign, but without this he should not reign to their comfort and everlasting good. But otherwise the truth of the Lords Covenant-faithfulness depends not upon mens unbelief, Rom. 3. 3. and for the certainty of this promise and oath which made good Christ his reign which shall not cease, see 2 Sam. 7. 12. 1 King. 8. 25. 2 Chron. 6. 16. Luk. 1. 69. Gen. 21. 17, &c. Hence there is no Covenant made with Christ that the Covenant of Works made with Adam should stand for ever. 2. No oath in that Covenant. 3. No promise or oath to give perseverance, and the Spirit and influences of grace for that effect. And the oath of God, that Christ shall be King of my will to reign over the heart, to give repentance as a Prince, Acts 5. 31. is a sworn CHRIST and that God hath sworn him to be an eternall Priest who offered Priest and himself a sacrifice to deliver me from the present evill world, Gal. Intercess. 1. 4. to ransome me from my vain conversation, 1 Pet. 1. 18. to bring me to God, 1 Pet. 1. 18. that I should, being dead to sin, hour of temptation live to righteousness, 1 Pet. 2. 24. Eph. 5. 25, 26, 27. Heb. 13. 11, 12. Rev. 1. 5, 6. is somewhat more comfortable then the doctrine of Papists, Arminians, who say that any tempted Saint may be a justified Saint to day, and an Apostate, a limme of Satan and a child of perdition to morrow, as Judas was: as if Christ were not a sworn Advocate in the nick and hour of temptation to help, in

The Covenant of Suretyship, PART. II.
 in the act of winnowing : and had not made promises of actuall grace to actuall temptations when they come, *Luk. 22. 31.* *17oh. 2. 1. Math. 10. 19.* And if Christ be sworne a King, Advocate, an high Priest, to overcome the rockinesse and flinty and stony rebellion of will, providing that will shall first yeeld and not play the King against Christ : for any thing I see, the Covenant of grace is looser (the corruption of the Covenanter being ten times stronger to evill then the will of Adam was) then the Covenant of Works, and the Gospel an infinitely more plain path to a more fiery hell then the Law. And it speaks much of free grace, that the everlasting salvation of the Elect is in such a castle as the oath of the Omnipotent and infinitely faithfull Lord.

Lastly, the Argument is the more considerable that every Priesthood, even that of Levi, is imposed by Covenant, *Mal. 2. 5.* *My Covenant was with him of life and peace.*

CHAP. VII.

The Covenant of Redemption is explained in three eternall acts. 1. *Designation, decree or ordination, and delectation in the work.* 2. *Mercy and peace, truth and righteousness are agreed in this Covenant.* 3. *The designed sending of the Spirit cannot be a Covenant as this was.* 4. *The twelfth Argument.* 5. *The thoughts of eternall love.*

THE Covenant of Redemption is two wayes considered. 1. As transacted in time between Jehovah and Christ, in his actuall discharge of his office of King, Priest and Prophet. 2. As it is an eternall transaction and compact between Jehovah and the second Person the Son of God, who gave personall consent that he should be the Undertaker, and no other. And these three acts are considerable in the Persons in this latter consideration :

1. *Designation of one.*
2. *Decree and destination.*
3. *Delectation in the work.*

As to the first : There must have been a Person, either the Father

PART. II. *as transacted from eternity.*

ther, or the Son, or the Spirit. 1. By God, from eternity set apart, separated, and designed : And 2. This person must have given an actuall consent from eternity to the designation : Now the person designed was the Son only, this lot eternally (to speak so) fell upon only him who was, ~~everyparty~~, the Lamb fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, *1 Pet. 1. 20.* And because Christ-God equal with the Father, does not begin to consent and agree to the designation in time, nor can Christ-God will any thing in time, which he did not will, and consent unto, from eternity ; therefore he was present with the Father, and consented unto the designation, and closed the bargain from eternity : upon which account, Christ had the glory of a designed Saviour with the Father, before the world was, and prayes that he may, *God-Man,* be glorified, as touching the manifestation of that glory to Angels and men, with the glory that he had with the Father before the world was, *Joh. 17. 5.* and here is an eternally closed Covenant between JEHOVAH and the Son, with the consent of parties. The most sweet pro-
vidence of
God in de-
signing a
Physician
before we be sick,
and signing a
Physician
before the house fall,
and the healer and binder up before we be sick,

2. Christ is chosen and predestinate the head, the first born of the house, and of the many brethren, and sayes Amen to the choise, and we are chosen in him, as our head, and he was fore-ordained the Mediator, and the Lamb before the foundation of the world was laid, to be slain for our sin. Hence, 2. offended Justice by the breach of the Covenant of Works in all the three Persons pleads that man should die, and that pleading is most just, and the Law cannot be broken nor repealed. *The soul that sins must die,* *Ezech. 18.* the threatening, *Gen. 2. 17.* must be fulfilled. Armin. de
Sacerdotio
Chri. pag.
14, 15.

2. Mercy pleads (not having a Throne higher then justice, as Arminius saith) that so many chosen ones may find mercy, and peace calls for reconciliation to sinners.

3. Infinite wisedome also requires that justice and righteousness (under the name of mercy we comprehend free and rich grace) may meet, and peace and righteousness may kisse each other, *Psa.*

The Covenant of suretyship,

PART. II.

85. 11. Hence all these Attributes of glory must come forth, that a Throne may be set up and a Psalm may be sung, Rev. 5. 12. and the thousands of thousands may cry, *Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.* 13. *And every creature which is in heaven (saith John) and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, honour, and glory, and power be unto Him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.* Hence 1. there is no conflict between mercy and justice (as Arminius saith) nor any naturall desire in God to have all Angels and men saved, which is hindered by justice. Job sayeth truly, c. 23. v. 13. *He is of one (minde) and who can turn him? (from this end which he intends, as if he could not compasse it to another end) and what his soul desires (in saving or destroying) even that he doth.* 14. *For he performeth the thing that is decreed for me (and all creatures, and his decrees are most free, Eph. 1. 11.) and many such things, or many the like things are*

The bare declaration of the Attributes of God in the declaration of mercy, truth, &c. is sweetly made out by this Covenant. Therefore it pleased his most free, sovereign and absolute Counsell to bring forth to Angels and men, to heaven and earth, to sea and to all creatures, the glory of justice, truth, mercy, peace, grace, power, wisdom, Rev. 5. 13. and in Christ the decreed and appointed Mediator, the Lamb fore ordained, as Pe-
ter, 1 Pet. 1. 20. to be slain, and who agreed to the decree, and in an eternall compact took the burden upon him, to fulfill that of Psal. 85. 10. *Mercy and Truth are met together, Righteousnesse and Peace have kissed each other.* 11. *Truth shall spring out of the earth, and Righteousnesse shall look down from Heaven.* So that in this transaction, the Father and the Son and Spirit, let out to men for their salvation the glory of all these Attributes.

Obj. Did not the Holy Ghost also from eternity, say Amen, and agree to be sent by the Father and the Son, to lead the Saints in all truth, to sanctifie, to comfort them? And did not the Father and the Son from eternity decree to send the Spirit? And did not the Spirit also consent to the decree before the world was? And so shall there be also a Covenant between the Father and the Son sending the Spirit, Joh. 14. 26. Joh. 16. 13, 14, 15. and the Spirit who is sent?

Anf.

PART. II.

transacted from eternity.

Ans. Every mutuall agreement between the blessed Persons con- The intend-
cerning their actions without, cannot be called a Covenant, nor ing of the
need we contend about names. What if we say that there is some Spirit, and
Oeconomicall and dispensatory agreement of sending and being the Spirit
sent, yea even in the Works of Creation, Redemption and Sancti- consent to
fication, though two things stand in the way to hinder us to call come, is not
such an agreement with the name of a voluntary compact or Cove- a proper
nant? 1. It seems naturall and not voluntary, that there is such Covenant.
an admirable order of working as the Father creates by the Son, as
by his eternall wisedome, but yet a person, a suppositum, diffe-
rent from the Father, and by the Spirit, as his mighty power: a
third Person. 2. The Son is decreed with his own consent to be
the Person, to empty himself, to be in time cloathed with our na-
ture, and to put on the state and legall condition of a Covenant-
Obeyer of God to the death, the death of the croffe, and is made a
little lower then the Angels: and this may well be called a Cova-
enant-transaction, and a course of Covenant-obedience in the Medi-
ator; which condition the Holy Ghost comes not under. And
what should man say when the votes of the Three carries it, that
our iniquities should be laid on the Son, Isa. 53. 6. and the Son
should be sent, Gal. 4. 4. and he from eternity should step out,
Lord, send me, here am I to do thy will. Joh. 3. 13. *No man Gods love*
(no person) *is his, hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came in acting*
down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven. These for man in
votes of love fell not upon Angels, but upon man. And how should
it break my rockiness that Christ spake for me, undertook for me,
took all my diseases upon him, before I was, and before my dis-
ease had being? We reckon it great favour, Such a man pleaded
kindly and boldly for you in your absence, when you was not to
speak for your self. As its love to provide a rich inheritance for the
child not born, and to fight for the sleeping child that he may not
be killed: when we had neither being, action nor vote in Christ's
undertaking. Obj. Such as are chosen in Christ, such are
foreseen believers, when they are chosen. Ans. Justly learned
and pious M. Bayn denies that: for God choisid the noble royll
Family, Christ the Head, and all the Branches in Him. Love, e-
Psal. Bayn
Comm. on
Q. q
not

The Lord not because they are in Christ by faith and actually are foreseen before us, for that is all one. We were in Christ as the tree is in the seed, as all the Rose trees and the Vine trees are in the first Rose tree and the first Vine tree, created of God, virtually. For because God choosed us, therefore shall we be in Christ by faith: yea and he choosed us and ordained us to be in Christ by faith, when He gave us to the Son to be keepeyd by him.

The third considerable act here, is an act of delectation, and the place is observable, Prov. 8. 22. The Lord, *Chananī*, professed me: It's not *Bara*, created me: It's not *exiſta*, as the LXX, have it, but as *Aquila; exhalo*, in the beginning of his way: as

The mutu Cartwright, before he had created any thing: 23. I was set up all delights from everlasting. *Tremellius*, *inuncta fui*, I was anointed. *A- ben Ezra*, *Electa fui*, I was chosen. The vulgar Latine, I was Father and brained, from the beginning, or over the earth was. 24. When the Son, in there were no depths, I was brought forth: When there were no their fountains abounding with waters. 25. Before the mountains were thoughts settled: before the hills was I brought forth, &c. In all which the of the Co- authority of Christ (With Cartwright) is proven from his etern- venant-love to man. nity, antiquity, immortality, &c. and all this time He was with

God, as is fully, v. 30. cleaved: Then I was by him, as one brought

^{z Ambros. hexa. 1. 6. c.} up with him. Chald. Para. I was nourished up as a maid at his side. He will not want his Son out of his eye: I was daily his de- 16. Dous. facit Cœlum, light, rejoicing always before him. The Hebr. ☰ ☱ ☲ die, & non le- die, from day to day. Rabbi Solomon, annorum myriades, myri- go quid ads of years. The Farbet and the Son, from eternity, delighted requirit, se- one in another, and were solacing themselves in the works without nec lego quod cit terram, themselves: and the ratio formatio (as it were) that which took sic require- up the love, delight and thoughts of God, when as yet there was rū: fecit no world, no mountains, no depths, &c. is Christ as Redeemer solem, lunam delighting himself with the sons of men, 31. I was with him, — to stellas, rejoicing in the habitable part of his earth: Heb. Sporting ne nec ibi lego playing with the sons of men: both because of all his works, quod, requiri- everit; lego Ambrose saith, he most longed for man, and made heaven and re- quod fecit sted not; and made the earth and rested not, and made the Sunne hominem. & Moon and Stars, and rested not there: and made man, and then quod unce- quod unce- rested, as having found the choicest piece of work he so much ad- gitevrit, lighted

transacted from eternity

Bernard.
Serm. 64. in
Cant. Quid
violens
triumphare
Deo.

lighted in. So the Father and the Son were taken, and (as it were) love, saith Bernard, triumphed over God, and they solated their heart in that great design of love, and from eternity passed over that long and sweet age of myriads of ages, in the pleasant and delighting thoughts of that boundlesse and bottomlesse Ocean of love, to wit, God is to be made sick and to die a love for the sons of men. Love being above and (in a maner) not stronger then the grave only, and then death and hell, but some way (with reverencē to his holinesse) mightier then the moist High, and brought God down to sick clay: that you may (faith Ber- nard) see, if you take heed, joy faded, faith feareyd, salvation

^{Bernard.} suffering, life dying, strength weakyd: and this wisdome was hom: *Su-* hid up and kept secret since the World began, Rom. 16. 25. *Hidden per misus* misedome (in the heart of the Lord from eternity,) which God ordi- ^{et videois si} nated before the World unto our glory, 1 Corinth. 2: 7. the like Christo) tri- whereof the eye hath not seen, nor the ear heard, neither hath entered stari latissi- in to the heart of man, v. 9: to conceive: So that this mystery of am, povere the Covenant between Jehovah and the Son of God was (as it were fiduciam, sa- little enough to busie the thoughts of the infinite understanding of lutam pati, vitam mori, of the highest Lord, God Father; Son and Spirit: as containing fortitudinem the unsearchable riches of Christ, Eph. 3: 8. Say there were mil- infirmari. lions and ten thousand millions of Globes of new whole earths of all gold mines perfect and purest gold, yet should they not all come The near to the borders of this riches: and these all were in before strength of there was a Creation, and he lets out of this fulnesse to us, and to man, Gods love we are sinfully poor beside Christs gold mines, and dry beside the which we rivers of wine and milk: and dead, a thousand times, being under too little value. the flowings and outlettings of life and of such a life.

Hence, the 12. Argument: If Christ the Son was designed, and fore-ordained with the Father, the Spirit, and his own consent to be the person should pay the ransom of satisfaction, and to be satisfied in his soul with the getting and injoying of the bought, and well payed for and ransomed, yea the over-ransomed sons of men, who ravished love and heart of Father and Son, before the mountains were brought, Prov. 8. 22, 23, &c. 30, 31. forth, and when as yet there were no depths, then was that bargain of love closed and subscribed before witnesses from eternity. For could

The eternall Covenant transactions differences Part. II.
 the heat of Christ be cold and indifferent to undergoe suretyship
 for the sons of men : Who warmed and kindled a fire of Redee-
 mers love in his heart from everlasting ? Or was his consent to the
 Covenant, bat as late and young as since Adam fell; or Abraham
 was called to leave his countrey and his fathers houle, Gen. 12.
 No less everlasting? Ah! its an older love then so : A yesterdaies love,
 love could time mercy; a grace of the age with the world could not have sa-
 ved us. Nor were our Charters and Writtes of Gospel gracie, first
 drawn up in Paradice : Nay, but copies and doubles of them only
 were given to Adam in Paradice. The love of God is no younger
 then God, and was never younger to sinners ; and woe to us, if
 grace and mercy to redeemed ones should wax old and weaker
 through age, and at length die and turn in everlasting hatred. I
 desire to hold me fast by that, Jer. 31. 31. *I have loved thee with an everlasting love.* He meets (as Calvin well observes), with
 a blasphemous temptation of Sathan, that the people had in
 their mouth: *Ho, the Lord appeared to me of old;* but that is a
 love from one year to another, and its out of date now : the Co-
 venant-love to Abraham is dead and away, and the Lord is chan-
 ged? No, *I have loved thee,* not for a year, or a summer : The
 Covenant-love is older then thy poor short time-love. Obj. But
 I may leave off to love God ; and he loves me no longer then I love
 him ? Ans. Where is then everlasting love ? and because he loves
 us we shall not leave off to love him. Night and overclouding of
 the Sun, is not a perishing of the Sun out of the world ; his love
 quickens my fainting love.

CHAP. VII.

*The differences between the Covenant of Suretyship or Re-
 demption made with Christ, & the Covenant of Reconcilia-
 tion and of Grace made with sinners. 2. The conjunction of
 the Covenants. 3. How the promises are made to the Seed,
 that is, to Christ, the meaning of the place, Gal. 3.16.
 4. Christ acted and suffered alway as a publick head.*

IT is not the same Covenant that is made with Christ and that
 which is made with sinners. 1. They differ in the subject or the
 parties.

PART. II. between the Redeemers Covenant and ours.

309
 parties contracting. In this of suretyship, the Parties are Jehovah There are
 God as common to all the three on the one part : and on the other different
 the only Son of God the second Person undertaking the work of parties in
 Redemption. In the Covenant of Reconciliation the Parties are Covenant
 God the Father, Son, and Spirit, out of free love pittyng us of Redem-
 and lost sinners who had broken the Covenant of Works. 2. Hence Reconcili-
 the Covenant of Suretyship is the cause of the stability and firm-
 ness of the Covenant of Grace. Its true, Psal. 89. 19. *David is*
 meant, when he sayes, *I have laid help upon one that is mighty, Help layed*
I have exalted one chosen out of the people. 20. *I have found Da- upon Christ*
vid my servant. For the grace of election made David mighty in
 the Lord, and the Spirit of the Lord came upon him, and made
 him mighty to execute his office ; But this is so to be understood
 (faith Mollerius and others) of David, as it is also to be referred
 to Christ, upon whom the strength of our salvation is laid, and the
 strength laid Covenant-wayes upon Christ is the cause why David
 and his seed stand sure in an everlasting Covenant of reconciliation. The Co-
 Though the Covenants of Suretyship and of Reconciliation differ, venant of
 yet must they not be separated : but faith principally must be fixed on most to
 upon the most binding Covenant-relation between JEHOVAH and be eyed.
 the Son of God. Eye Christ always in the Covenant, else its but
 the sheath or scabbard of a Covenant, and a letter to us.

3. There be two parts (as it were) of the Covenant of Re-
 demption. 1. A Covenant of Designation. 2. Of actuall Re-
 demption. The former is eternall ; for the Lord does not begin in Two parts
 time to designe Covenant-wayes the Son to be the Consenter to be of the Co-
 our Surety : nor doth the Son in time begin to consent. But the venant of
 Covenant-consent in, 1. Designing of one Person the Son, and Redemptio-
 no other. Of 2. Decreeing and fore-ordinating of Him. 3. Of on, one be-
 mutuall delighting in love and in eternall thoughts in the sons of fore time,
 men to be redeemed, 1 Pet. 1. 20. Prov. 30. 31. Was closed and time, another in
 concluded in an ended bargain from everlasting : for the Parties
 were coexistent and together, and rejoicing in one another : and
 in the common work, to borrow that expression, thinking long till
 the day of marrying of God and man, and untill Immanuel's day
 should dawn, Job. 8. *Abraham rejoiced to see my day.* But as
 touching the other part, the Man Christ, untill he should be Man
 and

310 The differences between the Covenant of Redemption, PART. II.
and have a mans will, he could not in two wills close with the Covenant of actuall Redemption.

But the Covenant of Reconciliation is no more eternall, then the creation, which is eternall in the Decree of God, as are all things that fall out in time. But this Covenant was made in Paradise, though it was decreed from everlasting, yet it had no being as a Covenant, nor could have any, so long as the Covenant of Works did stand. But it came in due time, the physick and the Physician Christ the blessed seed, not few hours after Adam was fallen, came to his sick bed, or rather to his death bed: Blessed be his love who redeemed us in our low condition, for Adam had no faith to receive, nor hope of a Redeemer. Christ came, not sought for, not sent for, not so much as desired by us: For how could we desire a thing impossible, to our knowledge? Or could we thirst for a ransome of the blood of God unknown to Angels or Men? This is preveening grace indeed.

4. Differ. 4. They differ in the subject matter: The Covenant of Redemption is, 1. who shall be the surety of Redemption to undertake for man? *Here am I, saith the Son, thy fellow*, Zech. 13. 7. 2. What shall be his work? What shall be his wage? He shall play down his life, that shall be his work: he shall be obedient to his wages. Father to the death, even the death of the cross. And his wage shall be, *He shall see his seed, and God shall give him a name above every name*. But no such work is laid on us, nor such a reward to be expected by us in the Covenant of Reconciliation. Only here life and forgivenesse is promised to us upon condition of believeng in Christ: and fit it is that Christ be alone, none under such a commandement as He, Joh. 10. 18.

5. The Covenant of Redemption hath different commands, 2. Promises: 3. And conditions from the Covenant of Reconciliation. The Commands of the Covenant of Suretyship are of two sorts: 1. Some common. 2. Some proper and peculiar. The former is, that Christ fulfill all righteoussesse, Matth. 3. 15. The command of being under the Law, being made under the Law. Now the commands, 2. Promised upon the Son of God, so it is no command; but a voluntary des- 3. And conditions site: And so his consenting to take on our nature is a consenting to empty

PART. II. and the Covenant of Reconciliation.

empty himself, and to be under the Law, but no act of obedience, because he was under no commanding obligation to take on him our nature. But 2. as it is laid upon him now God-Man, and the Word made flesh, he is under a necessity to give perfect obedience, Heb. 10. 5. *Therefore coming into the world*: The Son being to enter into the world, and to take on our nature, speaketh to the Father, thus: *Sacrifice and offerings thou destest not, as expiations to take away sin, for they cannot expiate sin; A body thou hast framed to me*, which is the only one sacrifice of the true Lamb of God which taketh away sin, Joh. 1. 29. and that once for all: And there are not any sacrifices ever to come after, Heb. 9. 26, 28. And perfect obedience with all the heart was tendered by Christ from a holy nature, he being full of the Holy Ghost from his Mothers womb, so as none could accuse him of sin, Heb. 4. 15. Heb. 7. 26. Joh. 8. 46. and this obedience had influence in Christs obedience. To the 2. to wit, to that proper and peculiar command of suretyship that never man was under, but only Christ. Joh. 10. 18. *This Commandement (to lay down my life for sinners) received I (and I only) from my Father.* Psal. 40. 6. *Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire, mine ears thou hast opened,* — 8. *I delight to do thy will, O my God, yeathy Law is Within my heart.* Now thus we are not either wayes under the commands of the Covenant of Grace: Who in heaven and earth but Christ, could have come under baile and an act of suretyship for us?

2. There were promises of an higher nature made to Christ in his Covenant, then are made to us in our Covenant of reconciliation, to wit, *dominion from sea to sea: A Throne at the right hand of God is not made to Angels, Heb. 1. 8, 13. nor to us; nor is there remission and pardon promised to him, as to us, of this hereafter.*

3. The condition of justifying faith, laying hold on him who justifies the ungodly, is required of us in our Covenant: There is no such condition required of Christ in his Covenant of suretyship. The faith of Christ is the faith of dependency, but not as a condition of the Covenant of suretyship, but in another account.

2. But is it not hard, that Christ is in one Covenant, and believers in another? Its not hard, when the Lord Christs Covenant

CHRISTS
emptying
himself was
no act of
obedience,
free act be-
yond all ob-
ligation.

CHRIST's nant and our Covenant cannot be separated; and when Christ's room Covenant in the Covenant of Redemption is to be the designed person: Cove, helps our nanting, who undertakes for us, as the surety, witnesse, and An- & he hath gel or Messenger of the New Covenant, who makes sure our Writs, a place in makes valid and strong our Charters, Rights, and Evidences of our our Cov- Inheritance.

Q. How is it that the promises are made to Christ, as to the seed; How the promise is Gal. 3.16?

Ans. Our Divines, Beza, Piscator, Deodati, the English Christ, Gal. Divines in their Annotations, expound the Seed Christ, of Christ 3. v. 16. Mystical, as the Church the body, 1 Cor. 12. 12. is called Christ. Da. Parcus, Judicious Parens faith, that the Apostle expounds the Seed, not Comm. in collectivelie of many, and of all the posterity of Abraham, but in Gala. 3. 16. dividuallie of one Christ, from whom flowes to the beleivers, not Hoc semen so much the corporall blessing, as the spirituall, that is, righteous- (in quo be- nesse and eternall life: And so saith he, the Apostle saith, that this omnes Gen- nesse is given to Abraham and believers, not ter) Aposto by the Law, that is by no merit in Abraham, but by the promise, lus interpre- and by faith in Christ. Among Papists, Liranus; the promises tatus erat non collecti- are made to the seed, scilicet Christo, in quo impletæ sunt & non ve de mulia in alio, ideo dicitur semini in singulari numero, that is, to Christ vel omnibus in whom the promises are fulfilled, and in none other; therefore Abrahami it is said to the seed in the singular number. So also, Cajetan: posteris, sed Semini autem ejus, tanquam & cui promissa sunt, & in quo individuæ de uno Christo, adimplenda erant promissa. Corn. à lapide: If the word seed, à quo non semen, were taken collectively, the promise could not stand; for tam corporæ its sure all the Jews were not blessed in the seed: Yea many of in quam sibi them (faith Calvin) were a curse. Estius faith, the word seed, ritually be- is a collective name, and hotteth many; and hath not in the He- redictio, hoc est, justitia brew the Plurall Number. Augustine (faith he) will have all Christians following the faith of Abraham to be here noted, for terra in fi- they are that seed to which the promise is made, whereas Christ is deles diffiat. properly he in whom the promise is to be fulfilled, and in whom all

The pro- are one by faith, and all are reduced to the Singular Number: mise, Gal. There is no reason to expound the Seed Christ, of Mystical 3.16. is not made to Christ and of his Seed. 1. Because the Seed is he in whom the Christ-my- Nations are blessed, both Ieuis and Gentiles, v. 14. And the nical.

Seed

Seed made a curse for us, v. 13. But this seed is only Christ, not mysticall Christ, head and members: for neither are we blessed in Christ mysticall, nor was Christ mysticall the Church made a curse for us: Nor did the Church mysticall pay a price of satisfaction to offended justice for us, v. 19. The word seed seems to have the same signification, v. 16. and v. 19. Consider then, v. 19. Wherefore then serveth the Law? It was added because of transgressions, untill the seed come, to whom the promise was made. Now the seed coming is Christ coming in the flesh to take on our nature. If the seed were taken for Christ mysticall, the Apostle must say, The Law was added because of transgression, untill the seed should come: that is, untill Christ mysticall, his Church should come in the flesh, which is non-sense. 3. Whether the promise be of Ca- naan, and of life eternall thereby holden forth; Or of Christ to come of Abraham, in whom all flesh shall be blessed; or of righteousnesse by faith, not by the works of the Law; Or of all these coming under the name of the inheritance, the promise is made to many in number like the Stars: For the Lamb and the hundredth fourty and four thousands standing with him on Mount Zion, and the thousands of thousands which none can number, Rev. 7.9. are many, and may well be called seeds; And though they be all one in Christ, yet the Apostle must speak too ambiguously, when he said, The promise of righteousness and life is made to the seed, that is, to Christ head and members: for the promise is so made to Christ, especially of life, pardon, righteousness, as the blessings promised are fulfilled & given through, & for Christ as the only meritorious cause, as all grant: which way the promises are in no sense made to believers, who cannot come in as joint satisfiers with Christ, & as joint meritorious procurers with Christ of the blessings promised to us. 4. The promise is made to the seed coming in the flesh, and assuming our nature in a personal union, v. 19. as is, by confession of all, expounded. Now this restricts the promise to God incarnate, and must exclude the members. 5. It runs most connaturally to the Text, and comfortably to us, if neither Christ, Gal. 3. 16. be understood as a private man, the Sonne of Mary: nor yet is Christ mysticall, as 1 Cor. 12. 12. But as Christ, a publike person, and Head and Lord-Mediator. 1. He represents all the

R r

Elect,

314 How the Promise, Gal. 3. 16. is made to the seed, i.e. Christ. P. II.
The Seed, Elect: and so the word seed is taken individually. He takes all the Christ, Gal. promises and the weight of the whole Covenant of Grace and Co-
3.16. is nei- venant promises off the Lords hand as the second Adam repre-
senter meant of Christ as senting all the Family and House: Behold I and the children that God
a private hath given me. As the weight of the Covenant of Works, and
person, nor of the promises thereof, was upon the first Adam, as he should
of CHRIST manage these promises, so should it fare, ill or well, with all his
Mystical: seed. And so as Christ having the Gospel and Covenant-promi-
but of Christ as a ses committed to him, so should it be with us: and this Tutor can-
publick not miscarry, and so shall it be well with the Pupils and Minors.
person and Head, the live also: ye shall live by promise, the free promise of life eter-
second A. nall: its no small vantage.

2. The promises are laid down in Christ as in a publike Lord-
Keeper. Christ is that excellent Ark in which are the Tables of
the Covenant, and the Book of the Law and Covenant, Deut. 31.
26. 1 King. 8.9. and as the first subject of the promises he keepeth
them. Yea and Christ is the fountain and originall cause of all the
promises: for he merited by his blood, remission, righteousness,
perseverance, eternall life, all grace, which the Lord makes ours
by free promise. 2. In Christ they are made and published to us:
so they are dear mercies to Christ: they stand Christ at a dear rate:
they are ours freely for no price or hire. 3. Hence nothing hin-
ders, but the promises as made to Christ the first Heir and Son of
promise: for Christ is the chief and principall thing promised, and
other things that are freely given us (by promise) are given to us,
with Christ, or after that he hath given us Christ: and
assignes, and younger brethren come in under the first Heir. Our
blood-relation to the Family stands by Christ, interest to promises
comes all this way. The Lords method is, Get first Christ, then
all the promises are yours: for they follow him. And Christ well
manages Covenant-promises, as they most tend to the good of
his own.

And this is specially to be considered that Christ, from the womb
to the grave, does act and suffer nothing but as a publike person.
For us he was born, Isa. 9.6. For unto us a Child is born, unto
us a Son is given, Luke 2.11. Rejoice (saith the Angel) for

PART.II. Christ a publike Person.
unto you (not to us Angels, ney neither for himself) unto you Christ al-
is born a Saviour. 2. Why? For whose sake came he this jour-
ney to the earth? Luke saith it was no private business of his own,
c. 19. 10. He came to seek and to save that which was lost, and to
save (saith Paul) sinners, 1 Tim. 1.15.

315

3. Why died he? He was made a curse, ὁ πειρων, for us, Gal
3.13. Sin for us, 2Corin. 5.21. Died for his sheep, John 10.11.
for his friends, Joh. 15.13. was made poor for our sake, 2Cor. 8.
9. is our forerunner who is entered into heaven, ὁ πειρων, for us,
Heb. 6.20. We have a great high Priest, — touched with our
infirmities, Heb. 4.14,15. Who hath entered into the heavens to
appear in the presence of God for us, ὁ πειρων. Christs publike
Spirit, who breathed not for himself, lived not for himself, died
not for himself, nor ascended to heaven for himself, nor enjoyes
he heaven for himself, should show us the necessity we have of
Christ. The Physician is needfull to the sick, the ransone to the
captive, bread to him that famisheth: but Christ is more necessary
to the sinner. We know not how many are in Christs debt: for
heaven, Angels, Sun and Moon, seas and fountains, men and all
things subsist by him, Col.1.17. Heb.1.3. Yet most of men judge
fire and water more needfull then Christ: and think, they no
more need Christ or Covenant-interest in him, then the cart needs
the third wheel, or the great Ocean a drop of dew: nor is it every
necessity of Christ that we presse. There is a necessity of a Phy-
sician to a whole Pharisee: as a dead man stands in need of life; But
it is a literall necessity by which the whole (saith Christ, Matth.
9.) needs not the Physician: but it is the sick, paining necessity,
such as this, I die a hundred times, if I get not CHRIST. This
takes away sleep in the night, and brings a fixed aim to sell all and
buy Him.

The right
necessarie
we are in to
buy Christ.

R r 2

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The 13. Argument, from the necessity of Gods call. 2. Of Typicall sprinkling of the blood of the Covenant, and of the Testament: The place, Heb. 13. 20. the blood of the everlasting Covenant opened. Of the place, Heb. 7. 22. the act of suretyship, the assurance of our state.

AN Argument 13. is taken from the necessity of this Covenant of Redemption. 1. From the call of God: Christ took not on him to be a Priest, nor did he glorify himself to be made an High Priest, but that he said unto him, Heb. 5. *Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee:* That is, I have ordained thee to have the honourable calling of the High Priest. The Apostle also, Heb. 1. applyeth this in part to the eternal generation of the Son: And Act. 13. 33. the Apostle applyes this to Christ's rising from the dead, because in these two latter, manifestly appears the GodHead of the Son, in that he is true High Priest, who, by offering him-

He who took not upon him to be — by the resurrection from the dead. He who took not upon him to be High Priest while God called him, and neither took upon him to be King, while God called him, and said, Psal. 2. 6. *I have called of God Anointed him my King, upon my holy Hill of Zion,* and willingly must be consented to the call of God; to be King and Priest. He must be made Priest and King by Covenant between him and God: for Priests and Kings were called by Covenant, Mal. 2. v. 5. 2 King, Covenant, 11. 17. 2 Sam. 5. 3.

2. It is necessarie that the promises that are our Writs and Charters of Heaven be in a surer hand then in our own, to wit, in the keeping of Christ: For this is an absolute promise made to us, Ezek. 36. 26. *A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you, and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh.* This promise is not formally made to Christ, yet it is a speciall Covenant-promise, Jer. 31. Ezek. 11. Heb. 8. for there is no stony heart in Christ, yet the promise is laid down in him, and made

to

P. II. *Of the typicall sprinkling and of the blood of the Covenant.* 317
 to him, eminenter; for by the merit of his blood (for he sanctified the people with his own blood, Heb. 13. 12.) he sprinkles many Nations, Isa. 52. 15. Some say, as Calvin, Luther, Musculus, by the Preached Gospel: But it is clear, he alludeth to the Law of Sprinkling, Exod. 24. 8. *And Moses took the blood, and sprinkled it on the people, and said, Behold the blood of the Covenant which the Lord hath made with you, concerning all these words.* Now of that blood it is said, Exod. 24. 6. *And Moses took half of the blood (of the oxen that the young men of the children of Israel offered, v. 5.) and put it in basons, and half of the blood* The sprinkled on the altar. 1. The half of the blood was divided betwixt the altar and the people, to note (say the English Dives) the mutual stipulation of God (of Christ God the true Altar) to his people, and his people to him, who were atoned and made one by the blood of Christ, v. 7. (2.) Moses took the book of the Covenant, and red it in the audience of the people: Not the Book of the Covenant of the ten Commandments: for Moses had not as yet brought the two Tables of Stone containing the ten Commandments, down from the mountain. Then it was the Book of the Judiciall Laws and Promises, Heb. 9. 19. For when Moses had spoken every Precept to all the people according to the Law: he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water (lest the blood should thicken and congeal, not being mixt with water: noting also some other mysteries, Job. 5. 6, 8.) and scarlet, wool and hysop, and sprinkled both the Book and all the people. Its true there is no mention of wool and hysop and scarlet, Exod. 24. but the Author to the Hebrews adds nothing of his own to Moses: for there's a ground for these, Num. 19. 6. and Moses speaks not of the sprinkling of the Book, but the Book lying upon the sprinkled Altar was also sprinkled with blood; for saith the Holy Ghost, Heb. 9. 22. *Almost all things are by the Law purged with blood;* and without shedding of blood there is no forgiveness of sins. There was no guiltinesse in the Book, but these written Lawes and Ceremonies were the hand-writing of Ordinances which was against us, which was contrary to us: which Christ by his bloody death abhored to blot out, take out of the way, and nail to His Crosse, Colos. 2. 14.

But

The Testament of Christ of speciall vertue PART. II.

But another Quetion rileth, *Exod. 24. 6.* What needed the sprinkling of the people with one half of the blood, and the sprinkling of the Altar, that is *Christ* the Mediator, with the other; For, 1. Neither the work of dying to redeem man can be divided between *Christ* and the people: nor needed Christ, our true Altar, forgivenesse of sins. *Anf.* The typicall sprinkling of the people is expounded, *Heb. 9. 14.* the purging of the conscience from dead works to serve the living God, & to obey the Gospcl, *1 Pet. 1. 3.*

But the sprinkling of the Altar Christ with the blood, is a far other

How the thing: So the Holy Ghost, *Heb. 9.* He who is constitute the Mediator Covenant of a Testament, his death must interveen to ratify and make valide, in Law, the Testament. v. 16, 17. That the friends of the Testator may have right to the goods that are bequeathed to them in the Testament.

But Christ is the Mediator of the New Testament, v. 15. Ergo, &c. Now we are to know that Christs dying is considered; 1. As a paying of ransome for captives, by which, in Law and by way of merite, the ransom of the blood of God exceedeth the worth of the bought captives, or the crime committed by the captives; and so Christs death meriteth to his friends ransomed righteousness, life, pardon.

We have 2. His dying is considered as a Testament of a dying friend. Now right to the the living friends, by vertue of a Testament as a Testament, have goods be- not jus and right by buying and selling to the goods tested. The queathed essence and nature of a Testament is saved, whether the goods that to us in a are bequeathed in legacy be the free gift of the Testator, not Testament bought with a price by him, or goods of the father of the friend, as a Testa- to which the friend being a German brother hath as good right or- ment, but the same right, by birth, that the Testator hath. How ever: the as such a comparison holds in this. Christ 1. hath bequeathed to believers Testament these goods. 2. The Testament is no Testament, nor valide in in which the Law, except the Testator be dead. No man can sue by Law tested death of the Testator is goods, if the Testator himself be living; Nor can we have right to the merito a new heart, forgivenesse, perseverance, eternall life, to gracie rious cause and glory, except Christ our Testator had died. But because the of the goods Tested goods are more then goods left to us in Testament; they are left to us by such a Testament as is both a Testament and a death perfectly

PART. II. of the blood of the Covenant.

perfectly meritorious (this is superadded to the nature of a Testament and beyond all Testaments) yea a death which is a price to ransome us from the wrath to come; Therefore Christ so dying in our stead, of justice meriteth that the friends should have these goods, though they belong by meer grace and free promise, to the friends. Now this is a most clear ground: Christ hath a well purchased right by giving a condign price for the goods and blessings promised in the Covenant of Grace to us: This right he hath by paying a price, laying down his life for us. This buying is not by necessity of nature, of justice, but by a voluntary, free and un-compelled agreement and Covenant, *Joh. 10. 18. Isai. 53. 6.* No man can exact upon him, *Psal. 89. 22.* (2.) If the Old Testament was confirmed by the blood of beasts, then must the New Testament be confirmed by the blood of Christ prefigured in these. But the Old Testament was so confirmed, *Heb. 9. v. 18, 19, 20, 21,* of some living creature slain.

3. Hence the making of a Covenant was by cutting a calf or a beast in twain, and passing between the parts thereof, *Jer. 34. 18.* and so they entered into a curse, *Nehem. 10. 29.* devoted themselves to destruction, wishing they might be cut in twain (which is a strange kinde of death, *Math. 24. 51.*) if they should break the Covenant. Hence the Phrase of striking a Covenant. So the Romans flew a sow: So the Romans and Albani made a Covenant, *Livius, li. 1. Populus (inquit Facciatli) Romani prior non deficit. Si prior deficit, publico consilio malo donec Tu illo stricken, if they should break the Covenant. Its like they had it from the Jews. So Christ died to ratifie and confirm the Covenant, *Exod. 24. 6. This is the blood of the Covenant.* Now the Covenant hath no blood. This blood of slain beasts (for it is a figurative speech) is a signe confirming the Covenant that believers shall have remission of sins in that blood of Christ which is shad-dowed forth by the blood of these beasts. So Christ the great Sheperd of the flock, *Heb. 13. 20.* is said to be brought from the dead, *et dissipati,* by the blood of the everlasting Covenant. *Iudicium, Id ubi dixit, the Article is understood: Or as the Hebrew Phrase, I is put porcum, sili- for eis, as Calvin and Piscator. The question may be, How did ce seorsum, percutit, God**

God bring Christ again from the death by the blood of the everlasting Covenant, had the blood of Christ any influence to bring himself back from the dead? Or did he, by dying, merit his own resurrection?

Aufz. Some read the word thus, and shun the Question, *The God of peace who brought again from the dead the great sheep-herd of the sheep:* Understanding, *viva,* being the great sheep-herd or feeder, by the blood of the everlasting Covenant. So *Beza,* who maks these words, *ἐν αἷστῳ*, to be referred to *αὐτούς*: So as Christ's right to be Pastor is in, and by his blood and suffering. And the words, *ἐν αἷστῳ*, so is not to be constructed with the particle, *ἀπαράντι:* But *Beza* confesseth, that he changed the situation of the words. But if Christ be made a Pastor and feeder of the sheep by the blood of the eternall Covenant: then is he called to be a Pastor by Covenant. And what influence hath his

*Beza, in
Anstaqueus
hoc planius
sicer, non
dubitavi
verborum
collocatio-
nem mutare*

death in his Pastorall Office? Is it by way of merit? Or did Christ merit to himself? Hardly, if not curiously, can we say that, though I nothing doubt, but Christ gave perfect obedience as man to the Covenant of Works, and he did merit as man, *iure operum,* life eternall, the way that Adam should have merited life eternal, so he had never fallen. But the words naturally bear this sense, as *Deodati* expounds them, that Christ is risen by vertue of his death: As it is well said, the just surety hath right and Law to come out of prison, by paying the summe, and neither Justice nor Creditor can keep him in prison: *solutus aet est solutus carcere.* Christ having satisfied our debt, and payed the ransome of his blood to the death, and being dead, and under the dominion of death by justice, is freed from either remaining in death, or dying any more; he is now justified, not in his person, for Christ in person was habitually righteous, and from the womb, Luk. 1.35. *τὸ δὲ τόπον*, *That holy thing Jesus was sinlesse, and so never condemned, but justified in his cause and in his condition by Law for us, and so ap- by payling peareth, ἐν συλλεγοῖς αὐτοῖς, the second time without sin unto of the ran- saluation; the second time without sin, hath relation to the first time, without sin, that is, he shall appear the second time no lese sime of blood,* Heb. 9.28. *without sin, and so justified in regard of his condition in Law, then he was, when he was conceived by the Holy Ghost, and so that*

eminently

eminently holy thing born of the Virgin Mary, Luk. 1. 35. that is, as justified as if he had never been made sin, and never had been under the Law-burden of our sins, as *Isai. 53.6.* And *1 Tim. 3.16.* *ἰδημένων εἰς αὐτούς, He was justified in the Spirit,* declared to be just, and the innocent Son of God, by his resurrection from the dead, *Rom. 1.4.* so that in the Spirit, is, in the eternall Spirit, *Heb. 9.14.* the Godhead: For he came from under that act and band of Cautionrie and Suretyship without sin, that is, acquit from sin, which he was made, and was laid upon him, *2 Cor. 5.21.* *Hab. 5.6.*

4. We know, *Heb. 7.22.* *Jesus, ψίλευεν ἵψυθος, He was made the Surety of a better Covenant,* as the LXX. ever translate it, of a better Testament.

Now here is a judicall and a Law-act of suretyship put upon Christ. 1. He was made Surety, then he was not Surety by nature, but so made by a free transaction and Covenant. For in Christs coming under that act, when he was made Surety, there be two things: 1. His eternall condiscending to take on him our nature, and to empty himself and be a servant. 2. His agreeing and plighting of his faith and truth to take on our condition in Law, that God should lay upon him the iniquity of us all, *Isa. 53.6.* and Johovah, that God should make him *who knew no sin, to be sin for us, ὅπερ οὐκ οἴδαμεν, in our Law, place and room,* *2 Cor. 5.21.* not against his Fathers will, nor yet without his own free consent. That is against all reason: For that which God made Christ, that he was not by nature, but that God willingly made him, and that he was willingly and by free Covenant made. But God gave him a body, *Heb. 7.5.* and God made him sin, *ἀνθελέγειν ἄνθρωπον,* *2 Cor. 5.11.* So a Surety is one that promises to satisfie for another, and comes from a Verbe which signifies to promise by striking of hands, *Prov. 22.26.* *Be not thou among them that strike hands, or, of them that are surety for debts.* The Seventy, give not thy self, *is ἤσθιεν,* as a Surety. *Aries Montan.* *Inter percutientes fide iubendo.* The Verbe in the Hebrew is from a root that signifies to mix together: as the owle-light, when light and darknesse after the Sun-set are mixed together. And by a Metaphor it notes suretyship and mixture of persons, as M. Legh: when one is tyed for another,

Christ is
not a sure-
ty by na-
ture, but is
made a
surety by a
Covenant,
consent of
Johovah,
and by his
own con-
sent.

another, and mixed with him in his place. As Christ put himself in that Christ the bond and writ of blood that we were in : We were in the Law, was made writ, *Deut. 27.26.* under a curse, and Christ shifted the beleevers a surety in a Capitall crime to die for us, the demands of Law and Justice, and put in our names in the Gospel, is suitable to the Law Xp̄us, *recanciling the world* (of the elect) *not imputing their sins upon them,* *2 Cor. 5.19.* And in time we beleeving, are written blessed and righteous in him, *Gal. 3. 13, 14. 2 Cor. 5. 21.* And what could more be done by Christ, who substitute himself by Covenant in our place, and put us in his place ? Nor is this Suretyship just in debts only, but also what ever *Socinus, Crellius, and others say on the contrair, in Capitall punishments.* For M. Thomas Goodwine, pag. 51. *Eucritus* did (ιεπερεύσυνος) willingly become a surety for *Euphenes.* Yea, and in hostages and pledges in war, *Plutarch* saith, that the *Theffalians* slew two hundred and fifty hostages. The *Romans* (saith *Livie.*) did the like to three hundred of the *Vols̄ti*, and cast the *Tarantines* over rocks, *de saxe Tarpeio :* and these were humane people. The children of Tyrants were killed with the Tyrants, by some Cities of Greece, as *Cicero*, and *Halicarnasius* say. *Curtius* saith, that the *Macedonians* put to death such as were near of blood to traitors: *Marcellinus* saith so much also of the *Perfians.* The just Lord punishing the sins of the fathers upon the children, to the third and fourth generation, teacheth, that conjunction of blood (such as was between Christ our Kinsman, *Job 19.25.* and us) may well make it most just, that Christ be punished for us, the Surety for the sinner, though the sinner be under the hand of the Judge; for he is unable to satisfie Justice, and mercy saith that there is no essentiall reason in Law-justice why the same head which sinned and no other should suffer. But grace may interveine, so that surely any though God need no surety, yet tender mercy, or God decreeing to show mercy, in some good sense, needs such a Surety as some cases. *Christ.*

How mercy calleth by a sort of need for a surety. Justice suits not that the debtor repay to the surety any thing in some cases.

Christ ought to have satisfaction made to him and restitution by the broken debtor, because

another, and mixed with him in his place. As Christ put himself in that Christ the bond and writ of blood that we were in : We were in the Law, was made writ, *Deut. 27.26.* under a curse, and Christ shifted the beleevers a surety in a Capitall crime to die for us, the demands of Law and Justice, and put in our names in the Gospel, is suitable to the Law Xp̄us, *recanciling the world* (of the elect) *not imputing their sins upon them,* *2 Cor. 5.19.* And in time we beleeving, are written blessed and righteous in him, *Gal. 3. 13, 14. 2 Cor. 5. 21.* And what could more be done by Christ, who substitute himself by Covenant in our place, and put us in his place ? Nor is this Suretyship just in debts only, but also what ever *Socinus, Crellius, and others say on the contrair, in Capitall punishments.* For M. Thomas Goodwine, pag. 51. *Eucritus* did (ιεπερεύσυνος) willingly become a surety for *Euphenes.* Yea, and in hostages and pledges in war, *Plutarch* saith, that the *Theffalians* slew two hundred and fifty hostages. The *Romans* (saith *Livie.*) did the like to three hundred of the *Vols̄ti*, and cast the *Tarantines* over rocks, *de saxe Tarpeio :* and these were humane people. The children of Tyrants were killed with the Tyrants, by some Cities of Greece, as *Cicero*, and *Halicarnasius* say. *Curtius* saith, that the *Macedonians* put to death such as were near of blood to traitors: *Marcellinus* saith so much also of the *Perfians.* The just Lord punishing the sins of the fathers upon the children, to the third and fourth generation, teacheth, that conjunction of blood (such as was between Christ our Kinsman, *Job 19.25.* and us) may well make it most just, that Christ be punished for us, the Surety for the sinner, though the sinner be under the hand of the Judge; for he is unable to satisfie Justice, and mercy saith that there is no essentiall reason in Law-justice why the same head which sinned and no other should suffer. But grace may interveine, so that surely any though God need no surety, yet tender mercy, or God decreeing to show mercy, in some good sense, needs such a Surety as some cases. *Christ.*

Neither is it much that justice saith that the Surety ought to have satisfaction made to him and restitution by the broken debtor,

because justice gives his due to every man. For 1. if the surety be See *Andrea. Eſenius, in Triumpho Crucis deſatiſt. Chri. ſi. 2. Sect.* more then a man, and have absolute sovereignty over what he ex-pends, as Christ hath over his own life, to lay it down, and take it up again, *Job. 10.18.* As of free grace he payed for us, so of free grace he pleads not in Law that the broken man pay him back, *3. c. 1. pag.* that God doth neither punish, nor shew mercy, by necessity of justice. 2. When the surety hath a band of relief, and as it were, a back-band, that his soul shall not be left in grave, *Pſal. 16. 1c.* but that he shall be victorious and more, he may give out, and look for nothing in again. *Secin. de Scru. 1.3.*

And the necessity of a surety to say, remove the ſcaffold, the guilty man shall not die, pleads, that if the Lord shall be merciful to sinners, as he decreed, then must Christ tranſact ſo with God, *L. S. quis as the everlasting out-goings of mercy, may be with the free con- reum. D. ſent (as it were) of truth, and righteousness.* *Ulpianus cust & rx. bib. reorum.*

Vale. Maximus de Dionyſior. Siculo tamē debita totaſ sacrifigis supplicia non excolvit, dedecore tamen filii penas rependit, quas vivis effugerat.

But it may be ſaid, if Christs dying for sinners remove as a ſatisfactory punishment, the guilt and obligation to eternall wrath, what way is the reall, and as it were, the physicall inherency and eſſeuce of ſin removed? *Anſ.* The obligation to wrath is removed only in a legal way by ſuffering of punishment due to ſin, which Punishi- Christ hath done; But the eſſeuce of ſin is only removed, as mentiſu- every other contrair is removed, by the expelling of ſin out of its red by a ſubject, and by introducing the contrair form, to wit, inherent Surety can remove puni- righteouſneſſe, and the perfect habit of Sanctification and holiness. Now for this, Christ's dying and ſuffering wrath due to us, ſup- from the poſe Christ ſhould die a thouſand thouſand times for us, his dying guilty man, cannot as a ſatisfying cauſe, or as a punishment remove this. For but cannot i. a punishment ſuffered by our Surety can but exhaust and re- remove formally the punishment due to the sinner for whom the surety ſhip the infe- ſhould undertake. But 2. Christ's dying cannot as a punishment re- rence guilt, and make him formally and physically and inhererently innocent, except the punishment of the Sure- ty ſo excellent procure, by way of incite, the expelling of him, and the incoming of inher- ent holiness in his room, as *Heb. 10. 10.*

*Christ is a Surety for us.***PART. II.**

move sin as sin, and as contrair to the holy Law, and make us des-
tined wretches and servants of sin holy, as the paying of ten thou-
sand Crowns for a forlorn waster, cannot make him to be no wa-
ster, and a man that hath obeyed the Law; only it makes that in
Law the payment cannot be charged upon him. 3. Christ's trans-
acting with God as our Surety is not only then meerly to remove
eternal punishment, but to purchase by the merit of his death the
healing and sanctifying of our nature, Heb. 10.10. *By the which
will we are sanctified by the offering of the body of Jesus Christ*

What will once for all. Then our Sanctification is procured to us by the will of GOD, of God, not simply as his commanding will: for then should all and Heb. 10.10. every one whom the Lord commands to be holy, 1 Pet. 1.16, be sanctified, which we see is not done: but by the will of the Father, commanding Christ to die, Job. 10.18. Job. 14.31. and the will of Christ offering himself once for a sacrifice for sin, is the will which sanctifies us. So *Paul* well saith, it is the will with its correlate, for in the willing passive obedience of Christ are we sanctified really by the merit of his death, though this be wrought by degrees.

2. Since the Father consents and wills that Christ die, and the Son willingly offers himself a sacrifice, the number. (as judicious

Mr. David Dickson hath well observed on the place) and these all, for whom Christ offered himself, were condescended upon betwixt the Father and the Mediator. God knew those whom he gave to the Son, to be ransomed: and Christ knew those whom he bought. And the necessity of this Covenant appears in this, that the comfort cannot be solide, if a child of God never have any assurance of his being gifted of the Father to the Son in particular. For two things are clear here. 1. That the Lord knows who are his, 2 Tim. 2.19. and that, if God gave some to the Son, as Job. 17. then the Son received them in a certain number. And if Christ bought them by Covenant, he must know how many: As one who buys a flock, but he knows the quality and number of the flock. 2. The knowledge sometime shall be this distinct, that I was by name a member of these among them, who loved me, and gave himself for me. And as the Son, & offering of every Priest is by way of Covenant and promise, so, if I am one of a sacrifice, in the faith of the great sacrifice, be offered to God, then them. will God accept it (here is a Covenant) so is the Body of Christ offered

Christ is a Surety for us.

PART. II. offered by the Covenanting will, Heb. 10.10. And any doubt that may, or doth arise concerning your self by name: 1. It may as well be moved, in some respect, against the whole number, and no wise man will say that the bargain betwixt the Father and the Son was so blind, as the number was not agreed upon. For since all the bought are sinners, and so inclined to sinfull doubting of the bargain, that, which as a doubt is moved by one, may be moved by all severally, and all severally denying themselves to be the men for whom Christ bargained: By this sinfull questioning of the transaction, none at all were agreed upon.

2. Every doubting of Gods love to me once justified, and who have once fled to Christ for refuge, is grounded upon sin and un-
worthiness; now none were given by the Father to the Son from
eternity upon respect of either faith, or unbelief, or holiness, or
bad deserving: Its true, it is not known to me but by believing, <sup>Sin is no
cause why</sup> that I was given Covenant, wayes to the Son. But the Question is, if sin be any ground why one justified should cashier himself, <sup>out of the number of the gifted ones to Christ, and committed to
the Mediator;</sup> ^{his justification} doth not a little hinder Sanctification in its progresse; but should not brangle Justification, nor the faith of our interest in Christ. 4. The

necessity of this Covenant appears, in that salvation is taken off free-will, and the slippery yea, and ne, of free-will in the Covenant of Works, and laid upon one that is mighty, upon David, to govern Israel as their King; but Psal. 89.19. upon Christ (as excellently M. Dickson) in all respects more eminently than David,

M. D. Dick-
son, Psal. 89.
19.
a stronger help, mighty to save, appointed of the Father in all cases, — he is one of our kind, taken out of the people, acquainted with our condition, &c. The less of the creatures will, and the more of Gods will, is gracious, as here, be in a Covenant, the better: Because the more grace and stability, even the sure mercies of David, that is, of Christ, Is. 55.3. Eze. 34.23. Eze. 37.24. must be here.

5. The well-head of salvation (for meer free-will and good pleasure in God, instituted this dispensation) must be here: And most eminent freedome of grace made the bargain; so that the Magna Charta, the great Charter of the Gospel, I will have mercy

Much of
the Lord
his graci-
ous will is
in the Co-
venant of
suretyship.

The necessity and utility

M.D.Dick- mercy on whom I will have mercy, is here eminently, for mercy
son, Pi. 89. and free-love began at the head man. For the Covenant of Grace
v. 26. (as notably M. Dickson) is consolidated in Christ our head; and
he hath the first right as man to say unto the Father, that which is

Here said, as Intercessor and Mediator for the Elect; he shall
cry unto me, thou art my Father, my God, and the Rock of my
Christ the first heir of salvation. As a father binds his heirs and children: A King
subscribes articles of peace and seals them for the land and subjects:
The Ambassador for the Prince and State that sent him, makes
tasks for all answer. So Christ acts in the Covenant of Redemption for his
his.

More grace made, Gospel-free-grace, as Covenant-mercy is more in the Co-
(if we may vouchsafe to call it) than in the Covenant of Reconciliation,
compare) for principally they are here as waters in the fountain. Hence, in
Isa the Re- deemers' this Covenant, is fountain-love, fountain-grace, all the satisfac-
Covenant, on that the Lord craves of sinners, begins at this spring, the old
then in and eternall design of love in the heart of God toward his Son, his
everlasting delight, the bosome darling and beloved of the Father;
Fountain- is the designed Prince upon whose shoulder is the Government:
grace, and Here was mutuall love-delight acted by the Father and Son, Prov.
fountain- 8. 31. My delights were with the sons of men, even before the
mercy in fountains of waters were created, v. 24. O what everlasting out-
this Cov- goings and isslings of eternall love came from the heart of the Fa-
enant, ther and the Son in their eternall Covenant-delights towards the
sons of men; here was the eternall marriage of the Lamb the Kings
eternall Son, and of the not as yet created Bride first written and
sealed by the King and his Son, and war not knowing of this, and
Gods delighting in us, when we little knew or dreamed of his eternall
love, highnesse, his grace. Should the heart of God be taken,
and (to speak so) be sick of love for so many Nothings, whom he
was to make heirs? Far more being reconciled and justified we need
not fear we shall be saved.

Here in this Covenant were first drawnen the lineaments and
dights of the free and gracious interest of Jesus Christ to the sons
of men: And who should not wonder here at the purest fountain-
grace that is in Jesus Christ, which did set on work eternall wise-
dom to frame such an eternall peace of God Covenanting with the
Son

PART. II.

of the Covenant of suretyship.

Son of God, and love eternall hirring love eternall with the reward
(to speak so) of the certain hope of enjoying a soul-satisfying seed,
and a numerous off-spring of Redeemed ones, if love should die
and triumph over justice, which was done by love.

6. There is here much of the eternall interest of JEHOVAH to the Son, and of the essentiall love of God to his only begotten Son, tial love to
Prov. 8. 24. When there was no depths, I was brought forth. — the Son in
30. Then I was by him as one brought up with him, and I was this Cove-
daily his delight, rejoicing always before him. And then may
that have been verified, Jer. 30. 21. And their noble One shall be
of themselves, and their Gouvernour shall proceed from the midst of
them, and I will cause him to draw near, and he shall approach
unto me: for who is this that engadged his heart to approach unto
me, saith the Lord? The love eternall here in JEHOVAH loves
and wonders that Christ his Son layes bands upon his own heart to
take upon him the Office of Redemeer and Priest: and the Lords
saying, Who is this? is a note of love and wonder, as Psal. 24. 8.
10. Isa. 63. 1. Cant. 6. 10. and that his heart closes with the Co-
venant-designe.

Obj. But Arminius himself also teacheth, that there was a Co-
venant betwixt the Lord and Christ. God required of Christ our
Priest, that he would lay down his life for sin, give his flesh
for the life of the world, — and he promised, if he should
so do, he should see his seed, and be an eternall high Priest after
the order of Melchisedeck, and by the exercise of his Priestly Of-
fice, he should be exalted to a royll dignity. Christ our Priest am ponere
closed with the condition, and said, Behold, here am I to do thy hostiam pro
will, &c. And Socinians, who hold him to be a divine Man only,
will agree that Christ was under an obedientiall Covenant to God. The Co-
venant betwixt the Father and the Son, but it is a faticher thing then such as we
hold: for Christ did close with the condition of laying down his
life for sinners.

Ans. Arminians and others may yeeld to a Covenant between the Father and the Son, but it is a faticher thing then such as we hold: for Christ did close with the condition of laying down his life for sinners.

But when Christ hath ended his work, and payed the price of Redem-
tion, laid down his life for Pharaoh, Cain, for Egyptians, etc, is not
Syrians, Persians, Chaldeans, and all in whom ever was the true
breath of life; yet cannot the Lord promise to Christ that he shall
have prion.

Jac. Arm-
orat, de Sa-
cerdotio
Christi, pag.
16, 17.

Potulavit
Dux ut An-
nimam su-
per peccato, &c.

*The necessity and excellency**PART. IV.*

have any seed, or one redeemed one, nor can the Lord either promise or pay wages to Christ: For a promise, if sincere, is of things that are in our power to do, even among men. Can a King promise that to morrow he shall cause the wind for severall dayes to come, blow out of the North-West? Its not in his power. Now Arminians, Socinians, and all of that Family teach, that God hath no forceable antecedent dominion to bow and determine the

The Lord free-will of any one man: The Lord then no more can promise, nor cannot pre-give the reward of a seed to Christ, for his work of laying down his life for man, then he can ingage that the Serpent (with reverence Arminian to our blessed Lord) shall see his seed. For when Christ bath Christ shall wrought the same work, payed the same very ranfone (as these have a seed, Sophists teach) for millions that perish, through their own free-because the will eternally! What seed hath he of them? Where is his wage? Lord, by their way, Were not all and every one of mankind promised in the Arminian Covenant, to be the gifted seed of Christ, upon condition that bath no do minion o-they should repent and beleevve? But Arminians deny that God ver the free doth promise faith, or that he is so Lord and Master of the free-will of any will of any, as indeclineably and unsuperably he can make good man.

his promise, and cause them beleevve and persevere therein to the end, and that is it by which they are his seed. Its but said in vain that God promises they shall be Christs gifted seed, providing they be willing to beleevve: that is but to say, the Lord promises all shall be his seed, providing they shall be his seed: For willing believving makes them his seed. 2. By this also the Lord promises what is in mens power to perform, and it might fall out that all and every one should do the like that multitudes do, who perish eternally, and so shall Christ do his work, and enjoy no seed at all.

But the Covenant of suretyship which we teach, makes not the truth of God to depend upon our faith, or our unbelieve; Yea the Lord promises that Christ without all fail, shall indeclineably see his seed, yea, and shall be the restorer of the Tribes of Jacob, and a light to the Gentiles, and the salvation of God to the ends of the earth, Isa.49.6. Isa.54. He shall be King and Lord of the Iles, Isa.42.6,7. Isa.60.9. Psal.2.8,9. A Prince and a sheepherd over his people, Ezek.34. Ezek.37.24,25. Psal.89.25: not upon condition they be willing, over whom he is set, but to meet with the

PART. II. of the Covenant of suretyship.

the temptation. Ah! my iron and rockie will shall still resist the Lord; and he shall be King of the Nations, if the Nations shall determine their own will to submit to him, and vote that he be The Lord Crowned King: Nay, but the Covenant-promise saith, he shall King of the be King of thy will. This is a part of his reign, Psal. 110. 2. *The will. Lord shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion: rule thou in the midst of thine enemies.* 3. *Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power,* Deut. 30.6. Ezek. 31.19,20. Ezek. 36. 26, 27. Jer. 31.31,32,33,34,35. Jer.32.39,40. Neither can there be confidence and faith in God through the sure mercies of David, nor peace, nor solide consolation, nor warrant to pray for the Lords gracious bowing of the will to be his seed, except it be beleevved, Covenanted, that God shall be the God of his people, and their King, not over the element of the sea only to rule it, and over the mountains, and the stones, and rocks, but also over the particula-wills, and the willing and nilling, choosing of good, and refusing of evill in the men of the Iles: And how could the Son The Son pray, Father, give the inheritance of the Heathen to me, according c nor pray to promise? Ask of me, and I will give thee, &c. Psal. 2. If the for the hea-Father could answer nothing, but what Arminians and Socinians then to be his inheritance by say he answers, as also, the beleever out of the fleshes weaknesse must dictat this return of prayer. Son, with good will, I grant the Heathen, and the ends of the earth to thee in heritance and pos-session, so they be willing to submit to thee: But, what if they refuse to obey either me or thee? I did never Covenant With thee, Son, to do more then I can, try thy strength, and force their free-will, if thou can; if they be willing, well, and good it is, there is a bargain: My approving and commanding Will is that they be thy seed, and thy willing people; but my decree is not to Lord it over their will, that is a fundamentall act of Government, that all my subjects have liberty of conscience, to will or will, as they please. Nay, but the Covenant of Suretyship includes the sure mercies of David, and the Lord gives band, word, and writ, and seal of blood, and the Oath of God to the Son, Psal.110.4 Heb. 7.21. for the will. Isa.53.4. Behold I have given him for a wisnesse of the people, a leader and commander to the people. But what if they will neither lead nor drive? Yea the Lord promises they

The necessity and excellency

PART. II.

they shall not need to be driven, they shall be willing, and run. 5. Behold thou shalt call a Nation that thou knowest not, and Nations that knew not thee, shall run unto thee, because of the Lord thy God, and of the Holy One of Israel, for he hath glorified thee. And a strong reason of this is given, the Gentiles run; Whence comes this forwardnesse of the Gentiles who knew not God? Because (saith Isaiah) of Jehovah thy God (of Christ Mediatour) in Covenant with thee, Psal. 22.1. Job. 20.20. because of thy God the Holy One of Israel: the running (saith Calvin) notteth the efficacy of the calling, and they run to Christ, because of Jehovah, and the mighty power of God in the Man-Christ. 7 Notteth because (saith Piscator.) And another reason, because he hath glorified thee, O Christ, he hath declared thee to be the Son of God by thy rising from the dead, ascension to heaven, given thee a Name above all names, Rom. 1.4. Phil. 2.7, 8, 9, 10. So Alfonius, Piscator, Marlorat, Gualther, Diodati: So the running of the Gentiles to Christ is the glorifying of Christ, and a part of the reward, its Christ's glory that he hath a seed that runs after him. Then: And M. Dickson upon these words, Ps. 2.2. M.D. Dick-
son on Psal. 2. Ask of me, after Christ's resurrection and declaration of his formerly overclodded Godhead, he should continue in the Office of his Mediation and Intercession, and by vertue of his payed ransom of Redemption call for the enlargement of his purchased Redemption among the Gentiles, for this is the Fathers compact with the Son, saying, ask of me, and I will give thee, the Heathen; Christ both so that both by free Covenant, and by merit, Christ challengeth by free Covenant a seed: and it were injustice in the Lord (with reverence and vancant and glory to his Holines) to deny to Christ that for which he hath given by merit of a condign ransome and price: But he hath payed a condign Covenant and justice ransome of his own precious self, and offered blood for his may chal- seed. Hence 1. though a weak belieever cannot by merit suit a lense a bowed will and a circumcised heart from the Lord: Yet 1. may he seed, they suit it by the band of the Covenant of Redemption between Jehovah and the Son: and a Redeemed one may say, it was an Article promised to him, and of the Covenant of Redemption, that my stony heart should be gave a taken away, and a heart of flesh given to me, and faith hath inslue price ence to be supported that God articed Covenant-ways such a for them,

wretch

PART. II. of the Covenant of suretyship.

wretch as I am, to Christ: and look, as the book of life, called, the Lambs Book of Life, contains so many by name, head, and in all their individuall properties, Jacob, Paul, &c. that are written and inrolled for glory, so are all (and I by name) in a Covenant-relation given of the Father to the Son, Job. 17.3,9,11. Job. 6.32. and that is surer then heaven or the fixed ordinances of nature, Jer. 31.35,36. Psal. 89.37,38. Happy such as can ride at this anchor: Though I mean not that the decree of election and the roll of the Mediatour to me, or the gracious Surety-Covenant betw. en Jehovah and the Son, as relating to me by name, must be the nearest object of faith, or that alwayes a belieever doth read this roll; but his faith often is, and ought, and may be supported thereby.

2. Christ may suit, by vertue of both the Surety Covenant and by the justice of God, his condign merite to me, a fixed will to run the way of his Commandements. Christ's appearing with blood, Heb. 9. and his prayer as high Priest, Job. 17. prove that, in Christ's Bill for us, there is justice, the merite of blood, and that his Advocacy is, Job. 2.1. grounded upon justice, and he stands there as Jesus Christ, Sicut, the righteous without sin now imputed, not now made sin, nor made a curse, but by order of strict justice justified and righteous, and the act of Suretyship taken off, and as the hand-writing against us is cancelled upon the Crosse, Col. 2. So the hand-writing of oblidged punishment due to Christ as our Surety is removed, and he now justified in the Spirit, Without sin, Heb. 9.28. Such a one as cannot die, Rom. 6.9. Rev. 1.18. and cannot die a death satisfactory for sin, because as Christ was delivered from the act of suretyship, believers cannot die the second death, Christ having died for them, neither can Christ suffer the second death again, or be twice a curse, for once he died for all. But our faith is so supported not a tyship, little in this, I darre not put merit or justice in my suits to God, but I belieeve it is, and must be in Christ's bill, and that bill is for me: mercy, and only mercy is in the sinners bill, but the justice of a condign ransomer is in Christ's suits, and so faith looks to Christ: As 1. having the first Covenant-right to heaven, as the great Lord receiver of the promises. And then we have a second right in him, 2. Faith looks to Christ as having more right to us, because he hath the right of justice, then we have to our selves; for its free-gaces title

There is
mercy in
the bill of
our suits &
merite and
justice in
the bill of
the suits of
Christ for
us.

Christ was
delivered
from the
act of sure-
tyship.

Chr. It bath title which we have to our selues, for we gave no ransome for our
the first selves, and we gave no ransome for eternall life : and therefore all
right of us the doubtings and acts of unbelief in order to the Surety of the
by justice, Covenant, do resolve upon some apprehended breach between the
and more Father and the Son, that either the one or the other, or both have
we have of failed to each other, and have broken the Articles of the Covenant,
our selves. which is a reproaching of both the Father and the Son : So that
nothing is more necessary then to beleieve firmly the Covenant-
Our doubt- faithfulness of God. 3. What strong bands of beleeving and ho-
ings, being ly living have we from this Surety Covenant ? When i. good-
fied, reflect will and freegrace is become the ingadger of the faithfulness of
upon the God as he is true God, and with a Covenant-tye to keep sure our
Covenant of salvation, as he will be true to his Son, and so to himself and to
ship. his own Holy Nature, that we shall be saved, yea, and not that
only, but by Office, as King and High Priest, he hath laid bands
upon himself, and made it the duty of his Office to save us : So
that any good man thinks his office of a King, and a Prophet; or
a Priest, lays bands upon him to acquit himself faithfully in the
charge ; So that Christs sworn Office of High Priest lays bands up-
Christ bath laid bands on him to compassionate as a feeling head, all his own, and to be
by office touched with their infirmities : then must unbelief in these parti-
upon him- culars say, we judge that Christ will not do his duty in his Office,
self to com- and that he shall break his faith of Suretyship, and fail under his
passionate band of Suretyship. How needfull then must the firm perswasion
us. of compleat qualifications and fulnesse of anointing of Christ for
Its needful the compleat dilcharge of his duty be ? O ! beleieve him to be the
to beleieve faithfull High Priest, who expiates and heals you in all the measure,
the suffici- kinds, degrees, circumstances of time, place, of the particular
encie of transgressions you are guilty of, Psal. 103. 3. Who forgiveth all thine
Christ to iniquities : who healeth all thy diseases. And if a man judge
safe. himself ingaged to go about such duties as his surety and ransone-
The belie- payer in his name hath promised, far more are we to walk as the
ved Cove- redeemed of the Lord, since there was an eternall Covenant-un-
nant hath dertaking between Jehovah and the Son of God, that we should
more influ- ence on us fulfill the undertaking. And sure it is, Law-faith or beleeving of
then the Law-threatnings cannot have such influence upon our spirits to
Law-faith can have, cause us obey the Law, as the motives of a concluded act of surety-
ship.

ship and closed compact between the *Father* and the *Son*, that we shall obey him: And indeed it is a meditation that morally and spiritually should obtain from us that we be holy as he is holy, and strongly melt the rocky heart. When we remembred that JEHOVAH, as a designed Surety, gave band for the heart of a sinner from eternity, and enters himself Cautioner for our rebellious will, it should put us to beleive so much, and morally lay bands on our will.

Q. How are we to conceive of the act of Suretyship?

A. Jehovah from eternity decrees that the Son be the designed person who shall take on our nature, and lay down his life for sinners: The Lord promises he shall have a redeemed seed for a reward.

In this offer Jehovah ingades that we shall be Christ's seed, and so shall be, by the immortall seed, born again, and shall beleeve and be gifted to Christ as saved; here Jehovah undertakes that we shall beleeve.

2. Christ agrees to the designed person: It is written of me, and so decreed of God from eternity, I delight to do thy will, I shall lay down my life for these given to me: And here the other party; Jesus Christ coming by his own consent to die, does also undertake, 1. In dying to ransome us from hell, and merit life to us, and make us his purchase. So 2. he being a Saviour by merit, he by his death purchaseth the Spirit, and meriteth the new heart, and so undertakes for us: in this regard, both parties undertake for us. And the Spirit being the same very God with the Father and the Son, also is by his own consent designed comforter and actor in his way by the anointing without measure, that he puts on the Man Christ, and the grace given to his members: But the only formall parties in the compact are the Lord Jehovah and the Son party consenting before time, and his Manhood in time becoming one who imbraces the Covenant of Suretyship, and calls the Lord his God, Ps. 22.1. Job. 20.17. Rev. 3.12. Isa. 55.5.

Hence, if we employ faith, and hold out to the Lord the undertaking for us in the Covenant, there is an answer framed to all our temptations from our own frailty : As *Adam* and the *Angels* fell, and how can we stand ? But God said never of them, as

all This Co-
n- venant an-
as swers our
al. tentations.

The Covenant with David in many things is PART, II.
Psal. 89.19. I have laid strength upon one that is mighty: and Christ was no designed undertaker for Adam, nor was Adam to believe such a thing. Therefore it is fit to observe, that not only the Head Christ and the body changes names, as the body is called Christ, *1 Cor. 12. 12.* and Christ called David, *Isai. 53. 3.* *Ezek. 37. 14. David my servant shall be King over them.* So also many things in one Psalm are spoken of David, both in an

In one Historicall and Typicall truth, as *Psal. 22.* But there are some *Psalmesome* things, *Psal. 16.* so spoken of David, that they are true only things spo- Typically of Christ, and spoken Prophetically, as David saith, *P. Ps. 16.10. Thou will not leave my soul in grave, neither will suffer* prophet- *cally of thine Holy One to see corruption.* And the Apostle Peter denies Christ, o that this can be expounded of David, for *Acts 2. 26, 27, 28, 29, 30.* other things and Paul, *Acts 13.34,35.* And as concerning that God raised him historically and typi- from the dead, now no more to return to corruption: he said es- cally both this wise, *I will give you the sure mercies of David.* Wherefore of David & he saith also in another place, thou shalt not suffer thine Holy One others. to see corruption. *35. But David after he had served his own Generation, by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption.* And it is not to be doubted that the Prophecie, *Psal. 22. They divided my garments, they pierced my hands and my feet,* is only a Prophecie of Christs being crucified: Nor was ever David crucified. To say in another case David was crucified, will not help: for it might be said in another case David saw no corruption, for all believers are delivered from the dominion, curse, and sting of death. Hence, it may well be said, that same *Psal. 89.* must prove both the Covenant of Suretyship, and the Covenant of Grace: v. 3. *I have made a Covenant with my chosen, I have sworn unto David my servant; thy seed will I establish for ever, and build up thy Throne to all Generations.* Though it be called Davids Throne here, *Luk. 1.32.* yet we may freely speak of Davids Throne as of Davids body, both saw corruption: there is an end of Davids Throne temporall.

That which is called Davids thron, is Christs Luk. 1.33. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob, and of his throne. Kingdom there shall be no end. *Dan. 7.14. And there was given him Dominion,*

PART. II. the Covenant of Redemption with Christ.

Dominion, and Glory, and a Kingdome, that all Nations and Languages should serve him: His Dominion is an everlasting Dominion which shall not passe away, and his Kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. *Isai. 9.7. Of the increase of his Government and peace there shall be no end: upon the Throne of David and upon his Kingdome to order it, and to establish it with judgement and with justice, from henceforth, even for ever.*

Obj. But this Covenant is made to, and with David, that Solomon, and one of Davids line, shall sit upon Davids Throne, untill the Messiah, the true beloved shall be born, *2 Sam. 7.12,13.*

Ans. Its true, and although these of Davids line sinned, yet by vertue of this Covenant, for Davids sake, God gave a Throne temporall to him, *1 King. 11.32,34.* *2 King. 8.19.* *2 King. 19.34.* But it is as true that this also, to wit, Christs everlasting Throne is here meant: *I will build up thy Throne to all generations,* for Davids Throne is not builded to all generations, nor can it be said of Davids Throne, which is said of this Throne, *Heb. 1. 8.* But unto the Son, he saith, *thy Throne, O God, is for ever and ever.* Therefore this oath and promise is made to Christ as well as to David: except we say that an everlasting Throne is more properly the Throne of David, then the Throne of Christ.

2. 19. *I have laid help upon one that is mighty, I have exalted one chosen out of the people.* 18. *I have found David my servant.* Most grave Divines (and it may be they gathered it from v. 38, 39, &c.) think that the Psalm was composed upon the occasion of the ten Tribes division from Davids house, as composed by Ethan, *1 King. 4.31.* Others, that Ethan lived in the captivity of Babylon after Davids death: But the calamity seems greater then the division of the ten Tribes. Philo refers it to the time of Jeboiam. Ambrose maketh the mighty to be Christ: So Eusebius and Hieronimus expound the whole Psalm. And our Divines say that the verity must be in Christ, for the help and deliverance of the new afflicted and captive people (for the like of this publick desolation, as v. 38,39,40, &c. never befell David after he was King) can not be laid on a dead man: And though he were now alive, the help of Davids fallen glory, v. 42,43,44, &c. heads agree must be the Messiah. Hence, the Covenant must be with him whose Throne

The Co-
venant, P.
89. must in
the maine
heads agree
must be the Messias. Hence, the Covenant must be with him whose to Jesus
CHRIST.

The Covenant with David in many things is PART. II.
Throne is built for ever, and shall not fall, v. 3, 4. and upon whom as upon a mighty one is laid the help of his fallen Church: This is not *David* only (though he be not excluded) but Christ principally.

3. With him the Covenant must be made, in his way, as with Surety, Head, and Redeemer: upon whom the enemy shall not exact; whose enemies shall be plagued, v. 22, 23. and, whose enemies shall be made his foot-stool, Ps. 110. 1, 2. and that is Christ, as well as *David*.

4. With him must the Covenant of Redemption be made in his way; of whom God saith, v. 25. *I will set his hand also in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers.* The Chalde Paraphrase expounds his hand to be his power and command, which is to *Euphrates*: as is promised, Exod. 23. 31. Num. 34. 3. but fulfilled in *David* and *Solomon*, 1 King. 4. 8. *Solomon* raigned from the sea of *Sodom* the red sea, to the *Mediterran* sea, and west, and from *Euphrates*, to the utmost of *Canaan*, North and South: but specially in Christ, who hath all Nations, Gentiles and Jews, for his own, Psal. 2. 8, 9. Psal. 22. 27. Psal. 72. 8, 9, 10, 11. Isa. 2. 1, 2. Rev. 11. 15. Christ Jesus, not *David*, Zech. 9. 10. shall speak peace to the Heathen, and his Dominion shall be even from sea to sea, and from the river, even to the ends of the earth. The Angel and Creator of Angels, who set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot upon the earth, Rev. 10. 2. is this great Conquerour.

Athanas. Serm. 4. 5. With him this Covenant must stand, of whom the Lord, contra A. v. 26. saith, *He shall cry unto me, Thou art my Father, my God, rians. and the Rock of my salvation.* 27. I also will make him my firstborn, higher then the Kings of the earth. Now this cannot well agree to *David*, at least, most coldly (as *Calvine* saith) should

Cyrillus Hierosolymit. Catech. Angels said he at any time, *Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee?* And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son. In the literall sense, it is meant of *Solomon*, 2 Sam. civit. de 7. 14. 1 Chron. 22. 10. and is meant here of *David*. *Athanasius l. 17. c. 9.* proves him hence to be God, the first begotten of many Brethren. *Hieronim. Cyprian, Cyrillus, Augustinc, Hieronimus,* contend against the Jews in Isa. 53.

PART. II. *the Covenant of Redemption with Christ.*
Jews, that this is necessary to be understood of Christ, not of *Solomon*, not of *David*, who cannot bear the Name of the *Lords* first-born, but must be so named as the Type of him who is the first-born of every creature, &c. Col. 1. 15.

6. So my mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and my Covenant shall stand fast with him. 29. His seed also will I make to endure for ever, and his Throne as the days of Heaven. If the Covenant be made with him who hath an eternall seed, then sure, principally with Christ: Without whom (saith *Calvine*, who otherwise much loves to follow the letter of the word) this Prophetic hath no effect, for eternity is only in Christ, not in *David*. Calv. Com. in locum.

Ver. 30. If his children forsake my Law, &c. a pre-occupation, if an eternall seed be promised to Christ, then although Christ and his Children sin, no matter, the hazard is not great? *constare ut vicini huic ad Christum non possent reprobatur non posse* He Answers, the danger is not to be despised; I will visite the sins, effectum, *reperietur* of *Solomon* and others, 2 Sam. 7. 14. with the rod of men: 15. *stum ventum fuerit in quo solo demum vera eternitas.* But my mercy (of the Covenant of Redemption, and of Reconciliation) I will not take from him, as I took it from Saul. This is not spoken of Christ, for he cannot sin, but of Christ's seed, his spirituall seed, and the businesse is so contrived, as the seed of Christ and his children shall not sin unpunished: but yet there is a difference between the sins of the reprobate *Saul*, and such like, and of the spirituall seed of Christ. So he takes his mercy, Covenant-mercy (but offered conditionally) utterly away from reprobats when they sin, but takes not away Covenant-mercy from the seed of Christ: And the reason is, from the nature of the Covenant, v. 34. My Covenant I will not break, &c. If then the elect and chosen of Christ should fall away, God should break and alter his Covenant: but impossible is the latter. Hence, 1. the questioning of the stability of our state, being once internally in Covenant with God, is a reproaching of God, and to make him a liar. v. 35. Once have I sworn (saith he) by my Holiness, that I will not lie unto David. Though (1.) we seem to reproach our selves in questioning our state, being once in Christ, yet the truth is, the plea is against God, and his Truth and Holiness. (2.) Its easier to beleieve generall truths, then to beleieve particular truths, in which our selves and our own affings are interested: So spirituall on God & his truth. and

The Covenant with David

and wile a snare is unbelief, that when we think we are unbelievably fearing our own treachery, we are indeed charging treacherie and falsehood upon the Holy Lord. (3.) In our sinfull plea's with our own state, *Ah! I am casten out of his sight*, Psal.31.22. Jona.2.4. we are overturning the whole Gospel and Covenant of Suretyship and Reconciliation, and we say, God lied to *David*, and to his Son *Christ*: contrair to that, *Psal. 89. 35.* Once have I sworn by my Holinesse, I will not lie unto *David*. 36. His seed shall endure for ever, for the Lord once justified thee. (4.) We How selfe shall find our selves so selfe in contraverting with God in the matter, we are in of fact touching our selves: am I in Christ? Or, am I an Apostle? the unb- state and fallen from Christ? That we are more taken up with a leevling hellish fretting for our falling in a state of condemnation, then we, chaleng. are grieved for the injurie of unbelief in traducing the Holy Lord. Justificat- with a lie. There is a taste here of *Judas* his fierie unbelief, for he complains more, Mat.27.4. I have sinned, in betraying the in- nocent blood, then that God is dishonoured, and Christs love of fended: The grief is more for the interest of I, of self, that is entered in the borders of hell, then that his glory who commands believing is overclouded. It were good in such a case to go about two things: 1. Be lesse moved that self is under these apprehensions, lost and cast away, then that the spotlesse glory of the Lord suffers: What matter of me, and of self, in comparison of the dishonour done to God? What though I, and millions like me, were tormented, if God were not offended. Now God, 1. who hath bought me. 2. Who hath accepted a ransome for me. 3. Hath justified me. 4. Hath witnesseed all these, is contradicted in all these: and yet we complain only, Ah I am fallen!

2. Leave the Question concerning your self, whether ye be cast away or no, when you cannot come to a peaceable and quiet close about it, and dwell upon the duty of fiducial relying on Gods generall Covenant to *Davids* Son, *Christ* his ingadging with him, and Christ his gracious accepting of the condition.

(5.) God sware to the Son of *David* for the seed, that is, for the whole race, and gave them all to Christ, and gave you among them; and Christ closed with the condition, though ye cannot come to application. Its good to feed the soul upon the solatious thoughts,

*PART.II.**is the Redeemers Covenant.*

thoughts, I cannot apply, but Christ whose regressions, outgoings, When ye have been from of old, from everlasting, Mic. 5. 2. did apply: cannot apply, its good to feed the For Christs everlasting outgoings are not only his eternall generation from the Father, but the decrees, the sweet eternall flowings, thoughts emanations, and issuings of Christs holy thoughts of me, of all the upo Christs individualls, by name, of the seed given and received by Christ, applying himself & his eternall acts of soul-delighting thoughts of every redeemed son of man, Prov.8.30,31. Rom.9.11. Eph.1.4. 1 Pet.1.2. the eternall acts of love, and love-thoughts to Jacob, David, Peter, you and to Mary, &c. his acts of designing you (ifever you boleaved, and other single can rub and blow up experiences under ashes, Rom.5.4. Ps.77.6.) persons. and the thousands that stand before the Throne, from eternity, his actings of eternall love, appointing and setting Chairs, Throns, Mansions, and dwelling places for this man, and this man, are so many applications of Christ to you: Feed and feast upon these, by believing the ancient Covenant, and you cannot but come to quietnesse of peace in your apprehended estate.

C H A P. X.

Christ procures the Gospel to be Preached to Reprobats, but undertakes not for them. A necessary distinction of the Covenant as Preached according to the approving will of God, and as acted upon the heart, according to the decree of God: and the differences of the members. The place, Fer.31. Heb. 8. This is my Covenant, opened.

Christundertaks

A Question it is, whether Christ undertakes in the bargain with JEHOVAH, for all visibly in Covenant, for as is said before, these in the Visible Church and their children that are baptized, b. preached to the elect Magus, Demas, and others are in Covenant thus, Act. 2. 39. to the elect for themselves, and *Anf.* Christ undertakes in his bargain, only for the elect, and undertakes that the Gospel shall be Preached to them; but because many hypocrites are mixed with the Gentiles, and Christ is given probat on a light to the Gentiles, Preached to a visible multitude, as is foretold, Isa.49.6. Isa.55.4,5. fulfilled, Act. 13. 46,47. Rom. 15. 8,9,10,11,12,&c. Therefore he procures to many hypocrites, for the elect for other ends. whom

*How the Gospel is Preached***PART.II.**

The necessary distinction of the Covenant as preached to many, and as acted upon the few chosen.

whom, and for whose Redemption, he undertakes not, that the Covenant shall be Preached by concomitancy, because they are mixed with the elect, not as an undertaker for them, but for Church Discipline, Christian Societies, and to render such unexecusable. Hence a necessary distinction of the Covenant of Grace.

The New Covenant must be considered,

1. *As Preached according to the approving and commanding will of God.*
2. *As it is internally and effectually fulfilled in the elect according to the decree and the Lord's will of purpose.*

There must of necessity, differences be holden forth between the heart of these two. For, *Anthonomians*, and legall Justitiaries miserably erre in both extremities: The former will have no New Covenant in the days of the Gospel, but that which is made with the elect: The latter will have no New Covenant but such as is made with the whole race of mankind, Pagans not excepted: So *Socinians, Arminians, Papists.*

1. They differ in the parties contracters: The parties contracters in the Covenant Preached, are God, and all within the Visible Church, whether Elect or Reprobate, and their seed, they professing the Gospel, *Mat. 28.19, 20. Att. 2.39, 40. Att. 3.15.* *Ye are the children of the Prophets, and of the Covenant which God the word of made to our fathers, &c.* and they were not all the chosen of the Gospel, God: This is against the *Anabaptists* also, and against these who are the parties will have the Gospel-Covenant to be made with all the world. But its a rich mercy that Professours are dwelling in the work-houle of the Grace of God, within the Visible Church, they are at the Preached, pool-side, near the fountain, and dwell in Immanuel's land where but God dwells *Iehovah* in his beauty, and where are the Golden Candlesticks, and where there run Rivers of Wine and Milk, such are Expectants of Grace and Glory, to such the Marriage Table is covered, eat if they will.

But the parties contracters of the Covenant in the latter respect actuated upon are, *Jer. 31. Heb. 8.* only, *the house of Judah, the taught of God, the people in whose heart the Law is engraven;* for as God teacheth not all Nations his statutes, nor sends the Gospel to them, *Ps. 147.19, 20. Att. 16.*

So

PART.II. to the reprobate, and to the elect.

341

So neither is the promise of a new heart made to all within the Visible Chuch.

2. A great difference there is in regard of the Covenant of Suretyship or Mediation, that *Christ* undertakes not for such as are only visible Covenanters, and shall never beleevex: As he prayes not for such, as High Priest, so he dies not for them, nor came as a designed Covenanting Saviour from eternity under an act of Cautionary for them. How then cometh the Gospel to them? Ans. It comes to them, 1. Not from *Christ* as their Surety, since he prayes not for any Mediation of his own toward them: But 2. for the asunder-Elects sake: so *Paul, Act. 13. 26. Men and brethren, children taken for of the stock of Abraham, and who among you feareth God, to you, the elect, & you, is the word of salvation, to you and for your cause, that ye take, may be saved, is the Gospel, sent. 2Corin. 4. 15. For all things, our suffering, our dying, are, δι υμας, for your sake. 2Tim. 2.10. Therefore I endure all things, δι αυτου εκπλούσ, for the Elects sake, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Jesus Christ, with eternall glory.* Hence these is no salvation but that which is in *Christ Jesus* our *Lord*, the Author and Cause, δι τον, and meriting Procurer of eternall salvation, *Hebr. 5. 9.* Now, though salvation be offered, yet the *salvation that is in Christ Jesus*, and merited by the ransone and price of his blood, can be decreed and intended in the Preached Gospel to none but to the elect, except they say that *Christ* did undertake to lay down his life, and to save, by his death and blood by Covenant-ingagement, all the Reprobate within the visible Church, for whom he refuses to pray, *John 17.*

But *Christ* undertook from eternity for the fulfilling of the Covenant of Grace, and bestowing salvation upon them for whom he is Surety: for it is he who makes the new Covenant, *Jer. 31. 31, 32, 33, 34. Heb. 8. 10, 11.*

3. There is a twofold consideration of Gods will: One is called *The distinction of his approving, commanding, and forbidding will, when God reveals to us what is our obligation and duty, and what is morally good, of approbation what is good or evill in poynt of our duty, whether it come to passe or not, and of his will of pleasure, what the Lord hath decreed shall come to passe, or not come to passe, whether good or evill, is of speciall consideration in this point.*

good,

Covenant as Preached

PART. II.

good, and to be done, because he commands it, and what is morally evill, and to be eschewed, because he forbids it. Now whether this good or evill shall come to passe, or never come to passe, it is all one, as to the nature of the approving will of God, for though the repenting of Cain, and saving faith of the traitour Judas never came to passe, yet it is the duty of the one and the other to repent and beleeve, and the Lord commands and approves their obedience as good, though he never decreed by his good pleasure, that the obedience of Cain and Judas should come to passe. But his will of pleasure, his discerning will, or his counsell, purpose, or decree, is his pleasure, and appointment of things, not as good and evill, or as agreeable unto, or repugnant, and contrair to an equal and just command of God, but of things as they come to passe, or shall never come to passe. Hence, in a premissive decree, God appointed the crucifying of the Lord of Life, the not breaking of a bone of Christ, but he did never will the crucifying of his Son, but forbids and hates it as execrable murther; as touching his approving will: in a word, his commanding will is of things lawfull or unlawfull, what we who are under a Law, ought to do, or not to do. His will of pleasure is of things fixed and resolved upon, what he purposes; good or evill, shall come to passe, or not come to passe: And by the way we may make good use of the foul sinnes that fall out; for holy and clean is that hand and counsell of the Lord, Act. 2.27,28. which determined what Herod and Pilate should do: Yet did the Jews with wicked hands slay and crucifie him, Act. 2.23. Add O what beauty of wisedom and mercy do they see here, who make that foul work of the slayers of Christ the subject matter of a fair Psalm? Rev.5.12. The thousands before even when the Throne, sing, worthy is the Lamb that was slain: But were the foulest works fall they worthy who slew him? was it a worthy fact in the murthers of the Lord of Glory? No: but grudge not at the beauty of his work, who over rules all; but adore and praise. Let us not wrestle with his holy dispensation, and say, Ah! What an unoward Government of the world is it, that God should suffer Angels and Men to sin, and overturn the whole fabrick of Heaven and earth by sin? Nay, he hath by their fall brought in a more glorious order, When he that sitteth upon the Throne, saith, Behold

We are to adore the Lord in re-gard of the him, Act. 2.23. Add O what beauty of wisedom and mercy do they see here, who make that foul work of the slayers of Christ the subject matter of a fair Psalm? Rev.5.12. The thousands before even when the Throne, sing, worthy is the Lamb that was slain: But were the foulest works fall they worthy who slew him? was it a worthy fact in the murthers of the Lord of Glory? No: but grudge not at the beauty of his work, who over rules all; but adore and praise. Let us not wrestle with his holy dispensation, and say, Ah! What an unoward Government of the world is it, that God should suffer Angels and Men to sin, and overturn the whole fabrick of Heaven and earth by sin? Nay, he hath by their fall brought in a more glorious order, When he that sitteth upon the Throne, saith, Behold

PART. II. according to the approving will of God.

343

bold I make all things new, Rev. 21. 5. and its said, 2 Pet. 3. 13. Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new Heavens and a new earth, wherein dwells righteousnesse. Peter and the Disciples were to pray that they should not enter into temptation, Mar. 26. 41. and were obliged not to be offended and scattered by the sufferings of the Lord; but they were not to blame and grudgingly to judge that holy decree Prophecied by Zechariah, of God in and revealed to themselves, Zech. 13.7. Mat. 26. 31. I will smite some cases, the Shepherd, and the Sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. His part is clean and holy, even when he throwes the wicked in hell; and they are obliged to sing the Psalm of the glory of his spotlesse Justice, and that eternally, as these who are before the Throne are to hold up, for all ages, the new song of the glory of his mercy and free-grace.

This ground being laid down, the Holy Ghost speaks of the New Covenant two ways in Scripture.

1. According to the *approving will of God*, as it stands, of promises, precepts, threatenings; and shewes both what God doth by promises, and what we are obliged to do in point of duty, Act. 2.39. The promise is to you and to your children. Act. 3. 25. Ye are the children of the Prophets, and of the Covenant which God made with our fathers. 2 Cor. 6. 17. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, —— And I will be a Father to you, &c. This is the whole New Covenant, holding out our duty, ordaining those that profess, to be baptiz'd, received members of the Visible Church, the body to be edified as a visibly Covenanted people: This excludes not, but includes the Lords taking in members to the invisible and mysticall body: which is to be observed against Anabaptists and Antinomians.

The Lord speaks often of the Covenant of Grace not so much as Preached, quia fadus annunciatum (though it so also must be speaks of), but as fulfilled by God, and acted in an effectuall powerfull way, upon the hearts of the elect only, and that according to nant, Jer. 31. 31,32. Jer. 32. Ezek. 11. Ezek. ch. 36. Isa. 59. according to his decree, and what he works in our hearts, and not according to his will of command, and what we ought of duty to do.

the

the Lords decree of election, and will of pleasure: So speaks the Lord of the Covenant. *Jer. 31.21, 32, 33. Jer. 32.37, 38, 39. Ezek. 11.16, 17, 18, 19, 20. Ezek. 36.25, 26, 27, &c. Isa. 59.20, 21.* in a pure Evangelick way, and in these places the Lord speaks of the Covenant, not so much as it contains our duty, as principally it holds forth his Gospel promise, what he shall effectually do according to his decree and will of pleasure over-ruling our corrupt will: which *Papists, Arminians, and Socinians* utterly mistake, and will have it to be spoken of the Covenant as Preached according to the Lords approving and commanding will, whereas there is not one word of a command in these places, and therefore they

*The mi-
stake of So-
ciens and
Arminians
touching
the places,
Jer. 31.
Eze. 11, &c.*

say that these places speak nothing for the efficacy and mighty power of God in converting sinners. 2. The *Anabaptists* from these places say none are to be baptized, but such as are so in Covenant, and as have these promises fulfilled in them, in whom the Lord hath wrought a new heart, and a new spirit; and that there is no external Covenanting under the New Testament. But then the whole *Gentiles*, *Isa. 55.4, 5. Isa. 11.10. Isa. 60. 1, 2, 3, &c.*

*Crispe, all Na-
tions, Isa. 2. 1, 3. all flesh, Isa. 40. 5. Psal. 65. 2. all the
Charit ex-
alted, Ser. 6
pag. 159.* *Kindreds of the earth, Psal. 22.26, 27. the Kingdoms of the world,* Rev. 11.15. Should be all chosen to life, taught of God, such as have the Law of God engraven in their inward parts, as *Jer. 31.33. Ezek. 36.26.* which is most false.

*The mi-
stake of An-
tinomians as
touching
these places
Jer. 31. Eze. 26.
11. cap. 36.
26. Isa. 59.
etc. For
they own
no Cova-
enant of
grace, but
that in
which God
besides this,
doth all, &
we are
sheer pa-
tientis.*

Prophecies that the *Gentiles from the rising of the Sun, to the going down thereof, Mal. 1.11.* shall be, under the New Testament, the people of God by Covenant, *Isa. 19.18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25. Isa. 59.20, 21. Isa. 55.10. Jer. 31. 31. Ezek. 11. 19. Ezek. 36.26.*

3. The *Antinomians* do also owne no Covenant of grace, but this wherein the new heart is given, and the condition is both promised and given. And D. *Crispe* saith, All other Covenants of which God God besides this, run upon a stipulation, and the promises run upon conditions altogether upon both sides.—The New Covenant is without any conditions whatsoever upon mans part: Man is tyed to no condition that he must perform, that if he do not perform, the Covenant is made void by him.

Ans.

Ans. Man is under a condition of believing, and tyed to believe, so as the wrath of God abides upon him, he shall not see life, nor be justified, if he believe not, *Joh. 3.18. 36. Rom. 10.6, 7, 8, 9.* (2.) *Man is tyed to no condition which he must perform,* say which, he can perform without the grace of God. For have he grace, or have he no grace (the Holy Lord (O if we could plead for him and his High Sovereignty) is debtor to no man) he is so obliged to believe as he sins against the Preached Covenant and forefaults his salvation, if he believe not, and so breaks the Covenant, but devils or men cannot make it void, he may make it of no effect to himself he being an heir of damnation, but being a chosen vessel God shall work him to believe, and he makes it not void to himself. If it be said, that the New Covenant is without any conditions whatsoever, upon mans part: It says too much for the believers being under no debt, no obligation of conscience to believe, or to any duty, but as the Spirit their only Law leads them: And if the Spirit breath not upon them to forbear adultery, pericide, sodomie, or to belieeve, pray, praise, hear, mourn for sin, as Peter, and David, they sin not, for sin is a transgression of the

*The Anti-
nomians and Familiists confound the efficient cause of our obedience, the efficient cause of obedi-
ence, which is the Spirit of Grace, and the objective cause, which is the holy rule of the command, promise, or threatening. For though the Spirit be absent, and not given at all to men in the state of nature, yet do they sin in committing of Sodomie, and in not praying, for they are obliged not to sin, and commanded in the first Command to pray to a revealed God. I know Adam was not obliged before he sinned to pray to Jesus Christ Mediator, as Steven, Act. 7. prayed to him. The Spirit by grace does help men from us to obey the command and the Law, but the Spirit is not the Law, in either Law or Go-
spel, & free*

*all duties when the actual influences of the Spirit
actuall in-
fluence the man should not commit this wickednesse,
nor*

*Answer to Antinomians***PART.II.**

nor omit this duty, seeing present necessity of one starving for want, of one drowning in a water crying for my help, is a call of God to perform the duty. And if the Spirit give inward warning that I should do the duty, yet if the Spirit actually breath not and contribute not his actuall influence, the man hath no warrant of any command or Law to act without his rule, since the Spirit acts not at all: and cannot so be guilty in the committing of the most vile abomination; for where no Law is, no sin is.

M. Crispe pag. 160. brings this Argument, *The Covenant is everlasting: if the Covenant stand upon any conditions to be performed by man, it cannot be an everlasting Covenant, except man were so confirmed in righteousness that he should never fail in that which is his part, but he daily fails, & so daily breaks the Covenant?*

The believer is confirmed so under strong confirmation, to wit, a promise that he will work the condition of the Covenant, there is no other condition required then that, Ezek. 36. 26. *I will put in you a heart of flesh, as he can not but believe, and cause you walk in my statutes.* Zech. 12. 10. *I will pourre upon the house of David, the Spirit of grace and supplication, and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, that is, they shall believe in me:* That is a promise unto me, shall come unto me (that is, believe in me) and him that cometh, I will in nowise cast out. 2. It is to question the perseverance of the Saints to say, that God shall not confirm them into the day of the Lord, as he promiseth, 1 Cor. 1. 8. Phil. 1. 6. 1 Pet. 1. 4. 5. (3.) Our daily doubtings of unbelief will not prove that we so break the Covenant, as our fails and daily slips of unbelief of the elect should render the Covenant void, and null, so as it should leave off to be an everlasting Covenant, for such failings are indeed sins against the love of the Redeemer and Surety of the Covenant, for his love should constrain us to believe at all times, and to hope to the end. Nor does the eternity of the Covenant depend upon our believing, but upon his grace who gives us to believe: but it's ed renders otherwayes in the Covenant of Works.

The doubtings & unbeliefs of the elect make the Covenant of Grace null, so as it should not be a possible way of life to them, as the least sin against the Covenant of Works renders the Covenant null, so that it can never be a possible way of salvation again to those that once sin.

PART.II. covenant conditions in the new Covenant.

D. Crispe, pag. 162, in Jer. 31. Ezek. 36. Heb. 8. and other passages where the Tenor of the Covenant is contained, there is no word of a tie, pag. 163, 164. there is not one word that God saith to man, thou must do this. But God takes all upon himself, and saith he will do this: Yea, if faith were the condition of the Covenant, the fault of the broken Covenant should be his who works, not faith in us.

Ans. Here is the mistake of many who imagine that, *Jer. 31.* The Lord speaks not *Ezek. 36. Heb. 8.* the Holy Ghost setteth down the whole intire *Jer. 31. Heb. 8.* summe and tenor of the new Covenant, which he doth not. For of the 1. he speaketh nothing of the whole parties of the Preached Co- whole Co- venant, which is all within the Visible Church: these he speaks of here, are only beleevers in whom he works a new heart. 2. He speaks nothing of Covenant Commandements, nothing of Cove- preache as all in the nant duties directly. 3. Nothing of the condition required of us. 2. He speaks not of the Covenant under the reduplication as Church, as Preached, or as a treatie offered to elect and reprobate, as Math. many sup- 21. 31, 32. Luk. 1. 72. Act. 2. 39. and as every where holden out pose, as a visible Covenant made with Abraham and his seed in both Old and New Testament, according to the approving will of God.

But he speaks only of the fulfilling of some speciall promises of the Covenant, heart teaching, and the efficacy of the Covenant. 2. Only upon the elect who shall persevere to the end, *Jer. 31. 35. Jer. 32. 40. Isa. 59. 20, 21.* (3.) Only according to the Lords decree and will of pleasure, not what we ought to do, but what the Lord by his powerfull grace will do in us. As 1. I will engrave my Law in their heart. 2. I will be their God. 3. They shall be my people, to wit, effectually as gifted with a new heart, and such as shall never be casten off, but shall persevere to the end, v. 35, 36, 37. *Jer. 32. 40.* otherwise by exterrnall calling all the carnall and stiffe hearted Jews were his people in Covenant, *Isa. 1. 3. Isa. 5. 25. Ps. 81. 8. Ps. 50. 7. Deut. 7. 7.* as is in every page almost of the Old Testament. (4.) They shall be taught of God, 31, 34. (5.) I will forgive their iniquitie, v. 34. (6.) I will give them perseveriance, and never cast them off, v. 35, 36, 37. so that the Covenant is a metonymie. This is my Covenant that I will make with them: that is, these are effects, fruits, and bleilings

blessings of the Covenant which I shall by my effectuall and mighty grace work in them.

The scope of the Epistle to the Hebrews is not to treat of the Co-venant, Preached in his nature, partis, promis- fes, pre- cepts, con- cause he is Mediator of a better Covenant: he is a day-s-man who layes his hands upon both parties at variance, both upon God and man, to bring them together: See Job 9. 32, 33. that is, a Medi- lency of a Covenant; So that here he saith, Christ is ingadged to Christ the Father in a more spirituall and heavenly Covenant. None above Angels, Moses, Priests, sa- crifices, and pardoned? Were not Moses, Aaron, and many of the people in a king of God, sanctified, pardoned, and justified according to that Co- the Cove- nant? Ans. They were justified and sanctified, but not by the letter of the Covenant of Grace, nor by sacrifices, shadows, con- the heart of ditionall promises, threatens, but by Christ, I the Lord Redee- the elect, mer will write my Law in their heart, &c. It is then contrair to especially Christ ex- cells all. of the literall Law-Covenant, or the conditionall Covenant of Grace, it strongly concludes his point, to speak but of the half (though the choiest half) of the Covenant, as fulfilled in the elect, and that exalts Christ and his Ministry, that he hath a Ministry upon the heart. Now it is a shame to lay the blame of our not believing on Christ, be it a condition of the Covenant, or be it none: Christ works all our works in us, and by this reason it must be his fault (hallowed be his Name) that we sin at all, because he works not in us contrair acts of obedience. But to whom is the Sovereign Lord debtor? And therefore this Antinomian way must be refused.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

of the promises made to Christ in the Covenant of Mediati- on, not to Christ God, but to Christ God and Man the Me- diator, and these of twelve sorts.

TO Christ-God promises of reward cannot be made, nor can Christ-God suffer, but they are made to the Person God-Man, for the encouraging of the Man Christ, and he encourages himself therewith, Isa. 50. 7, 8. Christ-Man lived the life of faith by depending upon God for the joy set before him, and therefore did run, Heb. 12. our life should be sweeter, should we fetch all our comforts and actings from his influences by the faith of daily dependency. Faith here promises no it self good, Isa. 26. 12. If. 30. 31. Ps. 118. 10, 11. Ps. 16. 9, 10, 11.

If the kinds of promises made to Christ be asked for: Then 1. Justification: no such promise as remission of sin can be made to him, but a two-fold Justification must be promised to him. A Law-Justification, sedet Christus, this do and live: For the promise was made to the first Adam, to wit, that he should be justified and live, if he give consumate, and perfect obedience to the Law; now this Christ did in all things. 2. There is a Justification of Christ from the band of suretyship, he having compleatly satisfied for our debts, this was due to him, and promised, 1 Tim. 3. 16. Justified in the Spirit. Rom. 1. 4. Declared to be the Son of God, by the resurrection from the dead: That was a judicial declaration. Acts 2. 24. Having loosed the pains of death, ^{as a King by authority and judicially looses a} Christ judi- prisoner from his fetters, having no more to say against him. Psa. 105. 20. The King sent and loosed him. Isa. 50. 8. He is near death, that justifies me, who is he that contends with me (in judgement?) came out, Rom. 6. 9. Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth and we in no more, death shall no more have Lordship or Lordly dominion over him, over him, ^{but it's over her} So the word, Luk. 22. 25. The Kings of the Gentiles bear dominion over them, Rom. 14. 9. Death had some kingly dominion in Justice and by Law over him: But Christ by Law of satisfactory payment, who was also the mighty Son of God, wrought himself out of the grips and fetters of death: So in

*The promises are made to Christ**PART. II.*

in Christ death hath lost Law-dominion over the believer. It is against Justice and the just Covenant between Jehovah and Christ, that we should be for ever among the worms and not at length be loosed from the sting and victory of the grave : O death, thou shalt, thou must let the captives go free, *1 Cor. 15.55. Hos. 13.* the prison must be a free Jayle, when iron gates and fetters are broken. We have in Christ a good cause, the cause and action of Law is win, and carried on our favours.

2. There is a promise of heavenly influences made to Christ, A promise *Isa. 50.4.* *He wakeneth morning by morning, he wakeneth mine ear to hear as the learned.* 5. *The Lord hath opened mine ear, and I was not rebellious.* Some great Divines say, Christ had no sleepy nor closed ear : he must there speak of *Isaiah.* But so there was no sinfull drynesse in Christ; Was He not therefore anointed ? *Isa. 42.1.* *I will put my Spirit upon him.* Then all influences are promised also, *Isa. 11.2.* *The Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him : — 3. And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord, and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, &c.*

Christ was assured he could not sin, and so of influences to duties, Job. 5.30. Job. 8.26, 27, 38, 50, 55. Job. 10.38. though he

wanted influences at a time, as touching consolation and the felt fruition of God, being forsaken for a time, *Psal. 22.1. Luk. 22.44. Math. 27.45.* But Adam, as he was not to believe perseverance, leue he nor yet sinfully to fear falling : so neither was he to believe influences to all acts of obedience, they not being promised to him. Yet was not Adam to believe his own reprobation ; for it was neither true nor a revealed truth. Then the only nearest way against deadleve his nesse and drynesse, is to have recourse to the fountain and fulnesse of life that is in Christ. Literall quickning of our selves, miskening Christ, out of whose fulnesse we receive, produceth but literall fardinesse. 3. The speciall and cardinall promise. (*I will be your God, Psal. 89.26. and he shall cry to me, Thou art my Father, will be bis my God, and the rock of my salvation.*) is bound up with Christ God, made in the Covenant of Suretyship, and is the key and corner stone of to Christ. the frame and building of the Covenant of Grace, *Job. 20.17. Go to my Brethren, (faith Christ to Magdalen) and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and to your Father, and to my God and your*

The great promise, I will be his God, *Psalm. 89.26.* and he shall cry to me, *Thou art my Father, will be bis my God, and the rock of my salvation.*) is bound up with Christ God, made in the Covenant of Suretyship, and is the key and corner stone of to Christ. the frame and building of the Covenant of Grace, *Job. 20.17. Go to my Brethren, (faith Christ to Magdalen) and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and to your Father, and to my God and your*

PART. II. as the Surety of the Covenant.

your God. Its comfortable talking that Christ saith to us, I and you Believers are the Children of the same Father, and have one Covenant-relation to one God: though, as is said, Christ bear the relation of a Surety-Covenant to God, and we of a Covenant of Mediation ; and notwithstanding of the differences, yet it may be said that Christ and Believers are in one writ, and one letter of Christ and beleevers acquittance dischargeth both from condemnation, Christ from are in one condemnation of punishment, us from condemnation of inherent writ.

guiltiness and punishment. Blessed we to be unite to him every way, and to joine our Amen and consent to the Covenant : yea, and in regard of profession, we should subscribe and write our names to it, *Isa. 44.1, 2, 3.* Our maimed and broken and half consent proclaims an overly and cold Covenanting. Its true, parties are but once married, once Covenanting by oath is as good as twenty : but frequent and multiplied acts of marriage-love add a great deal of firmnesse and of strength to the Marriage band, they are confirmations of our first subscription. Renewed acts of faith to take Christ for Jesus and Redeemer, and renewed acts of love, do more and more ingadge the heart to Christ as Lord and King.

Little conversing with Christ deadens marriage-love. Rare visits and thin bring on worn out acquaintance. We are apt to complain he visits us seldom : that is because we have not the childish hite of consolation and feeling, we refuse to work, and yet we should look at comfort for the duty, and not on the duty for the comfort, when its a duty to our Father ; And who looks upon the comfort both as a comfort and a duty ? *1 Thes. 4.18. Comfort one another with these words :* and so must they comfort themselves. Comfort is mainly for believing, *Colos. 2.2. Heb. 6.18.* and there is a feast and a fill of joy in believing, *Rom. 15.13.* We seek but a comfort and a joy of clearing and solacing our selves, and that is all.

4. There is promised to Christ a seed, *Isa. 53.10. When thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed.* *Heb. 2.13. Behold I and the children that God hath given me.* Jacob by Covenant served for Rachel : Christ also served, suffered and died of love for his Spouse, *Eph. 5.25, 26. Isa. 53.* he shall be satisfied. A Redeemed seed was his end, and we endure hard labour for a desired end, and we are sick till we get the great end we aim at.

VVe are to
make fir-
mer our
marriage-
love with
Christ.

Our mis-
take touch-
ing com-
forts and
duties.

A seed is
promised
to Christ,
seed was
much in
the heart of
Christ.

The promises are made to Christ. PART.II.

It's true the honour of God was the speciall end, Job. 12.28. c.17.1. yet it was heart satisfaction to Christ to have all his off-spring and children with him, Job. 17.24. How should Christ not be our end? See if ye do all, and suffer all, to fetch this shoar, Phil. 3. 8, 9. Examine comparative ends, by-ends, self ends. Its impossible a man can be ignorant of his last and main end, so strong an impulsion it hath upon his heart.

5. There's not only a feed, but a rich conquest, the heathen promised, and the ends of the earth, Psal. 2.8,9. *Dominion from sea to sea;* Zech. 9.10. Psal. 72.8. Dan. 7.14. and both this and the former satisfies Christ. There is not a sight so desirable to the eye of Christ, as to see all his Redeemed ones conquering and last in the fields, and fairly landed on the shoar, passed Gun-shot and reach of all temptations. We satisfy our unbelieving hearts too much; Ah! who can stand, temptations are so strong. But as by the Lord, Je HO V A H fully satisfies Christs soul, his hope, his aim and intention, therefore ~~the~~ end in all the Articles of the Covenant of Redemption: so fear are we not now, Je HO V A H cannot break off the Treaty with his Son, nor can Christ be left unsatisfied.

Strength is promised. 6. The Lord promises help to Christ against his enemies, Psal. 89.21. *With him my hand shall be established, mine arm also shall to Christ strengthen him.* There be many against Christ, but he hath a divine furniture of strength. Hence protection is promised to him in the discharge of his Office, Isai. 49.2. *In the shadow of his hand hath he hid me, and made me a polished shaft: in his quiver hath he hid me.* The outlettings and manifestations of strength and furniture that is in the head redounds to a seasonable supplie of all his afflicted ones, that they shall not be overwhelmed.

Because victory is promised to Christ over all his enemies: *The Lord to Christ will not leave his soul in grave,* Psal.16.10. Therefore (saith the Lord speaking Covenant-wayes, Isai. 53.12.) *will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong: because he hath poured out his soul unto death.* He shall triumph over principalities and powers, Col. 2.15. Luk. 11.22. and Christ and shall trake all his enemies his footstool, and subdue them, so that the Sabots he shall fill the pits with the dead bodies, Psal.110.1,6. and plague all his enemies, Gen. 12.3. Psal. 89.23. *I will beat down his foes before*

PART.II. *as the Surety of the Covenant.*

before his face, and plague them that hate him. It supports not a little out faith, that when we tremble before temptations from Satan and the mighty of the world, the Lord hath written & Covenanted to Christ all his and our enemies destruction. Our turning away our eye from the Covenant is the cause why we succumb; Christ, under his sorest assault with hell and hells purfevants and officers, devils, and the felt anger of a forsaking God, dowlbes his grips on the Covenant, *my God, my God,* Psal. 22.1. Mat. 27. *O my Father,* Mat. 26. Psal. 89. 26. *He shall cry to me, my Father, my God.* A Covenant is (as it were) more then a promise, being a solemn promise in condiscension of mercy: So the Church, Psal.89.38,39. and Jer.14.21. and the afflicted people, Isa.63.16. and Dan.c.9. 4,5,6. Ezra 9.6.10.15. Hezekiah *in a day of rebuke,* Isa.37.16, 20. the slain Church, Psal.79.9. Psal.80.1. flee to this shoar in their stormes, and the Lord professes he will be broken, intreated, and holden by his Covenant, Lev.26.41,42.

8. There is a promise of glory, of a Name above all names made to Christ for his sufferings, Psal.16.9,10.11. Isa.53.12. Act.5.31. of glory, is and to such as suffer with him, and overcome, Luk. 22.29,30. Rev. 3.21. Rev. 2.10. As also, he shall bear all the glory of his Fathers house, Isa. 22. Zech.7.13.

9. The Lord promiseth forbearing-mercy to the children of Christ, if they sin, he will correct them in measure, and in a Fatherly way give them repentance, but not remove the Covenant-mercy. So hath the Lord Covenanted and articed in the writ with his Son, a rod to children, to difference them from bastards, Heb.12. And he that hath his fire in Zion, and his furnace in Jerusalem, writes this up as a Covenant-mercy, that he will not suffer them to perish with the world. Hence, the rods of the wicked stand booked in the Covenant of Works among the curses of the book of the Law, Lev. 26. Deut. 28.15,16,17, &c. our rods are Covenanted mercies in the compact between the Lord and Christ, and written in the Gospel-book of the Covenant of Grace.

10. All the promises of the Gospel, are first (as it were) promised to Christ; the Gospel is put over in his hand. Jesus is the Angel, Rev.10.1. *cloathed with a Cloud, and a Rain-bow on his head.* v. 2. *And hath in his hand a little book open;* the Testament,

Rods in
mercy are
Covenan-
ted to us.

The promises are made to Christ

PART. II.

ment, and the book of all the promises to dispense them to such as the Father hath given to him, to give his Spirit to his own, to intercede and advocate for them, to ratifie and seal them with his blood.

An headship is promised to him an head-ship, and power of judgment, over man and Angels, with an oath, that to him all knees shall bow, Rom. 14.11. Isa.45.23. Phil. 2.10. and that he shall adde his seal to Gospel-hell and vengeance inflicted upon the despisers of the Gospel, Luk. 19.14. Mat.26.64. The threatnings against Gospel unbelleef are put in the hands of Christ, not as Redeemer and Surety, but as a refused Surety and King, whom unbelievers will not have to raign over them.

12. Adam brake the whole frame of heaven and earth: and to creatures in the Second ADAM the whole broken and marred lump of the Covenant Creation is promised, that he may be the repairer of the waste of works places. Isa.49.8. *I will preserve thee, and give thee for a Covenant-breaker, nant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherite the desolate heritages.* Ps.72.16. Under the raign of the Messiah, There shal be a handful of corn upon the top of the mountains, the fruit thereof shall shake like Lebanon. Jer.31.12. Therefore shall they come and sing in the height of Zion, and shall flow together for the goodness of the Lord (Christ) for wheat, and for wine, and for oyl, and in again & for the young of the flock, and of the herd.

1. The Lord made all things at the beginning very good, Gen. 1.31. Heaven, Earth, Sun, Moon, Beasts, Birds, &c. being all under Co. venancers. made servants to man, were in a manner fellow-Covenanters in their kind with man in the Covenant of Works: As a King covenanters with a great Family, his servants and dependers have the benefite of the Kings Covenant-peace, all obeyed Adam without jarring: but when Adam sinned, war between the Lord, and between the Master and the servants is denounced, the earth is cursed for his sake, Genes. 3.17, 18. and Lions and wild Beasts rise against him like loose borderers. But in the Covenant of Grace, Hos. 2.18, 19, 20. the beasts of the field, the fowls of the heaven, the Sun which shall not smite by day, nor the Moon by night, Ps. 121.6. are by the Surety of the Covenant brought in a new league: yea the stones of the field, Job 5.23. are compartners of the peace, and

PART. II. *as to the Surety of the Covenant.*

and Christ the King takes off the foretaultry upon all, and looses the arrestment of vanity that by sin was laid upon the Creation, which was made sick like a woman travelling in birth, Rom. 8. 20, 21, 22. Hence are they blessed in Christ to the Saints, Deut. 28. 4, 5. Levit. 26. 4, 5. 6. and the Angels come in under their Head Christ, Col. 2. 10. and serve the new restored heirs, Heb. 1. 13: for their Heads sake.

2. God hath appointed Christ the Heir of all things, and, Heb. 1.2. hath given a Charter to Christ and put in bread, garments, houses and all to the Believer in Christ the first Heir: his great evidence is, 1Cor.3.21. *All things are yours.*

3. He makes all things new, Rev. 21.5. This Christ mends the broken gold ring which was broken by the first unattentive and rash Heir Adam; So that now Heavens, Earth, Mountains, Isa. 49. 13. sea, trees, fields, Psal.96. 11, 12, 13. are commanded to sing a Gospel-Psalm of joy, because Christ the new King and Restorer of all is come to the Throne: yea let the floods clap their hands, Psal.98.9. and he purposes to purge with fire the great Pest-house infected with sin and under bondage of corruption, Rom. 8. 21. 2Pet.3.10, 11: that he may set up the new world in Gospel-beauty, the new heavens and the new earth, 2Pet.3.13. Isa.65.17. Isa. 66.22. Rev.21.1. Oh what a life to have a cottage and a little yard of herbs in that new World, and how base to be but Citizens of this World!

CHAP. XII.

The condition and Properties of the Covenant of Redemption.

Q. **W**HAT need is there of any condition to be performed by Christ being Man, or of any Covenant? Ans. The same Question may be of the need of an oath to Christ, Psal. 110. *The Lord hath sworn and will not repent, Thou art a Priest, &c.* 2. The same necessity, in regard of infinite wisedome that our Redeemer should be obedient to the death of the Crosse, Phil. 2.8. and be under the Law, Gal.4.4. and keep his Fathers Commandements, and abide in his love, Job.15.10. requires also a Covenant of obedience upon the part of Christ-Man; for all men being born under

The Properties of the Covenant of Suretyship. PART. II.
the Law and Covenant of Works, Christ-Man also must be under
the same. And then Christ the Mediator was to give obedience to
a particular Commandement of laying down his life for sinners, and
this required an ingadgegement by way of Covenant, and so a condition
of obedience to perform what this peculiar Law of Suretyship
required of him, to wit, to lay down his life.

No such condition is required of Christ or of us, nor was he under any threatening, but had confirming grace from the womb. 3. Its not a condition of indifferency which is required of Christ, such as is required of Adam, in which there is a hazard of failing and coming short of the reward. Adams Covenant had both threatnings and promises, and so hath our Covenant of Reconciliation, though in another way : see Psal. 89. 30, 31, 32. But the Covenant of Suretyship hath promises most large that are made to Christ : but no threatnings are laid before the Man Christ that are to be read in the Scripture. There was no hazard nor possibility, in regard of the Personall Union, that Christ could sin : yea, in regard that Christ from the womb was both a Traveller, a Viator and an enjoyer and Comprehensor, and had the Spirit above measure from his birth, as Man he had gifted to him the confirming grace which is now given to the Elect Angels in their Head Christ ; And therefore there was somewhat like a condition necessary, and as the members enter to glory through obedience, so also the Covenanted Head, Luk. 24. 26. Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter in to his glory ?

Q. 2. What was the speciall condition of the Covenant of Suretyship ? Ans. The Covenant being a bargain of buying a people to God, then the payed price and ransome must be the duely formal condition. As for obedience to the Morall Law, it was the condition of the Covenant of Works, to which the Man Christ, as Man, was obliged, that he might have right to Law-justification and life eternall, *jure & merito fœderali operum*, by the Law and federall merit (I mean merit by passion and faithfull Law-suretyship promise, not of condignitie) of the Covenant of Works, that he might be saved.

Law-holinesse in Christ did not exclude naturall grace as the Law-holinesse of Adam : for it was the perfect

PART. II. *The holy qualifications in the Surety of the Covenant.* 357
fect conformity of Christs nature, his soul, understanding, will, affections, and all his actions internall and externall with the holy Law of God.

Hence the heart and inclinations of Christ stood ever right and stright to the Law. He exercised no affection in *puris naturalibus*, The holy his anger came not out in pure naturall anger and no more, but it came out in acts of zeal ; Nor his joy in pure naturall joy, though Christs sinnesse, but in joy of the Holy Ghost. And in the whole Man Christ was a perfect masse, and, as it were, a compleat body of all gracious qualifications.

Isai. 11. He received the Spirit of knowledge and was ignorant of nothing he ought to know : Disputed with the Doctors being wisedome of twelve years old : The world knew not his School or Teacher. Hence his wisedome and practicall understanding of the Law of God and practicall conclusions, He had the *Spirit of counsel*, as the greatest of Statesmen for Government, Isa. 52. 13. Behold my Servant shall deal prudently. And so, when we are in perplexities and know not what to do, he can lead the blind in a way they undantoned know not, Isa. 11. 1, 2. He hath the Spirit of might and courage, boldnes of an undantonned Spirit, yet conjoined with counsell, no fool-hardiness, but the resolute ventorioultesse of faith, Isa. 42. 4. He shall not fail nor be discouraged : Heb. broken, till he have set judgement in the earth. Our softnesse of unbelief, at the blowing of a feather or stirring of a leaf, brings on falling of Spirit and swooning. He hath the boldnesse of faith to beleive victory before the battell, Isa. 50. 9. *Lo they all shall wax old as a garment, the moth shall eat them up.* He hath hope from the womb, Psal. 22. 9. *Thou art he that took me out of the womb, thou didst make me hope when I was on my mothers breast.* And for the joy set before him, he endured the crosse and despised the shame, Heb. 12. 2. His hope.

And the Spirit of the fear of the Lord made him quick in understanding, that is, the high and reverent apprehensions of God. His holy made him quick to smell or sent (so the word imports) the snares sagacitie and temptations in the work of Redemption plotted by men and devils. So excelled he in righteousness, which as a girdle went about his loynes, both in judging, and in discharging the trust put upon him by the Lord who lard the key of David and the Government meat.

The holy qualifications in the Surety

ment upon his shoulder: his obedience to his Father, and continuing in his love, *Joh. 15.10.* and thirsting to do the will of the Father, *Joh. 4.34.* His zeal to his Fathers house should be a fair coppie for us to follow. He was meeknesse it self, *Isa. 53.7.* *1 Pet. 2.23,24.* much in praying, beleeving, rejoicing in spirit, *Luk. 6.12.* *Psal. 16.9,10,11.* tender to the weak of the flock, *Isa. 40.11.* *He shall feed his flock like a sheep-herd, he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry them in his bosom, and he shall gently lead these that are with young.* *Isa. 42.2.* *He shall not cry, nor lift up (a shout) nor cause his voice to be heard in the street.*

3. A bruised reed shall he not break, and the smoaking flax shall be not quench.

His compassion to sinners.

He was most compassionate to sinners, inviting them to come, *Mat. 11.28,29.* crying and shouting with a loud voice to the thirsty, *Joh. 7.37.* journeyed from heaven to seek and to save the lost, *Luk. 19.10.* came to serve them with his heart blood, *Mat. 20.28.* his bowels were turned with compassion to perishing souls that wanted the feeding Pastors, *Mat. 9.36.* *He sighed deeply in his Spirit,* at the perverse unbelief of his deadly enemies the Pharisees, *Mar. 8.12.* wept and shed tears at the foreseen destruction of Jerusalem, *Mat. 23.37.* *Luk. 19.41,42.* and yet that City slew him. Loved as the tender Physician, to be much in company with sick sinners, *Mat. 9.11,12.* *Luk. 15.1,2,3.* *Luk. 19.1,2,3,9,10.* O what rejoicing! when he layes the lost sheep on his shoulder, *Luk. 15.5.* When, *v.20.* he sees the home-coming sinner, he ran, fell on his neck, and had compassion upon him, and kissed him, and made a feast, and sang and danced for joy. There is no humility like his, to wash the feet of his servants: there is no patience like his, who, when he was reviled, reviled not again:

His pain- gain: When he suffered, he threatened not, but committed himself full way of to him that judgeth bighteously, *1 Pet. 2.23.* *As a lamb dumb be- gaining of fore the Shearer,* *Isa. 53.* How gaining of souls was he, who preached in the Temple, in the Synagogues, in the Villages, in the Ship, at the Sea side, at every Table he came to, at every Feast, at every confluence of people, at every way side, and stood still and talked with a woman, and wanted his dinner upon that occasion? And thought he dined well when he gained to the Lord the soul of a

*PART. II.**of the Covenant to be followed.*

356

of a woman, and of them of Samaria, who hated him and refused His taich-
to lodge him? How faithfull and free in rebuking the Pharisees
and Rulers, and in declaring the truth of the Gospel, that he was
the Son of God, though they attempted to stone him for his free
Teaching? None mortified to honour as he that refused to be a King, *Joh. 6.15.* and was willing to be worse lodged then birds
and foxes, *Mat. 8.20.* and being rich, for our cause became poor,
2 Cor. 8.9. and endured the crosse, despised the shame, suffered
the contradiction of sinners, *Heb. 12.* and did run and fainted not:
And was he not a patern of love, who laid down his life for his friends, *Joh. 15.10.* even when we were enemies, *Rom. 5.10?* He A patern of
pleased not himself, *Rom. 15.3.* honoured his Father, *Joh. 8.8.* fought love.
not his own glory, *v. 49,50.* and faith true, *Joh. 5.30.* *I seek not*
mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. *Joh. 8.29.* *I do* Of obedi-
always these things that please him. He faithfully expounded the ence to
Law, *Mat. 5.* refuted heresies, *Mat. 22.* glorified God with his God and
miracles, he was subject to his Parents, *Luk. 2.51.* payed tribute to all to
to the Prince himself, *Mat. 17.27.* and taught others to obey law- whom o-
full Governours, *Mat. 22.21.* would not usurpe the place of a bedience is
Judge, *Luk. 12.v.13,14.* and witnessed a good confession before
Pontius Pilate, *1 Tim. 6.13.* and was for that cause born, and for
that end came he into the world, that he might bear witness unto
the truth, *Joh. 18.37.* none so self-denied, he pleased not him-
self, sought not his own glory, nor his own ease, nor his own will, Christ hath
but submitted to the will of God. all these

In all which, we are 1. to look upon Christ who went about doing as the
qualifications, *Act. 10.* as one who 1. was Covenant-wise designed of
God and anointed with the Holy Ghost and power to do what he grace of
did, and to be what he was, for our good: and its much for the head-ship,
establishing of our faith, that Christ was all this for our salutations
sake, by counsell and Covenant. These gracious qualifications to be com-
municated to us, not Christ God undertook to have for our good: and they were not as the grace
given to Christ as personall and proper for himself, but as heads to be perso-
for we may here distinguish the grace of the person and the grace nall and
of head-ship, though they must not be divided. But as the light private in-
and heat of the Sun is not (if we may so speak) private or personall duements
for the Sun it self, but for the earth, and all that live and grow out for himself
only.

Christ's grace of Headship.

of the earth that need the influences of the Sun and have eyes to enjoy the light thereof. The water of the fountain is not for that hole or cave of the earth from whence the fountain doth issue, but it is very often to run in streams to be a river for the use of the whole land. All these excellencies and graces are in Christ, not as his (to speak so) personall induements, But as the publick treasure, that we may receive of his fulnesse. We should think it a strange exorbitancy in nature, if all the trees, flowers, herbs on earth, should refuse to receive influences and growing from the Sun, and deny to be oblidged to the Sun for light and heat: and our unwillingnesse to receive from Christ the publick grace that is made his by Covenant, when a publick consignation by compact is made for our good, proclaims our unbelief and our wicked estrangement from Christ, as if we had said, let Christ be gracious for Christ, only I shall not be his debtor. Nor is it from the naturall connexion between head and members, or because simply Christ is man as we are, though the huminity be ground thereof, nor is it because Christ simply is anointed with the fulnesse of the Spirit, for he is head of the body, and Lord, Generall, Captain of his people, not by nature only, nor because of grace simply, but by Covenant-purchase. Rom. 14.9. *It is Christ; For this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.* There's a Covenant between the Father and the Son, that Christ shoulde die, not simply, but for, and in the name of graces, and the heirs of glory, such as are designed friends (for his dying is a relative and a legall binding and buying by Covenant of so many certain persons) and upon this he is made Head and Prince, and exalted to give of his fulnesse, to give repentance and forgiveness which hath of sins to the house of Israel, Act. 5.30,31. Ah! how do we love a drawing to be beholden to nature? to self? for Heathen and Pagan vertues desirable, by education, and morall exercise, which is but wild corn? and cause us to see not how unwilling we are to trade with Christ, or to buy from him fine gold, yet it was given to him without measure, as to the universall fountain and head, for all his. 2. All these are in Christ, that he should be a living coppie which we must follow: they lodge in God And he is a more lively example then the Gospel it self, for Christ Immanuel is the acted Gospel. And if ye look on Christ, loving, believing, hoping.

PART. II.

The Properties of the Covenant.

hoping, praying, there comes more life and warmnesse from his actions, then from the word: when we consider that as God would have the humane nature a chariot to convey to us the fulnesse of more force-merite by satisfaction, so must it be the mean of carrying to us the fulnesse of grace by sanctification, and then, when God Covenants follow, in with the Man Christ, that love, faith, hope, meeknesse, humility and some sense, grace shall live, speak and act in Christ out to us, we are more strong, then the ly convinced to follow the footsteps of so blessed a guide. Christ is a living glasse in which we see the beauty of grace. As also his meeknesse and humility is the meeknesse, and humility of God, and all these graces have a seat and lodging in our Immanuel God with us, they have a drawing and an alluring desirablenes from the Person the Lord Jehovah our King, the mighty God, the Father of ages, in whom they reside.

The properties of the Covenant of Suretyship are, 1. Freedom. 2. Graciousnesse. 3. Eternity.

As to the first: Nothing could compell, nothing could hire Christ for eternitry to ingadge his Name in such a hand, since he well knew what it should cost him, how dear it should stand him, and saw what indignity, shame, pain, curse, and all these conditions before him. And what could move the father, since he might have followed the Law-course of Works?

2. The first draughts of free-grace and the Lords unsearchable riches appears in the *sure mercies of David*, in an everlasting Covenant; Isa. 55.3; and Ps. 89.1. *I will sing the mercies of the Lord.* —

2. For I have said, mercy shal be built up for ever: — Why? v.3. I have made a Covenant with my chosen, I have sworn unto David my servant. 4. Thy seed will I establish for ever, &c. The giving of the Covenant.

2. The design of a Redeemer. 3. The sending. 4. Anointing. 5. The consenting of Christ. 6. His coming. 7. Dying,

are all acts of grace. God was no debtor to the Man Christ, or to any of his kindred and blood-friends, more then he was to David and his seed, but God would act grace in Christ, and make him a samplar and the first coppie pf free-grace to all his brethren, that they might share with him therein. But though he made Christ also a coppie of his Justice, Rom. 3.29. and spared not his Son, Rom. 8.32. yet, Mal. 3.17. the Lord deals not so with us: And they shall be mine,

The properties of the

mine, saith the Lord of Hosts, in that day when I make up my Jewels, and I will spare them as a man spareth his own son, that serveth him. And of Christ it is said, Ps. 72. 13. He shall spare the poor and needy. And, O what riches of grace and mercy, and plenteous

The more Redemption hath he manifested to us? and therefore the more grace that grace he shews to us, the more freely and sonly should we serve him, is shewn to us with lesse hirednesse and servile disposition: If we could love God us, the more and Christ with a heart abstracted from heavens hire, at least the should we pleasure of it (for pleasure maketh not any conform to God, but holiness doth) and the heart not legally fearing the burning torment with a servile, but of hell it were good: for since Christ hath freed us from the Law with a godly wrath, he takes it not well that we darre approach too near to the ly fear.

mount burning with fire; nor does Christ allow our affections of fear and sorrow, & sadness to act upon feared everlasting wrath, (we being justified by faith) any other way, then in a Gospel-consideration, being casten down for our Law deserving, but so as we highly value our ransom-payer, and serve him with godly fear,

*The godly which word, Heb. 12. 28. must note a difference between the fear fear and the trembling and terror upon devils, for the torment of hell, Mat. other fear 8. 29. Jam. 2. 19. and the euangelia, the godly fear of believers, Heb. differenced 12. 28. which is also given to Christ, Heb. 5. 7. in whom there was no fear of hell torment, and therefore the fear of him that can cast both soul and body in hell (though it be another word, Mat. 10. 28.) which Christ commands, cannot be a servile fear legall, for hell such as is in devils and men, but a godly fear, such as is consistent with the faith of deliverance from the wrath to come: for Christ, Mat. 10. 28. commands that fear, fear (saith he) to deny Christ before men: Why? fear him who can cast soul and body in hell. And immediatly, v. 31. *Fear not therefore*: the same word that is, v. 28. then he must forbid a fear opposite to servile fear, and which stands with the faith of sons who are to beleieve the care of a father, which is more toward his children then toward sparrow, v. 29, 30. And that the word notteeth a godly fear, which is, Heb. 12. beside other Greek Authors: See Heb. 5. 7. see Luk 2. 25. Act. 2. 5. Act. 8. 2. Act. 23. 10. and Heb. 11. 7. Noah moved with fear, euangelie, built an ark: sure the fear of everlasting torment in hell, moved not Noah to build the ark, for by faith which is saving, he builded it, v. 7.*

*PART. II.**Covenant of suretyship.*

3. Eternity is a speciall property of the Covenant of suretyship: For 1. the parties are eternall; Jehovah the Lord and the Son of God never began to agree upon the designation of the Redeemer for that work, it was a bargain closed from everlasting: Only the question is, when the Son shall render the Kingdom to the Father, 1Cor. 15. whether or not the Covenant shall then cease. For 1. Christ shall then end his work of Redemption, and shall fully and finally have purchased what his soul desires, and shall have received his wages, and enjoy with his conquered bride an eternal sabbath. 2. He shall intercede no more for sinners, for the sinning of his redeemed ones shall have an end.

2. The Son (saith Camero) shall leave off to reign; *quod attinet ad In Respons. regnandi actum*, according to the act of reigning, but as touching the *ad Questio.* Kingdom it self, there shall be no end of the Kingdome.

But it may appear as there was a time when it was said of Christ, Phil. 2. 7. *εαυτον εκεινον, He emptied himself, and took on him the form of a servant.* So there is a time opposite to that, v. 9. There-

fore God hath highly exalted him: which is not fulfilled in his resurrection, ascension, and sitting only at the right hand of God, but being sub-when all power, friends, and unfriends, and the Man Christ shall be ject to the subject to the Lord, yea even the Son, not as God, for Christ-God Father how is equal with the Father, not as man, for so in the days of his flesh it is to be as man, he ever was, and is, and shall be subject to God, but the Son ded. Cor. 15 shall be subject, as touching the Office of a formall Mediatour. 2.

Another distinction is here needfull, as Augustine and Ambrose: Augustine, he shall render the Kingdom to the Father, not that he shall leave & Ambrose off to reign, but that he then shall declare that he reigns not of himself, but that he hath his power of reigning from the Father, and he shall profess this before men and Angels; and so shall glorifie the Father. Its not to be rejected that Hilarius, lib. 1. de Trinit. 11. ject to the August. lib. 1. de Trinit. c. 8. he shall render the elect back to God, as now saved, and present to the Father his ransomed ones now per-

fected, so Eph. 5. 27. 3. Taking the word of reigning, for this, to excell in eminency of power above all, so Christ shall reign eternally, but taking the word of reigning as it notes the exercise of royall authority, so and so by gathering a Church, by the Preached word, fighting against enemies, and overcoming them, to make them his

Christ his foot-stool, untill which time he reignes, *Psf. 110.* And so it may be, not exerci- and is said by some, he reigns, not after the day of the universall sing of Judgement: but these are but the second acts of a King, and the some se- not exercising of these acts proves not but Christ is a King, *actu* second acts *primo*, and essentially, for the exercise of such and such acts are of a Media- tory Head often extrinsecall to the office. But the question shall remain whe- and King ther he be not for ever and ever a Mediatory King, and does retain after the last Judge- his headship over the Church; so as the Angel say, *Luk. 1.33.* *He* ment proves *shall reign, et us d'was, and of his Kingdom there shall be no end.*

not but he And as *Dan. 7.14. Cameron*, and others say, the meaning of that, is a Media- that his Kingdom shall have no end: is only, it shall not be destroyed by a toy- tory King ed by externall violence, as worldly Monarchies that are made at even then. way, and others rise in their place, but that Kingdom (say they) That Christ may well be called eternall, though the King leave off to reign, Kingdome when he leaves off to reign through no weakenesse and want of power, but because he needs not reign, there being no need of laws; only be- cause it is because the subjects are perfected, and there are no enemies to be not de- subdued, and the King kath obtained that eternall end, a glorified stroyed as people, for which he was fighting.

worldly Kingdoms. But yet this seems not to satisfie, 1. Circumcision, and the *Cerew monies*, and the *Priest-hood*; *Exo. 40.15. Lev. 16.29* *that after the seventh month, shall be a statute, □TV, for ever.* *Lev. 6. p 8.* All the males of the sons of Aaron shall eat the remainder of the meat-offering, it shall be a statute for ever in your generations: so *Lev. 17.7. Lev. 7.34,36. Lev. 23.14. Num. 23.11,23.* yet those Ordinances can hardly be called eternall; as the Kingdom of Christ is. And yet they ceale when the body is come, and they are not de- stroyed as humane inventions, the hay and the stubble that are built upon the foundation Christ.

2. These reasons prove that Christ shall not exercise such and such acts of royaltie upon such and such enemies, for they shall be no en- nies: Yet we say not, as *Cameron*, that such a Prince leaves off to reign even as Mediatur. Christ's rendering of the Kingdome dis- pensatory or Oeconomick to the Father may well be a rendering of an account of his subjects, and a presenting of them to God per- fected, *Eph. 5.26,27.* without spot and wrinkle: Christ having brought them out of danger, so as they need not Word, Sacraments, or a Temple

*Mius impo
rri princip
defit regn.
re.*

Temple. And so, *1 Cor. 15.24. He shal put down all rule, all power, and authority, all Magistracy and Goverment that now is in either Church or State: and so faith Parenus, the Son shal be subject to the Father, having subdued all the rebels, as his Fathers Deputie, he shall return to his Father the Kingdom now reduced to subjection and made peaceable, and lay down his Mediatorie Commission; and so be subject to the Father, having ended the deputed and delegated charge.* And it is sure, the Son as Mediatour is sent, and is a Servant, an Angel, or Messenger of the Covenant, *Mat. 3.* and the laying down of his written Commission is a sort of subjection, and God doth not now actually reign in such a Mediatory way as in the days of Christ's flesh: he did reign in Christ, but now after the last Judgement, *God is all in all*, that is, not because he is not now all in all, and is not the Lord of lords, and King of kings, but because it doth not so appear to be, many now rise against him and contradict him, and persecuting his Myllcally body, do persecute Christ. 2. *He shal be all in all* by change of the Oeconomick Government, then the Father, Son, and Spirit, shal immediatly glorifie the Church, *Rev. 21. 22. And I saw no Temple therein, for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb is their Temple.* 23. *And the City had no need of the Sun, neither of the Moon to shine in it, for the glory of God did enlighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.*

But that Christ shall leave off to be Mediatory King after the last Judgement, I deny. For there is a twofold Mediation, one, of Christ is e- uniting sinners to God, and mediating between God and them. ver, even after the universall This shall cease, and all the royll acts thereof, but these, with re- verence, are but second operations and acts of royltie: There is another Mediation substantiall, by which our natures glorified, stand in a substantiall union with God for ever: for to what end shall Christ stand glorised in our nature in heaven, but to be the King, and substanciall mid-man between God and us, glorified for ever? If any say that Christ-God-Man after that day is no Mediatur of re- conciliation, because there shall be no sin then: Its untrue: Nay, but even now in the intervall between his ascension and second appearing to Judge the world, he acts not as Mediatur of reconciliation to expiate our sins, and to satisfie for them, for only he did upon the crosse by dying for us, to mediate. And we will not say he is acting the

The perpetuity of Christ's Reign

Christ acts the part of a Priest formally by sacrificing for us in heaven, as *Sacrifices* not as a ^{fa-}teach: for he can offer no expiatory sacrifice for us in heaven, for he did Priest for ed but once, & that was on the earth only. *Obj.* But now he Advocate for sinners, *Job. 2. 1.* therefore as now in heaven glorified, he is a Medi-
atour for sinners. *Ans.* True, he is a Mediator and Intercessour

now, *applicatione, non expiatione*, by applying his blood, but not by shedding of it: And he is an *Advocat*, but called, *Sixtus*. Jesus the Righteous, and an *Advocat* as just and righteous, supposeth a right and just cause, and that sufficient satisfaction and payment is

given to God for the sins of these for whom *Christ* interceeds; the appears for *Advocation* of Christ is not to plead that believers may sin, or their us now in sins may be excused as no sins: But his intercession is to plead, 1. heaven, as that for his blood we may stand as accepted of God, and freed from as merciful condemnation. 2. That the Spirit procured by the death of Christ,

may be given to us, that we may repent and believe. But again, after the last Judgement *Christ* stands as *Mediator*, not to apply his death, nor to intercede for sinners, when there shall be no sinners, but *Christ* eternally shall appear for us as a paund of a perfect satisfaction once given, and as a pledge and hostage of peace, and

Christ's appearing for us for ever is an allusion to the Ambassadours sent by forrain Princes, who standing in Court before the Prince they are sent unto, are speaking tokens that the confederacie of

peace stands, and that no acts of hostilitie can be done by either of the States, and because God is eternally and not by fits just, as if he were now angry at sin, and then satisfied and pacified when the satisfaction is gone, therefore the *Lord Christ* stands in that Body

and Nature in which he once suffered, before God, for the acquies-
ing of Justice for ever in the once payed ransome. As also, Christ
and King, remains the substantiall and naturall Head (though nature be now
glorified) of the Mystical glorified body for ever, and of these
members under the Covenant of Redemption eternally, though all
be done and performed in regard of the purchased redemption: yet

we then glorified, once brake the Law; and therefore cannot even then stand in our Law-righteousnesse, but must stand in our *Lord Jesus Christ's* Righteousnesse, which garment shall never cast the colour nor lustre.

2. That love to redeemed ones, and the soul-satisfaction of
Christ

after the universall Judgement.

Christ in his seed is eternall, looking back to the bargain he hath once made as *Meditour*, he cannot leave off to be satisfied in soul with what he hath done, for that were a retracting of his love, and a repenting of his royall and Princely tendernes, that as King, he once did bear to his conquered subjects whom he hath made his own for ever.

3. The soul of God must be eternally well pleased with his Son *God stands eternally* and delighting for ever in all his Sons actings and transactions in the wellplea-
work of Redemption, if therefore *God* have once given to him, *God-Man*, the Throne of *David* to reign over the house of *Jacob*, he must make empty that Throne, if he shall leave off to reign. And the Angel, *Luk. 1.* speaks of his birth and conception. *31.* red, & the *Thou shalt bring forth a son, and he shall be great, and the Lord once given God shall give unto him the Throne of his Father David, and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever:* And he speaks of the eternity of *Davids* Throne over *Jacobs* house, so that as he shall be a man (and he still never lay down our nature) so shall he be a King upon *Davids* Throne for ever and ever.

4. To triumph eternally over enemies, the devils, Malignant opposers of his raign, sin, and hell is an act of a Mediatorie King; when head and members do both triumph, no lesse then it is a part of his royall Mediatorie power to crush them all, and make them his foot-stool, *Psal. 110.* But *Christ* and the Armies of heaven, *Christ's* when the Marriage-Supper of the Lamb shall come, shall ride upon *Mediatorie* white horses, and triumph over enemies for ever, *Rev. 19. 17, 13, 14, 15.* and the eternall living of Christ in our nature with all his, is a triumphing over the grave, and death, *1 Cor. 15.* and who can prescribe a period and an end of that triumph?

5. The River of Water of Life shewed to *John*, *Rev. 22.* pro-
ceeds out of the Throne of God and of the Lamb; then hath the *The Throne* slain Lamb a Throne for ever. *v. 3.* And there shall be no more curse there: the Law of Works as threatening a curse, shall no more be there, *Gal. 3. 10, 11, 13, 14.* *Deut. 27. 26.* but the Gospel bles-
sing shall be there, *and the Throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it.* *v. 5.* *And they shall reign for ever and ever.*

6. If the glorified sit with the Lamb on a Throne, as he is set down with

368 The perpetuity of Christ's reign after the last Judgment. P.H.

with his Father upon his Throne, as is promised, Luk. 22. 29, 30.
Rev.3.21. If Christ's Throne be removed, the Throne of the glorified cannot stand: And all alongs where the state of the triumphing Church is described, the Lord Jesus keeps the name of the Lamb, in reference to the Mediatory sacrifice of the Lamb of God slain for the sins of the world, Job.1.29. as, Rev.5. The Beasts and the Elders stand round about the Throne, — saying, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power and riches and wisdom, &c. Rev.7.15. Therefore are they before the Throne, and serve him night and day in his Temple, and he that sitteth on the Throne shall dwell among them. — They shall hunger no more, nor thirst any more. — 17. For the Lamb that is in the midst of them shall lead them unto the living fountains of Waters. Though this be expounded of the Church Militant, Isa.49.10. yet it hath not its perfect accomplishment, but of the Church before the Throne: for all tears are wipt from that Church only. And whereas it is said, that Christ acts not as Mediatour in heaven, its true, he acts not as now he acteth for sinners; but even then the Lamb, v.17. is the midst of them, and leads them, when they need neither Temple, nor Sun-light, beside that, the Lord God Almighty is their Temple, Rev.21. The Lamb is their Temple, v.22. And the Lamb is their light, v.23. Now what sort of leading, and what influences of worship and light comes from the Lamb is another question. And it weighs much with me, that its impossible that the precious Ark, God Man, and the union personall can be dissolved.

7. Christ saith; I will be a God to the overcomer, and he shall inherit all things, Rev.21. And if he be the God of Abraham, being dead, in regard of the soul that lives, far more shall he be a God in an eternall Covenant with Abraham, in soul and body glorified, though the acts of Christ's reigning, and the actings of his Covenanted people must be suitable to a glorified state. Come Lord Jesus.

F I N I S.
